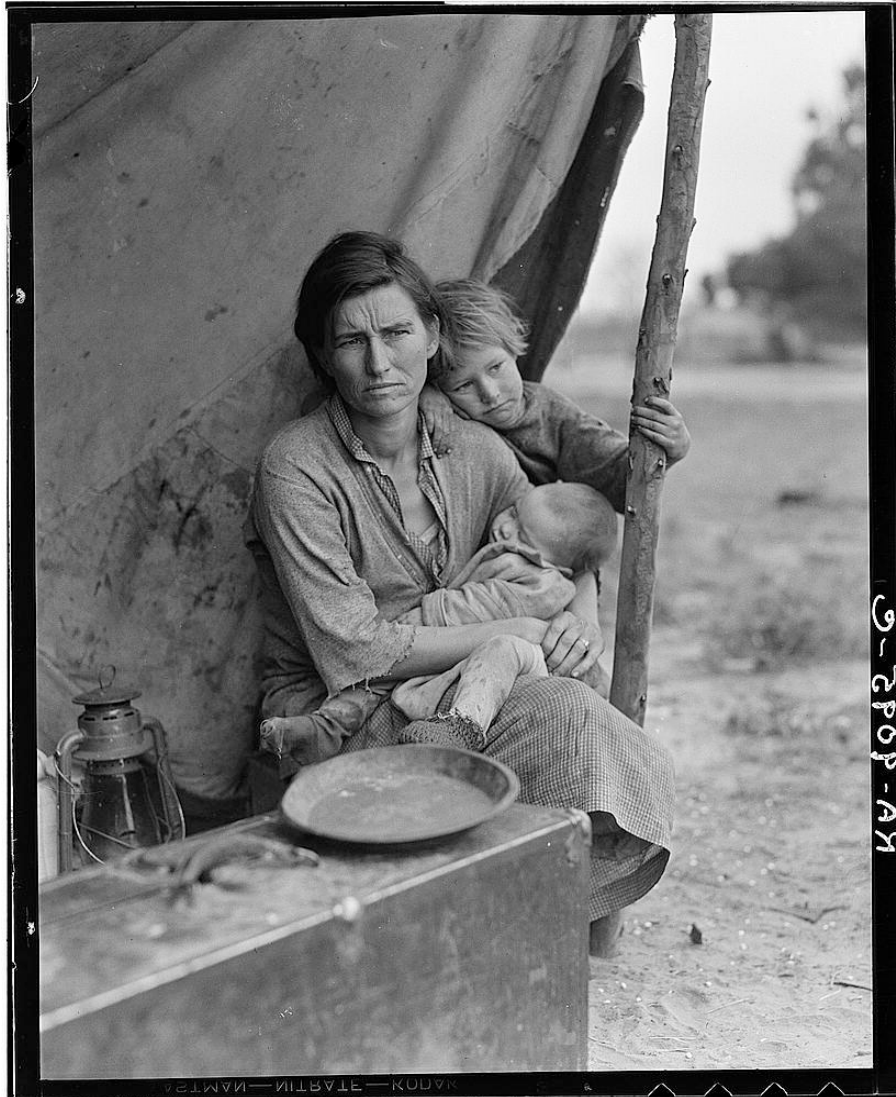


The New Antipas Papers

By: S.R. Shearer



“And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said, Blessed *be ye poor*: for yours is the kingdom of God.” (Luke 6:20)

Published by Antipas Ministries

A WORD ABOUT THE PUBLICATION OF THIS BOOK

We have been asked over and over again why we have not chosen to publish this book in a normal fashion – that is, through the use of a publishing house. To be honest, we have on many occasions been approached by various publishing houses – both “Christian” and “secular” - with offers to publish.

We have chosen not to do so – AND THERE IS A VERY GOOD REASON WHY WE HAVE DONE SO: It would mean surrendering control of the book to others and subjecting it to the vicissitudes of the “market place” – which is to say, to the whims of commercialism, which, as all of you know who are familiar with our work, would be anathema to us.

We have, therefore, decided to make this book available **FREE OF CHARGE** by producing it in PDF format which any and all of you can download any time you wish. You can then print it out on your computer or – if you want to re-produce the book in color (and you do not have a color printer) – you can take it to a copy shop and have it printed out for you.

The cost of printing out the book on your printer would be minimal: about \$15.00 for a printer cartridge and \$5.00 for a ream of paper. More, of course, if you use a color cartridge.

The cost of having it professionally copied would be app. \$37.00 – which is a fraction of what books of a similar length cost today.

Finally – and most important – what this does is place the message contained in this book in YOUR hands. You have the initiative, not the market place, WHICH IS WHERE ALL THINGS THAT PERTAIN TO CHRIST SHOULD BE. You may make as many copies of this book as you wish – you owe us **NOTHING!**

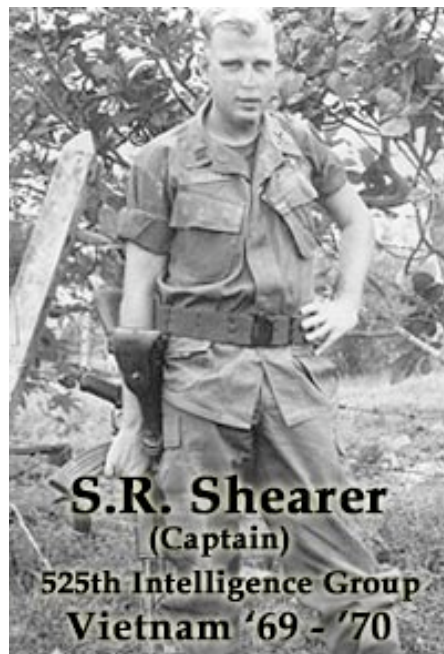
ABOUT S.R. SHEARER

S.R. Shearer is a graduate of the University of California where he earned a Bachelor's degree (1964) and a Master's degree (1967) in history. He also attended the United States Defense Language Institute in Monterey where he studied German. From 1967 to 1972 he served as an intelligence officer in Europe; in Vietnam he served with the 525th Intelligence Group (see note below), Special Operations Branch and at the Phoenix School at Vung Tau; he earned the Bronze Star, and the Joint Services Commendation Medal for intelligence information he developed and **PERSONALLY** briefed to General Creighton Abrams, Commander of all forces in Vietnam, and Ambassador Colby, CIA Station Chief in Vietnam (later head of the CIA); the information that he developed was also briefed to the American Delegation at the Paris Peace Talks. Shearer held Top Secret, Special Intelligence, Codeword security, Eyes Only clearances; also Cosmic, NATO and Atomic clearances.

Since leaving the intelligence community, Steve has been involved almost continually in full-time ministry to the Lord. He has been married to his wife, Lucy, for almost fifty years, has three children, and six grandchildren.

Steve came to know the Lord in a small home meeting while he was a student at the University of California on December 21, 1959 - largely as the result of the testimony of one of his college fraternity brothers at Kappa Sigma. It was the height of the Cold War, Dwight Eisenhower was president and the United States was the dominant force in the world. The Vietnam War was still in its early stages, the Civil Rights Movement had not yet gained national prominence, the Berlin Wall had not yet been built, there was no National Organization for Women, abortion was still illegal, the draft was still a part of life, the schools were still full of "lockouts" and "curfews," there was still prayer in the schools, there was no "Gay Movement" and the country was still ostensibly a "Christian nation."

Eleven days later all that started today it's hard to believe that on-campus "lockouts" and curfews, school prayer, etc. It all seems so unreal - and countless numbers of today's Christians are prone to look back wistfully to that age as a "simpler and happier" time. But was it really? - or was it just a facade? a chimera? a dream? - a "bill of goods" dreamed up by today's religious right with little bearing on reality. The fact of the matter is, it was probably more facade than reality, more fake than substance.



Yes, outwardly the nation was much more a Christian nation at that time than it is today; but how much reality was there behind the outward structure of that era's religion? - not much. People went to church, but most did so more out of convention than conviction; more because "it was the thing to do" than anything else. The term "born-again" was not even a part of the American lexicon, and most so-called Christians of the time wouldn't have had any idea what such a term meant. Most young people of that age had long ago seen through their parent's religious facade, and by the time they began flowing onto the campuses of the nation's colleges and universities, they were ready to "chuck it in." Most wanted nothing to do with the empty life-style and vacuous religiosity of their parents' lives. Eisenhower was a fake, a man who had been willing to leave over two thousand American GIs in communist hands - and lie about it to the American people - in order to secure peace on the Korean peninsula; blacks were a denigrated minority portrayed to

millions of American whites as little more than witless morons; countless numbers of American businesses like the United Fruit Company thought nothing of enslaving the people of whole nations in order to turn a profit for their American masters; McCarthy era demagogues thought little of consigning whole classes of people (socialists, labor leaders, etc.) to the trash bin of society on the slightest suggestion that they were "un-American;" etc.

But while the vacuous nature of that era's religiosity produced cynicism, it also produced an insatiable desire on the part of many to search for truth - and while cynicism led many college students of that era into the mindless narcissism of the drug culture and the so-called "sexual revolution," it led others into a search for a deeper meaning to life - a search which finally led to the "Jesus Revolution" of the late 1960s and early '70s - a revolution which owed **NOTHING** to the established denominations of that day; a revolution which occurred almost totally "outside of religion;" and a revolution which was, to a large degree, opposed by most of the denominations of that period - not only by the mainline denominations, but the evangelicals as well.

It is an extremely unfortunate fact of life that much of the history of the "Jesus Revolution" has been re-written - rewritten largely to accommodate the sensibilities of those evangelicals who had opposed the revolution in the first place. Today the "Jesus Revolution" has - to a large degree - been incorporated by the religious establishment, and "institutionalized" within that establishment. Indeed, if one reads most of today's histories which deal with the "Jesus Revolution" one could very well come away with the view that the revolution had been produced by, and had emanated out from, the very religious establishment which had at first opposed it - i.e., Multnomah School of the Bible, Dallas Theological Seminary, Western Seminary, Wheaton, etc. But that simply isn't the case! The "Jesus Revolution" occurred **DESPITE** these institutions, not because of them.

The truth of the matter is, when the Spirit of God moves, He invariably has to move outside of the religious establishment, not within it. The "Jesus Revolution" had its genesis not within the church buildings of the fundamentalist and Pentecostal bodies of that era, but rather in small home meetings scattered across the country. Indeed, the aversion of most of the people who came to the Lord in those days against the religious establishment of that era was so great that there would probably have been no "Jesus Revolution" had it been decreed from somewhere that it had to occur within the church buildings and other confines of the religious structures of that period - and this has always been the case. It's no accident that in His day, Jesus operated from a perspective that was totally outside of and at variance with the established religion of His day - so much so that the religious leaders of that day felt impelled to crucify Him in order to end the perceived threat He seemed to constitute against their security.

So also today! It's futile for people to look to the evangelical establishment of today for their salvation. The fact is, with each passing year it is ever more becoming a part of the world that Jesus came to earth to oppose. To those former members of the "Jesus Revolution," we would simply say this: remember who originally opposed you. Don't rewrite history. You probably wouldn't even be a Christian today if you had to become one inside religion rather than outside of it. Remember where your roots really are. Don't end up building the very institution which you had at the beginning so vehemently opposed - and which had so vehemently opposed you!!



LOSING ONE'S WAY

At some time in their lives, usually somewhere in the "middle years," most men and women reach a point where they ask, "What is life all about?" Psychologists call it the "Mid-Life Crisis." It strikes the rich and poor alike; the so-called "successful" as well as the so-called "unsuccessful." It is characterized by a pervading sense that somehow or other life has passed them by; that they have lost their way; that life is not an endless lark with unlimited horizons, but it has a definite end (**DEATH**), and they are fast approaching that end with very few of the ideals of their youth left intact.

They are infused with an unconscious understanding that somehow or other they've gotten lost in the details of "everyday life" - making money, developing a business, raising a family, etc. - and have neglected the higher ideals and goals which had at an earlier time made up so much of what they were all about. Idealism has given away to cynicism and drudgery; optimism to pessimism. Psychologists say that such feelings will pass; that the details of their lives will again take on meaning - that all they have to do is "tough it through." But I believe that such feelings have a very real meaning and message; that people ignore this message at their own peril. And this is not only true of the unsaved, but the saved as well.

DON'T YOU LOSE YOUR WAY! Life is more than the acquisition of material things. Jesus said,

"No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve [both] God and mammon [at the same time]. Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not ... life more than meat, and the body (more) than raiment?" (Matt. 6:24-25)



Of course, most people would say that such thinking is irresponsible! For example, one Antipas critic wrote sarcastically that we in Antipas encourage people to put "the cause" ahead of everything else, and that we criticize those who -

"... want to provide for their own families instead of financially supporting 'The Revolution'."

But if this woman believes that the interests of one's family should not be subordinated to the "cause" of Christ, she has a problem with God, not with us. Jesus said:

"If any *man* come to me, and **HATE** not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he **CANNOT** be my disciple." (Luke 14:26)

TABLE OF CONTENTS

<u>INTRODUCTION</u>	19
PART 1: NO ONE LOVES A PROPHET	19
PART 2: THE STUDY OF THE PROPHETIC SCRIPTURES IS NOT EASY	20
The Study Of The Prophetic Scriptures Is Not For Dilettantes And Dabblers	20
"Part Truth" Engenders Confusion	21
Our Methodology: Precept Upon Precept, Line Upon Line	22
<u>CHAPTER I: THE NATURE OF MAN</u>	24
Body, Soul & Spirit (Trichotomy)	
The Triune Man	24
Man Has A Spirit	24
Man Has A Soul	25
Let Us Make Man In Our Image	26
What Is The Spirit Of Man?	26
Man As Differentiated From The Beasts	26
Soul And Spirit	26
Beholding And Reflecting The Lord	27
Abiding In The Lord	28
<u>CHAPTER II: SALVATION: WHAT DOES IT MEAN?</u>	30
Does It Mean That We Become Little Gods?	
What Does It Mean To Be Born Again?	30
Going Back To The Beginning	31
What Died In The Garden Of Eden?	31
Regeneration & Sanctification	32
What Being Born Again Is Not	32
Deification	33
The So-Called "Continuation Of The Incarnation"	33
We Are One With God By Adoption; We Are Not One With God Intrinsically	34
We Are One With God In The Same Manner That A Husband Is One With His Wife	34
The Difference Between The Creature And The Creator	35
We Are As Nothing Before God	36
How Thou Art Fallen, O Lucifer	36
Our Relationship With Christ	37
A Small Glimpse Into Eternity	37
<u>CHAPTER III: GOD'S GRACE</u>	39
<u>CONTRASTED WITH GOD'S LAW</u>	
Introduction	39
The Great Mistake Many Christians Make	40
Christ Is The End Of The Law	40
Who Hath Bewitched You?	41
We Live By Faith In Christ's Righteousness	41
Is The Law Then Bad?	42
The Law Was Given To Reveal Our Own Sinful Nature To Us	42

Living By Grace	43
The Growth In Life	43
One Thing Is Needful	44
Keep Your Eyes On Jesus	45
We Have An Advocate In Heaven	45
Grace Is Not Looking For Men Of Good Character That It Can Approve	46
There Is No Room For Any Of Us To Feel Better Than Anyone Else	47
Do Not Let Anyone Rob You Of Your Freedom In Christ	47
False Brethren	47
The Spirit Of Life In Christ Jesus	48
The Tree Of Life, And The Tree Of The Knowledge Of Good & Evil	48
<u>CHAPTER IV: THE IMAGE OF CHRIST & THE IMAGE OF THE BEAST</u>	50
Introduction	50
The Image Of Christ	51
The Image Of The Beast	51
The Question Is ...	52
Spots In Your Feasts Of Love	52
Raging Against Your Brothers And Sisters	53
How Quickly An Accusation Against A Brother And/Or A Sister Spreads	53
What A Powerful Thing Our Tongue Is	54
Railing Accusations	54
Our Criticism Of Our Brothers And Sisters Destroys The Unity Of The Church	55
What Are You Producing? - The Image Of The Beast Or The Image Of Christ	56
<u>CHAPTER V: THE CHURCH</u>	59
PART 1: THE PERFECT MAN	59
Introduction	59
Beholding And Reflecting	59
Grace: Unmerited Favor	60
The Good Pleasure Which He Purposed In Himself	60
Community With God & Community With "All Saints"	61
Our Oneness, Which Is The Church, Must Be Demonstrated Practically	62
It's In The Local Church That The Church Makes Contact With The World	62
We Cannot Glorify Christ Without Being Built-Up With Other Saints	63
The Perfect Man	63
PART 2: THE CHURCH AS THE "COMMUNITY OF GOD"	64
The Church: God's Answer For Man's Longing For Community; For His Desire "To Belong"	64
Loneliness Is An Abhorrent Thing	64
What Christian "Community" Is All About	65
This Is Not To Say That The Church Is A Socialist Institution	66
PART 3: THE CHURCH AS THE FAMILY OF GOD	67
The Church Is A Family	67
We Are The Father's Children	68
Institutional "Belonging To" Vs. Family "Belonging To"	68

PART 4: ABIDING IN THE TRUTH 69

Real Church Unity Has Nothing To Do With Compromising	
The Word Of God	69
You Cannot Have The Church Without Having The Truth	69
If The Truth We Preach Does Not Produce The Church, It Is Nothing	70

PART 5: THE GLORIOUS CHURCH 70

God's Purpose In Saving Us	70
What Is The Goal Toward Which You Are Pressing?	71
The World Is Headed In Two Different Directions	72

CHAPTER VI: THE DISTINCTION BETWEEN ISRAEL & THE CHURCH 73

PART 1: A COMMITMENT TO LITERALISM 73

Introduction	73
The Result Of Covenant Theology: A Worldly Church	74
The Scriptural Basis For Evangelical Theology	75
Definition Of The Word "Covenant"	76
God's Covenants Are Literal	76
God's Covenants Were Made Strictly With Only One	
Covenant People: The Jews	76
The Five Covenants Of God With Israel	76
The Conditional Covenant (The Mosaic Covenant)	77

PART 2: THE UNCONDITIONAL COVENANTS 77

The Four Unconditional Covenants Of God With Israel	77
Covenant Theology And Evangelicalism	81
So, What Do We Have?	82

PART 3: CONSPIRACISTS 83

Introduction	83
What Have We Learned So Far?	84
Israel As A Living Example Of God's Grace	85
God's Faithfulness To Israel Is A Confirmation	
Of His Faithfulness To Us	86
Covenant Theology Leads Inevitably To Anti-Semitism	87

**PART 4: THE "ILLUMINATI CONSPIRACY:"
THE ORIGINAL, ANTI-SEMITIC VERSION** 88

The Abbe Barruel	89
The Stupidity Of It All	89
The Freemasons And The Illuminati	90
The Simonini Letter	91
In The Jewish Cemetery In Prague	91
Biarritz Spreads	92
Disjointed Pieces Come Together	93
Pyotr Ivanovich Rachkovsky	94
Sergey Alexandrovich Nilus	95

The Genesis Of <i>The Protocols</i>	96
The <i>Dialogue</i> And <i>The Protocols</i>	96
Nilus And <i>The Protocols</i>	97
PART 5: PLAYING WITH FIRE	99
<i>The Protocols</i> And The Russian Revolution	99
The Tortured Path Of The Illuminati Myth	100
The Raison D'être Behind The Myth's Magnetism	102
Playing With Fire	103
CHAPTER VII: THE GREAT ESCAPE: MISCONCEPTIONS CONCERNING THE RAPTURE	104
PART 1: A DAMAGING CONCEPT	104
Introduction	104
A Damaging Concept	105
A Naïve Acceptance	105
Flippant And Offhand Attitudes	106
The Rapture: A Play In Two Acts?	106
The Rapture Is To Be A Loud And Noisy Event; Not A Secret And Hidden Affair	107
PART 2: WHEN WILL THE RAPTURE BE? BEFORE OR AFTER THE TRIBULATION?	109
When Will the Rapture Be?	109
Tribulation - God's Way Of Deliverance	109
The Church Is Called To Remain Until The "End Of The World"	110
PART 3: WILL THE RETURN OF CHRIST BE IN TWO STAGES	115
False Argument #1: The Rapture Is Not The Second Coming Of The Lord	116
False Argument #2: The Misuse Of The Greek	117
PART 4: COMING "FOR" AND COMING "WITH THE SAINTS"	121
The Use Of The Word "Apantesis" (Meet)	121
PART 5: AN EXAMINATION OF PRE- TRIBULATIONAL "PROOF TEXTS"	123
The "Absence" Of The Word "Church" In Revelation 4-18	123
John As A "Type" Of The Church In Revelation 4:1	125
The Use Of The Words "Come Up Hither" In Revelation 4:1	125
The Church In Philadelphia	126
The Use Of The Word "Escape" In Luke 21, Etc.	128
PART 6: WILL CHRIST COME AT ANY MOMENT? TERMS USED INTERCHANGEABLY; OTHER RAPTURE VIEWS	129
Will Christ Come At Any Moment	129
Terms Used Interchangeably	131
Other Rapture Views	132

PART 7: POST-MILLENNIALISM OR DOMINIONISM VS. PRE-MILLENNIALISM	133
A Surprising Turn Of Events Most Evangelical “Lay People” Are Not Aware Of	133
The New Dominionist Mindset & Today's Evangelical Leaders	134
Post-Millennialism & Dichotomy Vs. Pre-Millennialism & Trichotomy	136
Our God Is An Awesome God	137
The Post-Millennial "Mindset"	137
To Post-Millennialists, The Church Is More Important Than Christ	138
Unity In The Post-Millennial Scheme Of Things Is Dependent On Hierarchy	138
The Trichotomous View Of Man Is In Opposition To Hierarchy	139
The Importance Of Our Individual Walk With Christ	139
The Individual & The Church	140
CHAPTER VIII: TRIBULATION & JUDGMENT	141
PART 1: TRIBULATION REVEALS WHAT IS ALREADY FORMED	142
Introduction	142
Tribulation Reveals What Is Already Formed In Us; It Does Not Add Anything New To Us	142
PART 2: JUDGMENT	144
Introduction	144
Judgment: The Act Of Declaring Something's Worth	145
Tribulation	145
Witnesses	146
PART 3: THE CHURCH IN THE TRIBULATION	146
Introduction	146
The Parable Of The Wheat And The Tares: A Parable Of The Tribulation	148
PART 4: THE TRIBULATION AS A WINNOWING OF GOD	149
Introduction	149
Tribulation: A Work Of Transformation In The Believer's Heart	150
Tribulation: God's Way Of Manifesting His Glory In The Saints	151
God's Purpose In Tribulation: To Manifest & Display His Own Glory In The Saints	151
PART 5: THE WORLD	152
Introduction	152
The World: The Enemy Of God	153
The World Is Equated With Darkness	153
The Great Kosmokrator	154
The World Encompasses Both The "Good" And The "Bad;" The Material And The Spiritual	154
My Kingdom Is Not Of This World	155

Pilgrims And Strangers	155
We Are Not Only Aliens To The World, We Are Dead To The World	156
"Be It Unto Me According To Thy Word"	156
We Are Baptized Into Christ's Death	157
Our Heavenly Citizenship	157
The World Is Going To Be "Tried" And "Judged"	158
PART 6: THE TWO WITNESSES	158
Introduction	158
A Witness	
God's Law Demands The Presence Of Two Witnesses	158
The Prophetic Scriptures: A Mystery	159
The Mystery Of The Two Witnesses	160
Unraveling The Mystery Of The Two Witnesses	161
The Omnipresence Of The Two Witnesses	162
The War Between The Two Witnesses And The Antichrist	162
The Two Witnesses & The "Great City" Of Revelation 11	163
The Breakdown Of The Common Interpretations Of The Two Witnesses	165
PART 7: PARABLES & CIPHERS	165
Parables Are Ciphers	165
The Two Witnesses As Corporate Persons	
Israel And The Church - God's Corporate Persons	166
Israel And The Church As God's Witnesses	167
Israel And The Church As The Two Witnesses Of Revelation 11	167
The Mystery Unveiled	168
The Two Witnesses Of Daniel 12	170
The Two Witnesses And The 144,000	171
The 144,000 Of Revelation Seven And Revelation Fourteen	171
CHAPTER IX: THE COURSE AND CHARACTER OF THE "LAST DAYS"	173
PART 1: THE FIRST SIXTY-NINE WEEKS OF DANIEL	173
Introduction	173
The Seventy Weeks	174
Revealing His Glory And Authority In Both Israel And The Church	174
The Vision Of The Seventy Weeks	175
The First Sixty-Nine Weeks	175
The Interval Between The Sixty-Ninth Week And The Seventieth Week	177
PART 2: THE PROPHECY OF THE SEVENTIETH WEEK	177
Introduction	177
The Three Signposts Of The Seventieth Week	178
The Seven Seals, The Seven Trumpets, And The Seven Vials	178
The Course And Character Of The Seventieth Week	178
PART 3: THE SEVEN SEALS	180
Introduction	180
The Themes Of The Seven Seals	181

The Winnowing Of The Church: The Persecution Of The Seventieth Week	181
The Union Of The Church And The State: A Poisonous Mixture	182
The New Inquisition	183
The Testimony Of The Church In The Midst Of Persecution	184
4: THE ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION	185
Background	185
The Grammatical Meaning	186
Scriptural Background	186
The Old Jewish Temple And Man	188
The Abomination Of Desolation In Light Of The New Testament	189
The Sealing Of The Holy Spirit Contrasted With The Mark Of The Beast	190
PART 5: THE SEVEN TRUMPETS - THE SECOND HALF OF THE SEVENTIETH WEEK	191
The Seven Trumpets	191
The Expectation Of Extraterrestrials	191
The Parable Of The Sixth Seal And The Red Dragon	192
Man The Center Of All Things	193
The World Beyond Our World	193
The Reality Of The Kingdom Of Darkness	194
The Sphere And Organization Of Satan's Empire	194
The Fallen Angels	194
The Demons	195
The Gulf Between The Two Worlds	196
The Days Of Noah	196
The Appearance Of The Fallen Angels	197
The Coming Reappearance Of The Fallen Angels	198
The Mystery Of The Seven Trumpets	198
The Fifth Trumpet	200
PART 6: THE END OF THE TRIBULATION AND THE WRATH OF GOD	202
False Perceptions Concerning The Wrath Of God	202
The Seventh Trumpet	203
The Seven Vials	203
The Great Supper	203
The Judgment Of The Nations	204
<u>CHAPTER X: THE 144,000 & THE LAST HALF OF THE SEVENTIETH WEEK</u>	206
The Sealing Of God's Servants	206
One Group Is Shown To Be Sealed, And One Is Not	207
The 144,000 Of Revelation Seven – Israel	208
The Woman Of Revelation Chapter Twelve	208
The Identity Of The Woman	209
The Woman In The Wilderness	210
The Wilderness	210

The Blindness Of Israel Removed	211
The 144,000 Of Revelation Fourteen - The Church	212
The Meaning Of The 144,000	214
The Rapture, The Resurrection, And The Two Witnesses Of Revelation 11	215
God Is Now Through With Those Who Refuse To Repent	216
<u>CHAPTER XI: ANTICHRIST: KING OF BABYLON</u>	217
The Decayed Estate Of American Democracy	217
The Longing For A New Arthurian Figure To Make Things Right - A New Camelot	217
The Darker Side Of Evil	218
Antichrist: King Of Babylon	218
The View Of The Early Church: Antichrist As A "Roman Prince"	219
The View Of The Medieval (Catholic) Church: Antichrist As A Jew	219
The View Of The Protestant Reformers: Antichrist As The Pope Or The Papal System	220
The View Of The "Liberal" Church: Anti-Christ As An Institution Or Principle Of Evil	220
Getting Back To Origins: Antichrist As A Person - A "Roman Prince"	221
The Doctrine Of The Antichrist	221
6-6-6	225
A Note of Caution	225
<u>CHAPTER XII: THE BEAST OF REVELATION 17</u>	226
<u>PART 1: IN SEARCH OF BABYLON</u>	226
The Ancient City	226
Babylon: A Mystery Wrapped In An Enigma	227
Babylon The Great	229
Commerce	230
The Times Of The Gentiles	231
The Great Image	232
The Four Wild Beasts	233
The Final Form Of Gentile World Power: Western Civilization	236
The Geographic Extent Of Prophetic Babylon	238
The "Younger Horn"	240
Description Of Civil Babylon	240
Babylon And The Ten Confederated Kingdoms	242
<u>PART 2: U.S. MILITARY SUPREMACY</u>	242
Introduction	242
America's World-Wide Military Base System	243
The Military Machine That Uses This System	245
Assessing The Size Of The American Base System	245
The Specific Missions Of The Baseworld	246
America's "Footprint" On The World	246
"Lily Pads" In Australia, Romania, Mali, Algeria ...	247
How The System Works	248
America's Nuclear Forces	249
Gains In U.S. Nuclear Superiority	250
The Collapse Of Russia's Nuclear Capabilities	250

A Realistic Scenario Of An American First-Strike	251
The Case Of China	252
The Question To Be Asked	253
The Intentional Pursuit Of U.S. Nuclear Superiority	253
Who Is Able To Make War With The Beast?	254
Turning The Peoples Of The World Into Slaves In The Service Of The American Empire	254
PART 3: U.S. ECONOMIC SUPREMACY	255
Introduction	256
The Extent Of Most People's Ignorance Of America's Tribute System	256
Benign Neglect	257
The Dollar Becomes The World's Medium Of Exchange	258
A Mafia Protection Racket	258
An Unfriendly Act	258
How The System Works	259
Getting Back To Our Analogy Of A Mafia Protection Racket	260
And Isn't This The Case With The American Consumer	260
CHAPTER XIII: THE WOMAN OF REVELATION 17	261
PART 1: A MYSTERY WRAPPED IN AN ENIGMA	262
Introduction	262
Which Divide Do You Fall In?	262
Do You Love God?	263
PART 2: THE WHORE OF REVELATION 17	263
The Overwhelming Presence Of The Woman And The Beast In The "End Of Days"	264
PART 3: AMERICA IS NO LONGER JUST A NATION. IT IS NOW A RELIGION	265
The Woman Of Revelation 17	265
C. Peter Wagner: The Presiding Apostle Of The International Coalition Of Apostles	266
False Prophets & Apostles	267
American Soldiers As Missionaries	267
Imposing Unity Under Pain Of Ex-Communication	268
PART 4: THREE THING OF EXTRAORDINARY NOTE	269
An Harlot	269
An Abomination	270
The Wilderness	271
PART 5: THE DAUGHTERS OF THE WHORE	273
The Mother Of Harlots	273
Our Destiny Is To Rule The Nations	274
Preaching The Gospel Of Christ Through The Barrel Of A Gun	275
Drunk With The Wine Of Her Fornication	276

Blind Leading The Blind	276
Mirror-Images	277
The Church In Guatemala: Daughter Of The Harlot	278
A Little "New Israel Of God"	279
Killing Innocent Civilians In The Name Of God	280
Ersatz Revolutions In The Name Of The American New World Order System	281
CHAPTER XIV: APOSTASY [The Great "Falling Away"]	282
PART 1: APOSTASY OPENS ONE UP TO DECEPTION	282
Introduction	282
"Things Aren't What They Seem To Be"	283
Apostasy: The "Falling Away"	283
The Bait Which Leads To Apostasy: The Desire For Wealth	284
Deception	285
The Problem & The Solution (The Bait And The Trap)	285
PART 2: APOSTASY - PAST AS PROLOGUE TO THE FUTURE	286
Following In Germany's Footsteps	286
Evangelical Misconceptions Re. German Christianity	287
The Road To Hell Is Not Transversed In One Giant Step	288
The Trifling Nature Of Today's Christianity	289
PART 3: APOSTASY - AUCTIONING GOD'S SERVANTS OFF TO THE DEVIL	291
Making Christians Vulnerable To Elite Machinations And Stratagems	291
Pastors As Slave Auctioneers	292
Whosoever Is A Friend Of The World Is God's Enemy	292
PART 4: APOSTASY - MAKING ISRAEL AND THE CHURCH SERVANTS IN THE HOUSEHOLD OF THE DEVIL	292
Making A Pact With The Devil	292
Committee For The Liberation Of Iraq	293
Promoting A War Between Israel And The U.S (On The One Side) And Islam (On The Other Side)	294
The Project For A New American Century (PNAC)	295
PNAC's Bloody Roots	296
The Work Of The Institute For Religion And Democracy	296
Creating A Sham Pretext For War In Central And South America	297
The Shame Of It All	298
Jews Too Have Fallen Victim To This Ploy	299
There Is A Price In Infamy To Be Paid When One Serves The American New World Order	299
What Happened?	300
Mercenaries And Thugs For America	300
Midge Deckter And Norman Podhoretz	301
Elliot Abrams	301
Intimidating Those Christians Who Refuse To Go Along: "Reading Them Out" Of The Church	302
Lies And More Lies	303

CHAPTER XV: THE GOG / MAGOG WAR	305
PART 1: GOD'S LOVE FOR ISRAEL IS BASED ON GRACE, NOT ON WORKS	305
The <i>Gottesdammerung</i>	305
Forcing Israel On The World	306
The New Anti-Semitism	307
The Jews Are Frightened	307
The Rebirth Of The "Blood-Libels"	308
Conspiracy Theories	308
Jews As The Hidden-Hand Behind The Attack On The WTC	309
Billy Graham And The Jews	310
We Need To Be Honest About Graham	310
Schizophrenia, The Jews, And The Evangelicals	311
A Perpetual Hatred	311
I Will Save Thee	312
Set Thy Face Against Mount Seir	313
Something Dreadful Is About To Happen	314
Who Are You To Say To God What's Fair?	315
God Chose Israel On The Basis Of Grace	317
God Is No Respector Of Persons	317
Whosoever Will	318
God's Mercy To Israel And The Jewish People Will Not Fail	318
PART 2: A CONTRIVED HATRED	319
Introduction	319
Provoking Hatred Between Israel And The Arabs	320
A Defense Pact	321
The United States Is Not Israel's Friend	322
PART 3: A CONTRIVED HATRED PRODUCES A CONTRIVED WAR	322
Securing The Oil Wealth Of Iraq For The American Oil Elites	323
A War Aimed At De-Populating The Middle East	323
De-populating The Middle East	324
The Breathtaking Criminality Of America's Game Here	325
PART 4: DIFFERENTIATING BETWEEN THE GOG/MAGOG WAR AND ARMAGEDDON	325
Sometime Between Now And The Beginning Of The Tribulation	326
PART 5: GATHERING ALL THE "PLAYERS" TOGETHER FOR THE GOG/MAGOG WAR	327
Hate And Greed Draw The "Players" Together	327
Hate Draws Gog Down On Israel	329
Greed Draws In The "Merchants Of Tarshish"	329
The King Of Tyre	331
Parallel Worlds	335


The Prophecies Of Ezekiel And Daniel Concerning The Gog/Magog War	337
Restating The Facts On The Ground	342
PART 6: ISRAEL'S AGREEMENT WITH HELL	342
Dwight Pentecost On The Coming Defense Pact	342
Sir Robert Anderson On The Coming Defense Pact	343
The Political Environment Surrounding The Creation Of The Defense Pact	343
PART 7: THE CHRISTIAN RADICALIZATION OF THE UNITED STATES	345
A Race Back To The Dark Ages	345
Blood, Gore And Mangled Bodies	345
A Holy War (Crusade) Against Islam	346
Can Anyone Reasonably Doubt?	348
PART 8: A FINAL RECAPITULATION	349
The Time Of Judgment Has Arrived	349
The Gog/Magog War (The Beginning Of The Tribulation Period)	349
The Aftermath Of The Gog/Magog War	350
CHAPTER XVI: AFTERMATH	351
PART 1: THE VALLEY OF DECISION	351
At The Time Of The End	352
PART 2: THE GOG / MAGOG WAR PRODUCES A MESSIAH-COMPLEX IN THE LEADER OF BABYLON	353
The Difference Between A Tyrant And A Messiah	354
PART 3: SEEKING THE SOURCE OF ANTICHRIST'S POWER	355
The American Evangelicals	355
Manifest Destiny Is Alive And Well	356
PART 4: THE DOMINIONIST MODEL	357
God's Redeemer Nation	357
Spreading Christianity At The Point Of A Sword	357
A "Who's Who" Of American "Dominionists"	358
The Eschatological Model Of Dominionism	359
Dominionism Is At Variance With The Scriptures	360
PART 5: FICTION MEETS REALITY - THE CHURCH	361
What Then Is The Standard By Which One Will Be Judged?	363
If You Choose God You Will Be Labeled A Witch	363

Dealing With All Opposition	364
PART 6: FICTION MEETS REALITY – ISRAEL	365
And What About Israel?	365
Doing Violence To The Dominionists' Time-Line	366
The Worst Thing To Be Is A Jilted Lover	367
A Festering Sore	368
What To Do?	368
Bloodlust Against The Jews	369
CHAPTER XVII: THE GOOD NEWS OF THE COMING KINGDOM	371
PART 1: TODAY'S CHURCH IS A "TURN-OFF" TO THE POOR OF THIS WORLD	371
Introduction	371
This Machine Actually Exists	372
The Machine's "Priests And Prophets"	372
Shutting Up The Kingdom Of God Against Men	373
The Poor Of The Earth Are Offended By The Church	374
PART 2: THE "GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM" TURNS THE POOR ONCE AGAIN TO CHRIST	374
God's Answer To This Deception	374
The Fact Of The Gospel Of The Kingdom	374
Getting Beyond The Rudiments Of The Faith	375
The Good News Of The Kingdom	375
The Good News Of Salvation	376
A Kingdom Grounded In Social Justice	376
The Kingdom Of God Is "At Hand"	377
The Tribulation Saints	378
PART 3: KNOWLEDGE THAT DOES NOT PRODUCE ACTION IS WORTHLESS	378
What Are You Going To Do?	378
What Then Should We Do?	378
A Call To Action	380
Spiritual Cowards	380
To The "Moderates," We Would Simply Say This ...	381
PART 4: SPEAK OUT !	381
This Gospel Shall Be Preached	381
Your Preaching Will Accomplish Two Things	382
PART 5: WHEN THEY PERSECUTE YOU IN THIS CITY, FLEE YE UNTO ANOTHER	383
God's Directive In Revelation 18:4	383
We Must Be Honest	385
A Transparent "Cop-Out"	385
And So I Tell You Now ...	386

INTRODUCTION

PART 1: NO ONE LOVES A PROPHET



AMOS
The words of Amos, who was among the herdsmen of Tekoa . . . Thus saith the Lord:
For these transgressions of Damascus, and for four, I will not turn away the punishment thereof . . . (Amos 1, 1, 3) 

"... The prophet is a troublesome ... voice, hated by the church's leaders and out of favor with the church's members. Like a wild, ragged, unkempt coyote scenting from afar the smell of carrion, like a raven always croaking out the same cry, like a ... wolf howling on the mountain top, the prophet travels throughout the church ... followed by suspicion and hatred... He is ... a man who sees with a troubled heart - but with clear eyes - the compromises the church is making with the world today, and the consequences that will accrue to it tomorrow ... Like all truth-tellers who disturb the slumbering majority and who unsettle the peace of the church's leadership, he is avoided like a leper, persecuted like an enemy and those with a reputation in the church for 'being somebody' detest him. The prophet is an accuser, but today's Christians do not want to admit their guilt. He is an intercessor, but Christians do not want to be shown their error ... He is an announcer, but Christians do not want to hear ..."

Giovanni Papine

PART 2: THE STUDY OF THE PROPHETIC SCRIPTURES IS NOT EASY

The serious study of the Prophetic Scriptures is very difficult to "come by" in today's church, the leaders of which are **DRUNK** (Rev. 14:8) with the love of this world and **INTOXICATED** (Rev. 14:8) with the wine of the American New World Order System. The Bible says:

"... they are swallowed up [with the] wine [of this world] ... **THEY ERR IN VISION, THEY STUMBLE IN JUDGMENT.**

"For all tables are full of [their] vomit [i.e., their false teachings] ... " (Isaiah 28:7-8)

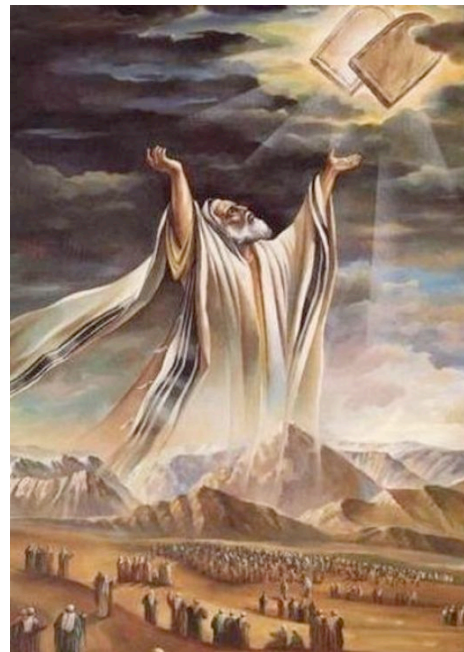
They teach error for truth; and like Balaam's ass, they prophesy for money. Still, God's Word abides true, despite the false teachings of today's Apostate Church, and what it has to say continues to be **AUTHORITATIVE** and **CONCLUSIVE**; indeed, insofar as the Book of Revelation is concerned, the Bible says:

"Blessed *is* he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein: for the time *is* at hand." (Rev. 1:3)

No other book of the Bible contains such a promise. The fact is, God wants us to know what His "Plan and Purpose" in the "end of days" is so that we can prepare ourselves for those things "which must shortly come to pass." (Rev. 1:1) Specifically, the Bible says:

"Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, **THAT YE MAY BE ABLE TO STAND IN THAT EVIL DAY**, and having done all, to stand.

"STAND THEREFORE HAVING YOUR LOINS GIRT ABOUT WITH [THE] TRUTH [OF GOD'S WORD] ..." (Eph. 13-14)



Concerning God's desire to bring us into His confidence in these "Last Days," J. Dwight Pentecost has written,

"God, the architect of the ages, has seen fit to take us into His confidence concerning His plan for the future [of mankind and planet earth] and has revealed His purpose in **DETAIL** in the Word [i.e., the Bible]. A greater body of Scripture is given to prophecy than any other subject; approximately one-fourth of the Bible was prophetic at the time it was written."

THE STUDY OF THE PROPHETIC SCRIPTURES IS NOT FOR DILETTANTES AND DABLERS

But the study of the Prophetic Scriptures **CANNOT** be approached in a casual fashion, and it cannot be undertaken by **DILETTANTES** and **DABLERS**; it can only be undertaken by those

who are willing to give themselves over to the occasional **DISCOMFORT** of serious study. The Bible says:

"[To] whom shall He teach knowledge? and [to] whom shall He make to understand doctrine? *them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts* [i.e., those who want to get serious with the Lord].

"FOR PRECEPT MUST BE [PLACED] UPON PRECEPT, PRECEPT UPON PRECEPT, LINE UPON LINE, LINE UPON LINE; HERE A LITTLE AND THERE A LITTLE ..."
(Isaiah 28:9-10)

The fact of the matter is, if people truly desire to come to a **FULL** and **THOROUGH** understanding of what God is doing in the world today, what His "Plan and Purpose" is for them in these "Last Days," they must give themselves over to the **RIGOROUS** and **STRUCTURED** study of the Word of God - **"precept upon precept," "line upon line."**

These are the kind of people that the Lord is interested in today - not the **DILETTANTES** and **DABLERS** of the Word of God who pick at this delicacy, poke at that morsel; taste that dainty here, savor that goody there - whatever suits their taste and pleases their palette. These are those people who have in these "Last Days" given themselves over to **"old wives' fables"** (1 Tim 4:7); people who -

"... will not **ENDURE** sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears;

"And they shall turn away *their* ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables. (2 Tim. 4:3-4)

These are those who are -

"... tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, *and* cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive ..." (Ephesians 4:14)



"PART TRUTH" ENGENDERS CONFUSION

God is **NOT** interested in such people, and neither are we; but the sad fact of the matter is, when we open up our training to "all comers," we inevitably attract such people - people who are unwilling to **ENDURE** the rigor that training in the Prophetic Scriptures demands, and - as a result - walk away from such training with "half truths."

I repeat, the study of the Prophetic Scriptures is **NOT** an easy undertaking, and it cannot be approached in a casual fashion. Indeed, John Walvoord says:

"Biblical eschatology (i.e., the study of "end times") is the **CAPSTONE** of systematic theology. It is not only climactic, the terminus and consummation of theological study, but the presentation of eschatology is also the supreme demonstration of theological skill. Here as in no other field, except perhaps the doctrine of the person of Christ, are the important tools of exegesis, synthesis, hermeneutics, and theological system displayed."

In other words, trying to understand biblical eschatology without a thorough understanding of the other great themes of the Bible - themes such as the nature of man, the deity of Christ, salvation, grace, how to walk in the spirit, the church, etc. - is impossible. To jump into the study of biblical

eschatology without an understanding of these themes is like trying to understand advanced calculus without understanding the basics of arithmetic. This is especially true of people whose first "contact" with the study of "end times" themes originated not from an interest in the Bible *per se*, but in an interest in conspiratorial thought (e.g., the Illuminist Myth and its various manifestations, the New Age, political beliefs, racist ideologies, economic perspectives and so forth) and then who "bleed" these "extra-biblical" perspectives into their study of biblical eschatology.

Contra wise, the study of "end times" has suffered from Christians who - while they might have more than a "nodding acquaintance" with the Bible itself - have no corresponding foundation insofar as history, culture, economics, etc. are concerned. This is especially true of the graduates of today's Bible Schools and Seminaries.

OUR METHODOLOGY: PRECEPT UPON PRECEPT, LINE UPON LINE

Our first chapter in this book deals the "Nature of Man;" we begin there because unless one understands what man's nature is all about, it is impossible to have a real understanding of what it means to be "born again." From there we proceed to our second chapter, "Salvation" - that is to say, what being "born again" actually constitutes. Because we are building "**precept upon precept**" and "**line upon line**," the transition between the two subjects is effortless.

This leads easily into our third chapter: "God's Grace as Contrasted to God's Law." Again, "**precept upon precept**," "**line upon line**." Here we begin to realize that we are entirely dependent on God's grace - and that the only way we can fulfill the Law of God in our lives is not by endeavoring to keep the Law now that we are saved, but by "beholding and reflecting" Christ who is now resident as a living Person in our spirit. Moreover, we learn that it is not our duty to enforce the Law of God on our brothers and sisters in Christ, but to get them to "behold and reflect" Christ in their spirits - and everything will follow from that. Again, "**precept upon precept**" and "**line upon line**."

From there we transition naturally and quite effortlessly into what the church-life is all about: that it is God's testimony to the world, and that testimony is predicated on the love we have one for another in the church, which in turn is predicated on our willingness to extend grace to our brothers and sisters in Christ (the same grace that God extended to us), which, in turn is being worked into us as a reality as we "behold and reflect" Christ in our spirit. Again, "**precept upon precept**," "**line upon line**."

Our next chapter deals with the **ETERNAL** and **UNCONDITIONAL** nature of God's four great covenants with Israel; that these covenants are covenants of **GRACE**. Once again, we are brought face to face with the fact of **GRACE**; that as much as we as former gentile unbelievers are dependent on **GRACE**, so also is Israel. Again, "**precept upon precept**," "**line upon line**." [This fact will open up vast areas of the Prophetic Scriptures at a later date.]

We then take this great fact of God's **GRACE** insofar as Israel is concerned, and use it as a springboard to shred the conspiracy theories which swirl and surround the Jewish people and which form the basis of the "Old Wives Fables" generated by **IDIOTS** and **NINCOMPOOPS** such as **Alex Jones, Pat Robertson, Tex Marrs, Paul Joseph Watson, Jeff Rense**, *ad nauseum* - conspiracy theories which inevitably **CONTAMINATE** any serious study of the Prophetic Scriptures and which eventually lead to **ANTI-SEMITISM**.



From there we move on to the matter of the Rapture; will it be before the Tribulation, during the Tribulation, or after the Tribulation? This is an extremely important matter because it clears up innumerable misconceptions concerning the Tribulation Period, and will impact on our future study of the Seven Seals, the Seven Trumpets, the Seven Vials, the Abomination of Desolation and countless other eschatological subjects. Again, "**precept upon precept, line upon line**" - all of the preceding material being the building blocks of our discussion of the rapture, and this discussion then becoming an important building block for our further discussions on other eschatological matters.

The point to be made in all of this is, **PLEASE DON'T SKIP AROUND**. Read this book sentence by sentence, paragraph by paragraph, and chapter by chapter. **IT WILL CHANGE YOUR LIFE**.

CHAPTER I

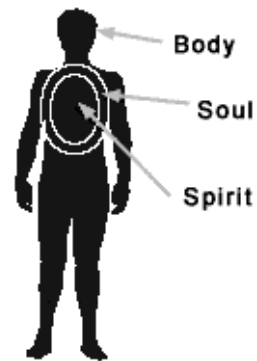
THE NATURE OF MAN

BODY, SOUL & SPIRIT (Trichotomy)*

THE TRIUNE MAN

The Bible says that man is a three-part being:

- Body
- Soul
- Spirit



MAN HAS A SPIRIT

That man has a body is, of course, self evident; but that man has a spirit in addition to his soul is also just as evident - at least to those who are disposed to read the Scriptures literally. The Scriptures very clearly differentiate between the two. For example, that man has a spirit seems to be very plain from the following Scriptures:

- "The spirit (Heb. - *ne shamah*) of man is the lamp of the Lord." (Prov. 20:27)
- "The spirit (Gk. - *pneuma*) indeed is willing ..." (Matt. 26:41)
- "Jesus perceiving in his spirit (Gk. - *pneuma*) ..." (Mark 2:8)
- "He sighed deeply in his spirit (Gk. - *pneuma*) ..." (Mark 8:12)
- "My spirit hath rejoiced in God my Savior (Gk. - *pneuma*) ..." (Luke 1:47)
- "He was deeply moved in spirit (Gk. - *pneuma*) ..." (John 11:33)

- "Being fervent is spirit (Gk. - *pneuma*) ..." (Acts 18:25)
- "I am going to Jerusalem, bound in the spirit (Gk. - *pneuma*) ..." (Acts 20:22)
- "Whom I serve in my spirit (Gk. - *pneuma*).\" (Rom. 1:9 NASB)
- "The Spirit himself bears witness with our spirit (Gk. - *pneuma*) ..." (Rom. 8:15)
- "What man knoweth the things of a man except the spirit (Gk. - *pneuma*) of man which is in him.\" (I Cor 2:11)
- "They refreshed my spirit (Gk. - *pneuma*) as well as yours.\" (I Cor. 16:18)
- "His spirit (Gk. - *pneuma*) was refreshed by you all.\" (2 Cor. 7:13)
- "The Lord Jesus be with your spirit (Gk. - *pneuma*).\" (2 Tim. 4:22)

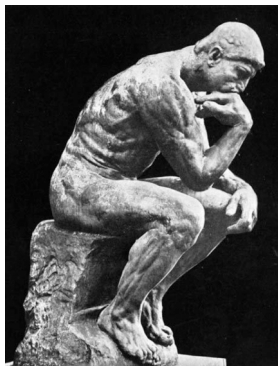


ne shamah = spirit (Hebrew); *pneuma* = spirit (Greek); both words mean wind or breeze

MAN HAS A SOUL

And that man has a soul is also evident from the following Scriptures:

- (1) "Why are you cast down, O my soul (Heb. - *nephesh*).\" (Ps. 42:5)
- (2) "My soul (Gk. - *psuche*) is very sorrowful.\" (Matt. 26:38)
- (3) "My soul (Gk. - *psuche*) doth magnify the Lord.\" (Luke 1:46)
- (4) "Now is my soul (Gk. - *psuche*) troubled.\" (John 12:27)
- (5) "... were of one heart and soul (Gk. - *psuche*) ..." (Acts 4:32)
- (6) "I call for a record upon my soul (Gk. - *psuche*).\" (2 Cor. 1:23)
- (7) "For they watch for your souls (Gk. - *psuche*).\" (Heb. 13:17)
- (8) "Seeing you have purified your souls (Gk. - *psuche*).\" (I Pet. 1:22)
- (9) "Which war against your soul (Gk. - *psuche*).\" (I Pet. 2:11)



nephesh = soul (Hebrew); *psuche* = soul (Greek); both means a living, thinking being

LET US MAKE MAN IN OUR IMAGE

It should be noted in this connection that the Hebrew word for spirit is *ne shamah* which means "wind," and the Hebrew word for soul is *nephesh* which means a "living (thinking) being." They are two totally different words, and mean two totally different things. In addition, the Greek word for spirit is *pneuma* which

means "breeze," and the Greek word for soul is *psuche*, which - like the Hebrew word, *nephesh* - means a "living (thinking) being." Again, they are two totally different words, and mean two totally different things. In addition, the Hebrew word for spirit, *ne shamah* ("wind"), corresponds to the Greek word for spirit, *pneuma* ("breeze"), while the Hebrew word for soul, *nephesh* ["living (thinking) being"] corresponds to the Greek word, *psuche* [also "living (thinking) being"].

Finally, the fact that the soul and spirit of man are two different things is made absolutely apparent by Hebrews 4:12 where the Bible speaks of separating the two into two distinct entities:

"For the word of God *is* quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and *is* a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart." (Hebrews 4:12)

Thus, when God said, "*Let us make man in our image, after our likeness ... So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him ...*" (Gen. 1:26-27) what is meant here is that God made man a three-part being. Since God is a three-part being (i.e., He is triune), He created man a three-part being - body, soul and spirit.

WHAT IS THE SPIRIT OF MAN?

If, however, man has a spirit which is different from his soul, what is the spirit? The spirit is our "inner man" (Eph. 3:16) - it is that portion of our being which is meant to touch (and commune with) God - so that we:

"May be able to comprehend [understand] ... what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height [of Christ]; and to know [His] ... love ... which passeth knowledge, that ... [we] might be filled with all the fullness of God." (Eph. 3:18-19).

The spirit is what Peter refers to as "the hidden person of the heart" (I Pet. 3:4) - and it's precisely this "hidden person of the heart" which differentiates man from the beasts.

MAN AS DIFFERENTIATED FROM THE BEASTS

The beasts have no such ability to touch God - they were never meant to "commune" with God - only man has this ability (or possibility). Indeed, if only the body and soul are taken into account, then the radical "animal rights" activists (as bizarre as they may seem) are correct when they say that there is little that differentiates man from the beasts - after all, beasts, just like man, think, reason, love, and hate and, *ipso facto*, they have a soul!

To say that they don't - that they just react to stimuli like plants - is asinine. Plants (which have only a body, but no soul) don't think, don't love, don't reason. Unlike the beasts and man, they only react to stimuli; they are still alive, but they don't have a soul, and surely they don't have a spirit.

SOUL AND SPIRIT

It is important to understand the difference between our soul and spirit because it is in our spirit where we are cognizant of God and where He speaks to us through the Holy Spirit. It is in the spirit where our fellowship with God begins. It is in our own spirit where we must worship God. This is why Jesus said,

"God is a Spirit [meaning the Holy Spirit]: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit [meaning man's spirit] and in truth." (John 4:24)

Our spirit is deeper than our soul. It's deeper than our random thoughts. It's deeper than our outward emotions which we might project to others. It's a place to which we can retreat and always find happiness and

joy in Christ - regardless of our outward circumstances. This is what Paul was talking about in II Cor. 6:10 when he said that as a servant of Christ he was "sorrowful, yet always rejoicing" - sorrowful in his soul due to the trying circumstances which surrounded him - but always rejoicing in his spirit where he had fellowship with the Lord Jesus Christ. Paul puts it this way in II Cor. 4:8:

"... we are afflicted in every way, but not crushed; perplexed, but not despairing; persecuted, but not forsaken; struck down, but not destroyed." (II Cor. 4:8)

Nothing could shake Paul from his deep, abiding trust and peace that was his experience down deep in his spirit - although outwardly, in his soul, he was often bewildered and distressed. Some have likened it to a storm raging on the ocean; but if we go down beneath the waves we find rest and peace. How often we forget, and try to ride out the storm on the surface (in our soul) where the raging waves of confusion and fear predominate, instead of trusting Christ in our spirits.



It's in our spirits where "the peace that passes all understanding" is to be found.

It's in our spirits where "the peace that passes all understanding" is to be found (Phil. 4:7) - the peace which is ours because Christ dwells there. It was in our spirit where we first met God when the Holy Spirit convicted us of our sin. Wasn't it glorious when we first came to know Christ? It might not have made sense in our mind or soul, but down deep inside we knew the gospel was true and that we needed a Savior. That was God speaking to us in our spirit.

BEHOLDING AND REFLECTING THE LORD

It is in our spirits where the consciousness of God is found. Some have said that:

- Our spirit is where we are conscious of God.
- Our soul is where we are conscious of self.
- Our bodies are where we are conscious of the physical world of the senses.

Sanctification means bringing our soul into submission to our spirit which is beholding and reflecting God. When we do this, we reflect God to the world. This is what Paul meant when he said that -

"... we all, with open face beholding as in a glass [mirror] the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord." (2 Cor. 3:18)

This is what true godliness is all about. It's not about learning formulas from "how to" books promoted by "Christian" psychologists and counselors on how to have a good marriage, to be a loving father or wife, to be a caring parent, etc. It's about beholding God in our spirit and reflecting Him through our soul to the world which surrounds us. Our need isn't for more books and seminars, our need is to behold the Lord in our spirit and reflect Him to those who touch us in our daily lives. When we do this, we will automatically

be a loving father or mother, because He is a loving father or mother; we will automatically be a loving husband or wife because He is a loving husband or wife; we will automatically be a caring parent because He is a caring parent. This is exactly the practice of our Lord insofar as His walk with the Father is concerned. Jesus said,

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise." (John 5:19)

ABIDING IN THE LORD

And, likewise, this is what Jesus told us to do insofar as our relationship with Him was concerned:

"Abide in me, and I in you.
As the branch cannot
bear fruit of itself, except
it abide in the vine; no
more can ye, except ye
abide in me.

"I am the vine, ye are the
branches: He that abideth
in me, and I in him, the
same bringeth forth much
fruit: for without me ye
can do nothing.

"If a man abide not in me, he
is cast forth as a branch,
and is withered; and men
gather them, and cast
them into the fire, and
they are burned.

"If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.

"Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples." (John 15:4-8)



It's not working for Christ, but "abiding" in Christ; it's not doing, but "beholding and reflecting."

NOTE

THE HISTORY OF TRICHOTOMY

Most Biblical scholars in the early church saw man as a threefold (Trichotomous) being. Even as late as Augustine (A.D. 354-430), the common view was that man was Trichotomous - that he possessed a body, a soul, and a spirit. The words of Augustine substantiate this fact very plainly when he wrote in *Faith and Creed*:

"... there are three things of which man consists - namely spirit, soul, and body ..." [*Faith and the Creed* (XX:23)].

But as Latin Theology (i.e., Roman Catholicism) began to take hold, most theologians abandoned Trichotomy and began to see man as simply a two-fold being of soul and body (with spirit being just another name for the soul). This idea, known as dichotomy, continued as the majority opinion down through the centuries and still is the common view held by the Roman Catholic Church and most of the Protestant churches that came out of the Reformation (i.e., the Dutch Reformed, the

Lutheran, the Episcopalian, the Presbyterian, etc.) - all of which, interestingly enough, hold to a post-millennial approach to eschatology [i.e., that the church must take control of the world before Christ can return (more about this later)]. It is interesting to note in this connection, however, that Martin Luther, the father (so to speak) of the Reformation, championed the view that man was Trichotomous.

THE PLYMOUTH BRETHREN

It wasn't until the rise of evangelicalism in the 1800s [and most especially, the Plymouth Brethren, the group which is looked upon by most church historians as the parent body out from which evangelicalism sprang] and John Nelson Darby that Trichotomy once again revived - and it's worth noting in this connection that along with a revived view of man as a Trichotomous being, pre-millennialism also revived. Darby's teachings were popularized and gained wide acceptance and public acclaim in conservative church bodies throughout most of the 20th century. But with the rise of the modern ecumenical movement - i.e., the *political* movement of Protestant and Catholic bodies together to "take the nation back for Christ and the church" - post-millennialism (which "politicizing" promotes) resurfaced along with dichotomy - which post-millennialism of necessity encourages.

* Much of this material was derived from Brent Harris's excellent booklet, *Body, Soul and Spirit*

CHAPTER II

SALVATION: WHAT DOES IT MEAN?



Does It Mean That We Become Little Gods?

WHAT DOES IT MEAN TO BE BORN AGAIN?

What does it mean to be "born-again?" What did Jesus mean when He said:

"Verily, verily, I say unto thee, **EXCEPT A MAN BE BORN AGAIN, HE CANNOT SEE THE KINGDOM OF GOD.**"(John 3:3) ?

Be born again? What's that? That's what Nicodemus thought as well:

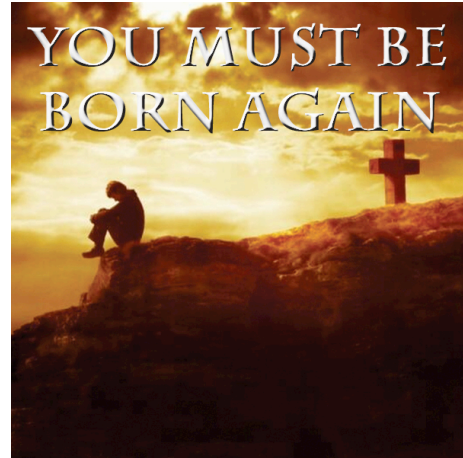
"How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born?"

"Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

"That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

"Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again.

"The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit." (John 3:4-8)



GOING BACK TO THE BEGINNING

To understand what Jesus meant here, we must understand what happened to man in the Garden of Eden. The Bible says:

"And the LORD God planted a garden eastward in Eden; and there he put the man whom he had formed.

And out of the ground made the LORD God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food; the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil.

"And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat:

"But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: **FOR IN THE DAY THAT THOU EATEST THEREOF THOU SHALT SURELY DIE.** (Genesis 2:8-9, 16-17)

But man was enticed by the devil and he did eat of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. It seems, however, that - contrary to God's warning - neither Adam nor Eve died after they ate of this tree. Apparently, all that happened to them was that they were cast out of the Garden. Of course, one might say that they eventually died - but that does not comport or answer to the **EXACT** wording of God's warning to Adam; specifically, that "*in the DAY that thou eatest thereof, thou shalt surely die.*" (Genesis 2:17). So then, we must ask ourselves, What **EXACTLY** died on the **DAY** Adam and Eve ate of the "Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil?"

WHAT DIED IN THE GARDEN OF EDEN?

Something died in man, but what was it? Certainly man's body didn't die, neither did his soul! **WHAT DIED WAS MAN'S SPIRIT** - that part of man that enabled him to commune with God. It is **PRECISELY** for this reason that Jesus said that for man to reestablish his relationship with God [i.e., to "enter the kingdom of God" (John 3:3)] he must be **BORN AGAIN**; that is to say, his spirit must be **REGENERATED** by the Holy Spirit. In this connection, it should be noted that the term, "born again," does not refer to being born again after the flesh [after all, "*that which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the spirit is spirit*" (John



What died in the Garden if Eden?

3:6)], rather it means that man's spirit - which died in the Garden of Eden - must be brought back to life a second time.

I say again, when a man is **BORN AGAIN**, his body is not regenerated, neither is his soul; what's regenerated is his spirit - and when that occurs, man is brought back into **DIRECT** relationship with God so that he -

"... may be able to comprehend [understand] ... what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height [of Christ]; and to know [His] ... love ... which passeth knowledge, that ... [we] might be filled with all the fullness of God." (Eph. 3:18-19).

REGENERATION & SANCTIFICATION

It's when our spirit is regenerated by the indwelling of the Holy Spirit that we are enabled - through the growth in life - to be changed into Christ's likeness. And how is that accomplished? - it is accomplished as we "behold and reflect" (2 Cor. 3:18a) Christ in our spirit; and as we do so, the Bible says that we are -

"... changed into His image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord." (2 Cor. 3:18b) [The term "from glory to glory" means to be changed progressively over time from one stage of glory to the next and so on and on and on; this is the "growth in life."]

It's "beholding and reflecting" the Lord in our spirits that changes or **SANCTIFIES** us. This is what true godliness is all about. Again, this is exactly the practice of our Lord insofar as His walk with the Father is concerned. Jesus said,

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise." (John 5:19)

WHAT BEING BORN AGAIN IS NOT

Now in all of this, we must be very careful to understand what **SANCTIFICATION** is, and what it is not: To be **SANCTIFIED** is to be changed into His **LIKENESS**. This means that we become **LIKE** Christ, **BUT WE DO NOT BECOME CHRIST** as some allege. We do not take on divinity in and of ourselves. To think otherwise (i.e., to think that we become "divine") is to make the same mistake that Eve made, and to succumb to the same deception that overtook her. Specifically, the Bible says:

"Now the serpent was more subtil [subtle] than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?"

"And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden:

"But of the fruit of the tree which *is* in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die.

"And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die:

"For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, **AND YE SHALL BE AS GODS**, knowing good and evil." (Genesis 3:1-5)



Now the serpent was more subtil [subtle] than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made.

DEIFICATION

How is it that Satan tempted Eve? What was the bait? - that by eating of the tree of the "Knowledge of Good and Evil" she would become a god; she would be, as it were, "deified." (Genesis 3:5) D.R. McConnell explains "deification" in his book, *A Different Gospel*:

"Deification may be defined as the process whereby men are transformed into gods ... [Proponents of this view believe that] man was created with the divine nature [in Eden], sinned [through the Fall], and was filled with the satanic nature; but through the new birth, he is again infused with the divine nature. To be born again ... is to receive 'the nature and life of God' ..." [And, remember here, we are talking about **INTRINSIC** oneness.]

This "**GOD-DREAM**" permeates our legends and myths, and echoes back down through the corridors of time to Camelot and Valhalla. Indeed, for millennia our poets, writers, priests and prophets have been telling and re-telling the legends and myths which swirl like ghostly apparitions around this dream: that there is within man a "divine spark" which longs to be set free in order to ascend to its Originator, God. Man is, therefore, divine and has a god's role in the universe. This is what the Nazis taught; this is what Nietzsche and Schopenhauer taught: that man can ascend to the heavens; that he can become divine in exactly the same fashion that Christ is divine. And it isn't just **anti**-Christians like Nietzsche and Schopenhauer who have taught this deception, but many so-called "Christians" such as the late Kenneth Hagin have taught it (teach it) as well. Hagin, for example, alleged:



Man becomes God – the Valkyries and Valhalla

"That's who we are; **WE'RE CHRIST**."

Hagin goes on to say -

"... every born again man is an incarnation [of God]."

And that -

"... the believer is as much an incarnation [of God] as Jesus of Nazareth."

This is what the late John Wimber of the Vineyards International was suggesting when he talked about receiving an "**INCARNATIONAL** endowment" (see below); this should give you some idea of just how widespread this "God-Dream" is in today's Christianity - and one should bear in mind here that the Vineyard churches are the "kissing-cousins" of Chuck Smith's Calvary Chapels.]

THE SO-CALLED "CONTINUATION OF THE INCARNATION"

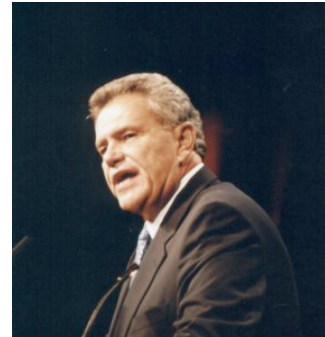
What these men are suggesting is that when we are born again, we become as much divine as Christ is divine; that the same power that Christ possesses to command nature, we possess too - and not just as supplicants, but as actual **POSSESSORS** of that power in the same way Christ possesses it. This is the core belief at the heart of such so-called "Christian" concepts as the "**Manifest Sons of God**;" the "**Manchild Company**;" the "**First Fruits**;" "**Joel's Army**;" and the "**Overcomers**!" For example, that's what James Robison

- in whose church Ronald Reagan once said, "*You cannot endorse me, but I can endorse you*" - believes. He says:

"God wants us to see Jesus as **MERELY** the big brother in a huge family of brothers and sisters who are [intrinsically] like Him ..."

In other words, when we are born again, we become as much "God" as Christ is God, and to the same degree that Christ possesses **DIVINITY**, we possess **DIVINITY** as well! Robison - again, **THE SAME PERSON WHO DID SO MUCH TO LAUNCH RONALD REAGAN'S 1980 CAMPAIGN FOR THE PRESIDENCY** - continues:

"As I consider the implications of what God is telling us [i.e., that we as Christ's 'brothers and sisters' are as much 'God' as Christ is] ... my mind almost explodes. I do not believe the Church until this time has ever noticed more than a fleeting glimpse of **THIS OVERWHELMING TRUTH** [i.e., that we are as much 'God' as Christ is God]."



Rev. James Robison

This kind of thinking is called the "Continuation of the Incarnation," and it is widely held as a belief under different names and different guises in today's church; according to this teaching, the church (i.e., every born again believer) is the essence of God; His "... on-going incarnation in the world today;" but that is a **LIE**, a **DECEPTION**; and it is the same lie that caused man to fall from grace in the Garden of Eden.

WE ARE ONE WITH GOD BY ADOPTION; WE ARE NOT ONE WITH GOD INTRINSICALLY

While it's true that the Bible does say that we are the "sons and daughters of God," the Bible says that we are "sons and daughters of God" by **ADOPTION**; we are **NOT** "sons and daughters of God" **INTRINSICALLY**. The Bible says:

"... ye have received the Spirit of **ADOPTION**, whereby we cry, Abba, Father." (Rom. 8:15)

And it goes on to say that He has -

"... predestinated us unto the **ADOPTION** of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will ..." (Eph. 1:5)

The oneness that we enjoy with the Father is a oneness of **RELATIONSHIP**, not an **INTRINSIC** oneness that a son by blood enjoys with his father.

WE ARE ONE WITH GOD IN THE SAME MANNER THAT A HUSBAND IS ONE WITH HIS WIFE

Paul pictured the oneness that we enjoy with God as the same kind of oneness that a husband and a wife enjoy with each other:

"So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself.

"For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, **EVEN AS THE LORD THE CHURCH**:

"FOR WE ARE MEMBERS OF HIS [i.e., CHRIST'S] BODY, OF HIS FLESH, AND OF HIS BONES.

"For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh." (Eph. 5:28-31)

And the Bible goes on to say:

"Wherefore they [i.e., the husband and wife] are no more twain [i.e., two], but one flesh" (Matt. 19:6)

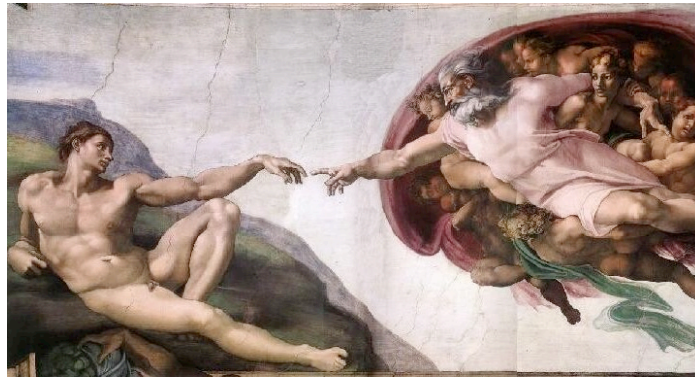
But, again, this oneness is **NOT** an **INTRINSIC** oneness; **IT IS AN ONE-NESS IN RELATIONSHIP!** The husband and wife are one in their relationship, but they are not one in their nature. The man still remains a man, and the woman still remains a woman. They do not meld together and become a strange new creature: a sort of "man-woman." People who say such a thing have no idea who God really is; they have no appreciation of His great majesty, splendor and glory. There is the **CREATOR**, and then there is the creation - the creature. [We urge you to read our articles, "[Luciferic Christianity](#)" and "[The God-Men of the American New World Order System](#)."]



So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies.

THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE CREATURE AND THE CREATOR

Man is a creature, a "created being." God (Christ) is from "eternity past" to "eternity future."



God is the Creator; man is the creature.

The Bible says:

"In the beginning was the Word [i.e., Christ], and the Word was with God, and **THE WORD WAS GOD.**

"The same was in the beginning with God.

"**ALL** things were made by him [i.e., Christ]; and without him [i.e., Christ] was not any thing made that was made." (John 1:1-3)

He is the great "**I AM**" - that is the meaning of His name – Jehovah.

It should be noted in this connection that the term "Jehovah" does not relate simply to the Father (as some allege), but to the entire Godhead - Father, Son, and Holy Spirit; this is made clear in the verses above - John 1:1-3 - as well as numerous other places in the Scripture]. There is **NONE** like Him. He is no creature. He is no "created being." The Bible says:

"Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever thou hadst formed the earth and the world, even **FROM EVERLASTING TO EVERLASTING**, thou art God.

"For a thousand years in thy sight are but as yesterday when it is past, and as a watch in the night.

"Thou carriest ... [men] away as with a flood; they are as a sleep: in the morning they are like grass which groweth up.

"In the morning it [i.e., man] flourisheth, and groweth up; in the evening it [i.e., man] is cut down, and withereth.

"The days of our years are threescore years and ten [70 years]; and if by reason of strength they be fourscore years [80 years], yet is their strength labour and sorrow; for it [i.e., our life] is soon cut off, and we fly away." (Ps. 90:2, 4-6, 10)

WE ARE AS NOTHING BEFORE GOD

What these verses (Ps. 90:2, 4-6, 10) make clear is that man is as **NOTHING** before God, and for us to suppose otherwise is a very, very stupid and even dangerous thing to imagine. Yes, the Holy Spirit does in fact indwell us, but it is not **INTRINSICALLY** one with us; to say that is tantamount to bringing the Creator down to the level of the creature. The Bible says, "*Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? - that is, to bring Christ down from above ...*" (Rom. 10:6) But when we say we can be united to the Holy Spirit intrinsically, that is exactly what we are attempting to do: we are attempting to bring Christ down to our level from His exalted and **UNIQUE** position at the right hand of God.

I say again, we do **NOT** intrinsically share the divine nature. Christ is the **ONLY INTRINSIC** Son of God [the "**ONLY** begotten Son" (John 1:14, John 1:18, John 3:16, 3:18, Acts 13:33, etc.)]. He is united to the Holy Spirit and the Father **INTRINSICALLY**. We are not! - **AND WE NEVER WILL BE**.

To those **IDIOTS** like Kenneth Hagin and Kenneth Copeland, Bennie Hinn, etc. who would presume to be equal with God, He would say to them as He did to the ancient Job:

"Gird up now thy loins like a man; for I will demand of thee, and answer thou me.

"Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? declare, if thou hast understanding.

"Who hath laid the measures thereof, if thou knowest? or who hath stretched the line upon it?

"Whereupon are the foundations thereof fastened? or who laid the corner stone thereof;

"When the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy?

"Have the gates of death been opened unto thee? or hast thou seen the doors of the shadow of death?

"Hast thou perceived the breadth of the earth? declare if thou knowest it all.

"Where *is* the way *where* light dwelleth? and *as for* darkness, where *is* the place thereof,

"That thou shouldest take it to the bound thereof, and that thou shouldest know the paths *to* the house thereof?

"Moreover the LORD answered Job, and said,

"Shall he that contendeth with the Almighty instruct *him*? he that reproveth God, let him answer it.

"Hast thou an arm like God? or canst thou thunder with a voice like him?

"Deck thyself now *with* majesty and excellency; and array thyself with glory and beauty.

"Cast abroad the rage of thy wrath: and behold every one *that is* proud, and abase him.

"Look on every one *that is* proud, *and* bring him low; and tread down the wicked in their place.

"Hide them in the dust together; *and* bind their faces in secret.

"Then will I also confess unto thee that thine own right hand can save thee. (Job 38:3-5, 17-20; 40:1-2, 9-14)

The Bible says:

For as the heaven is high above the earth, so great is his mercy toward them that fear him. Psalm 103:11

HOW THOU ART FALLEN, O LUCIFER

Could Nietzsche and Schopenhauer do such things; can James Robison, Kenneth Hagin, Kenneth Copeland, Bennie Hinn, etc. do such things? If they are truly intrinsically one with the Godhead, then let them demonstrate their creative power. Let them speak things into existence out of nothing; but if they can't do that, then let them and all those like them shut up and never be heard of again. In this connection, one

would do well - before imbibing the waters of this putrid well along with Hagin and many of the other leaders of today's American church - to consider the words of the prophet Isaiah concerning the devil:

"How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning!
how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!

"For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, **I WILL EXALT MY THRONE ABOVE THE STARS OF GOD**: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north:

"I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; **I WILL BE LIKE THE MOST HIGH.**"

"YET THOU SHALT BE BROUGHT DOWN TO HELL, TO THE SIDES OF THE PIT." (Isaiah. 14:12-15)



How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning!

OUR RELATONSHIP WITH CHRIST

Brothers and sisters, listen to me here: The fact that the **CREATOR** of **ALL** would deign to have a relationship with us - any kind of relationship -- is too much to comprehend; that the **CREATOR** of **ALL** things would allow us to be called His sons and daughters **BY ADOPTION**; that He would give "... *his only begotten Son [to die for our sins], that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life*" (John 3:16) and that He would do so while we were yet sinners (Romans 5:8) -- is far beyond our poor ability to comprehend.

And more than that, that such a God - the very God who dwells in "unapproachable light" - shall in "eternity-future" take us into His arms and "... wipe away all tears from our eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away" (Re 21:4) is beyond understanding.

Now, that is something! And that is the end of what being born again is all about! - having our spirits **RE-GENERATED** so that we can have such a relationship with Him. Such a relationship is impossible for us to fathom. Indeed, the Bible says:

"... Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him. (1Co 2:9)

A SMALL GLIMPSE INTO ETERNITY

However, that relationship is - to some small degree - revealed in Revelation 4:2-11:

"And immediately I was in the spirit: and, behold, a throne was set in heaven, and *one* sat on the throne.

"And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and *there was* a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald.

"And round about the throne *were* four and twenty seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and they had on their heads crowns of gold.

"And out of the throne proceeded lightnings and thunders and voices: and *there were* seven lamps of fire burning before the throne, which are the seven Spirits of God.

"And before the throne *there was* a sea of glass like unto crystal: and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, *were* four beasts full of eyes before and behind.

"And the first beast *was* like a lion, and the second beast like a calf, and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast *was* like a flying eagle.

"And the four beasts had each of them six wings about *him*; and *they were* full of eyes within: and they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.

"And when those beasts give glory and honour and thanks to him that sat on the throne, who liveth for ever and ever,

"The four and twenty elders fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying,

"Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created. (Revelation 4:2-11)

Now stop for a moment and consider what these verses reveal. We have before us a picture of the very throne of God, and the One who sits upon that throne. And around about Him sit twenty-four elders **"CLOTHED IN WHITE RAIMENT"** and **"THEY HAVE ON THEIR HEADS CROWNS OF GOLD."** These twenty-four elders represent all those who have been redeemed by the "blood of the lamb." And all these elders *"fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying, Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created."* And this process is repeated over and over again.



The throne of God surrounded by the four beasts and the 24 elders. What one has here is a continuing, everlasting process wherein the twenty-four elders cast their crowns down before the throne of God saying,, *"Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created,"* and then Christ gathering up those crowns and putting them back on their heads, saying *"You are worthy to wear these crowns because I have made you worthy"* - and so on and on into eternity.

Now think about that! - if this process is repeated over and over again, then clearly it implies that the crowns that the elders cast down before the throne, are then picked up and replaced on their heads. And who is the only one worthy to pick up those crowns and put them back on the heads of the twenty-four elders? Obviously, only Christ is worthy to do that. So what we have here is a continuing, everlasting process wherein the twenty-four elders cast their crowns down before the throne of God saying,, *"Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created,"* and then Christ gathering up those crowns and putting them back on their heads, saying *"You are worthy to wear these crowns because I have made you worthy"* - and so on and on into eternity. It's an enchanted, marvelous, mystical dance of love and devotion between the Bridegroom (Christ) and the Bride (all those who have been redeemed by Christ's blood) wherein each separate party (Bride and Bridegroom) is intent on honoring the other - and this dance whirls on into eternity.

- We urge you to see the following articles regarding this subject matter: **"Luciferic Christianity,"** and **"The God-Men of the American New World Order System."**

CHAPTER III

GOD'S GRACE CONTRASTED WITH GOD'S LAW



INTRODUCTION

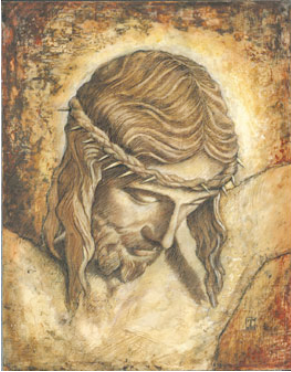
Speaking on the difference between Law and Grace, the renowned Bible teacher C.I. Scofield writes:

"Law is God prohibiting and requiring (Ex. 20:1, 17); grace is God beseeching and bestowing (2 Cor. 5:18, 21). Law is a ministry of condemnation (Rom. 3:19); grace of forgiveness (Eph. 1:7). Law curses (Gal. 3:10); grace redeems from that curse (Gal. 3:1). Law kills (Rom. 7:9, 11); grace makes alive (John 10:10). Law shuts every mouth before God; grace opens every mouth to praise him. Law puts a great and guilty distance between man and God (Ex. 20:18-19); grace makes guilty man nigh to God (Eph. 2:13). Law says, 'An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth' (Ex. 21:24); grace

says, 'Resist not evil; but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also' (Matt. 5:39). **Law says, 'Hate thine enemy';** grace, 'Love your enemy, bless them that despitefully use you'. **Law says, do and live** (Luke 10:26, 28); **grace, believe and live** (John 5:24). **Law never had a missionary;** **grace is to be preached to every creature.** **Law utterly condemns the best man** (Phil. 3:4, 9); **grace freely justifies the worst** (Luke 23:24; Rom. 5:5; 1 Tim. 1:15; 1 Cor. 6:9, 11). **Law is a system of probation;** **grace, of favor.** **Law stones an adulteress** (Deut. 22:21); **grace says, 'Neither do I condemn thee'** (John 8:1, 11). **Under the law the sheep dies for the shepherd;** **under grace the shepherd dies for the sheep** (John 10:11)."

THE GREAT MISTAKE MANY CHRISTIANS MAKE

The great mistake many Christians make after they have been saved (if in fact they have really been saved) is that they as Christians must endeavor to keep the law (i.e., conform themselves to God's righteousness)



The grace of God who gave His only begotten Son.

with all their might now that they have been saved; that they must strive all the more to be "perfect" - to be careful to "do good" and "avoid evil;" to exude a Christian piety and godliness appropriate to their new status as "followers of Christ." And while they might never admit it, they think that that's what the Christian life is all about: doing good and avoiding evil. The main object in their life becomes the attainment of personal holiness through which they can be brought into true "fellowship with Him."

They believe that as they force their lives ever more into conformity with the standards of the law, they will draw ever closer to God, and that this highly personal and individual endeavor is what the Christian life is really all about. This is certainly what *Opus Dei* believes, as well as most of the Catholic monastic orders; this is certainly what the followers of "Latter Rain" and countless other Protestant charismatic groups believe as well. Sadly, however, in holding to this kind of belief system, such people reveal that they have no real grasp of what God's righteousness is all about, and that the fact of their salvation stands in jeopardy of being proven a lie -

"For they being ignorant of God's righteousness, and **GOING ABOUT TO ESTABLISH THEIR OWN RIGHTEOUSNESS**, [prove that they] have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God." (Romans 10:3)

CHRIST IS THE END OF THE LAW

Wow! That's heavy! - Paul says that such people are "**IGNORANT OF GOD'S RIGHTEOUSNESS**," that they are oblivious and incognizant of what the Christian life is all about -

"FOR CHRIST IS THE END OF THE LAW FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS TO EVERYONE THAT BELIEVETH." (Romans 10:4)

Listen to me very carefully here, brothers and sisters: The Christian life has **NOTHING** to do with our striving to keep the law and the ordinances of God. Indeed, the great Bible expositor J.N. Darby writes:

"To rest upon Christian ordinances [and force others to live by them as well] is **EXACTLY** to deny the precious and solemn truth which says ... that there is no longer any righteousness after the flesh ..."



And when one goes about "measuring" his brothers and

"FOR CHRIST IS THE END OF THE LAW"

sisters in Christ by some external standard he has in mind, he puts himself in great danger, for the Bible says -

"With what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again." (Matthew 7:2)

Are you able to bear the judgment you mete out to others? - because the Law says that "*the man which doeth those things [i.e., who judges others according to the Law] shall live by them [i.e., by all the 'jots and tittles' of the Law].*" (Romans 10:5) Are you able to do that? Are you able to live by the law?

But if you can't live by the law yourself, then you have no right to force that law down anyone else's throat. And lest you think that you are able to live by the law, the Bible says:

"... there is none that doeth good, no, not one." (Romans 3:12)

WHO HATH BEWITCHED YOU?

This is what those in the church in Galatia were doing - going about to "establish their own righteousness" by ordering their lives to conform to an external standard of what they thought "righteousness" was supposed to look like; but, again - as Paul explains - this has **NOTHING** to do with the Christian life. Paul writes:

"O foolish Galatians, who hath **BEWITCHED** you, that ye should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you?

"THIS ONLY WOULD I LEARN OF YOU, RECEIVED YE THE SPIRIT BY THE WORKS OF THE LAW, OR BY THE HEARING OF FAITH?"

"Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh?" (Galatians 3:1-3)

The truth is, when we accepted what Christ did for us on the cross, we had **HIS** righteousness imputed (or credited) to us as a "**FREE GIFT**" (cf. Romans 5:15, 16, 18) from God; that we are now "found in Him" (Phil. 3:9a) -

"... **NOT** having ... [our] own righteousness, **WHICH IS OF THE LAW**, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith ..." (Phil. 3:9b)

WE LIVE BY FAITH IN CHRIST'S RIGHTEOUSNESS

The fact is, when God found us, we were yet in sin; all our works of righteousness had not advanced us even so much as one degree toward God; but -

"God commendeth his love toward us, in that, **WHILE WE WERE YET SINNERS**, Christ died for us." (Romans 5:8)

And we continue on with Christ in **EXACTLY** the same manner (cf. Galatians 3:3). Darby explains:



O foolish Galatians, who hath BEWITCHED you? ... Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh?

"WE LIVE BY THE FAITH OF THE SON OF GOD, who has loved us, and given Himself for us ... If [our] righteousness were established on the principle of the law, Christ died in vain, since it would be by keeping the law ourselves that we should in our own persons acquire righteousness. What a loss, dreadful and irreparable, to lose such a Christ, as we, under grace, have known Him; such a righteousness; such a love; the Son of God devoted for us, and to us! It is indeed this which awakens the strong feelings of the apostle: *"O foolish Galatians ... who hath bewitched you?"*

Again I say, the law has **NOTHING** to do with the righteousness of God, and **EVERYTHING** to do with what the Bible calls the "flesh" (which is man minus the Spirit of God).

IS THE LAW THEN BAD?

Does this mean that the law is sin or that it is bad? No! - by no means. Paul says:

"What shall we say then? *Is* the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet.

"But sin, taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the law sin *was* dead. (Romans 7:7-8)

THE LAW WAS GIVEN TO REVEAL OUR OWN SINFUL NATURE TO US

Now listen to me here very carefully, brothers and sisters: When man disobeyed God in the Garden of Eden, and ate of the "Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil," the spirit in man died, and his ability to "behold and reflect" (*cf.* 2 Cor. 3:18) God in his spirit died with him.

You must always bear in mind that it's by "beholding and reflecting" the Lord in our spirit that we are made perfect. When we lose that ability, we become - *ipso facto* - sinful - **AND THE LAW WAS GIVEN SO THAT WE COULD UNDERSTAND JUST HOW SINFUL WE HAD BECOME**. Paul continues:

"Was then that [*i.e.* the law] which is good [*cf.* Romans 7:7] made death unto me? God forbid. But sin, **THAT IT MIGHT APPEAR SIN**, working death in me by that which is good; that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful." (Romans 7:13)

Paul goes on to explain:

"... the law entered, that the offence might abound." (Romans 5:20a)

In other words, God gave man the law so that it would become **ABUNDANTLY** clear how sinful he had become when his spirit died and he was cut off from the ability to "behold and reflect" God in his spirit (*cf.* 2 Cor. 3:18); indeed, Paul says that when man attempts to live by the law rather than by "beholding and reflecting" God in his spirit, he **INEVITABLY** finds himself in a situation where he is forced to cry out in desperation:

"... what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I." (Romans 7:15)

And this situation is true **EVEN AFTER ONE IS SAVED!** - it certainly was true of the Galatian brethren, and it was for this reason that Paul cried out:



"Was then that [*i.e.* the law] which is good [*cf.* Romans 7:7] made death unto me? God forbid. But sin, **THAT IT MIGHT APPEAR SIN, working death in me by that which is good; that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful."**

"Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh?" (Galatians 3:3)

LIVING BY GRACE

Are you walking in the spirit (which is to say, "in **GRACE**"), or are you walking in the flesh? Do you follow Christ by "beholding and reflecting" Him in your spirit, or do you attempt to follow Him by conforming your life to standards which you think will gain you favor from Him? The fact is, **THE FAVOR OF GOD CAN NEVER BE EARNED!** - neither insofar as being born again is concerned, nor insofar as continuing on with Him after you have been born again. **GRACE MEANS UNMERITED, UNRECOMPENSED FAVOR**; add even the slightest effort on the part of man, and grace is no more grace. (Rom. 11:6) C.I. Scofield writes:

"So absolutely is this true, that grace cannot even begin with us until the law has reduced us to speechless guilt [and impotence so far as its requirements are concerned]. (Rom. 3:19) So long as there is even the slightest question as to our **UTTER** guilt before God, our **UTTER** helplessness before Him, there is no place for grace ..."

Scofield continues:

"Into grace Paul (the apostle) had called the Galatians. What was his controversy with them? (Gal.1:6). Just this: they were removed from the grace of Christ to 'another gospel'. (Gal. 1:7) But there could not be another gospel. Change, modify the grace of Christ by the smallest degree, and you no longer have a gospel."

And, again, why is that? - because man cannot even in the tiniest degree fulfill the righteousness of God. Lay even the smallest requirement of the Law on man, and he will fail. As Christians, we **MUST** recognize **FROM THE HEART** that we are -

"... crucified with Christ: nevertheless we live; **YET NOT WE BUT CHRIST LIVETH IN US; AND THE LIFE WHICH WE NOW LIVE ... WE LIVE BY THE FAITH OF THE SON OF GOD**, who loved us, and gave himself for us." (Galatians 2:20)

Moreover, as we live "by the faith of the Son of God, who loved us, and gave himself for us" (that is to say, as we "behold and reflect God in our spirit) and as we abide in His life, we -

"... grow ... up unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ." (Eph. 4:13)

THE GROWTH IN LIFE

This is called the "growth in life" - i.e., Christ's life in us. Jesus said:

"I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.

"Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every *branch* that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.

"Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you.

"Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me.



"I am the vine, ye are the branches"

"I am the vine, ye *are* the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for **WITHOUT ME YE CAN DO NOTHING.**" (John 15:1-5)

A real Christian understands that if he is to grow up in Christ, the only way he can do so is in humble relationship with Him by means of the Holy Spirit who is now resident in his spirit. This is what the Bible means when it says -

"We all, with open face beholding as in a glass [a mirror] the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from [one degree of] glory to [another degree of] glory, *even* as by the Spirit of the Lord." (2 Cor. 3:18)

There is no effort required here; we need but to "*behold and reflect*" the Lord in our spirit, and as we do so, we will be changed by degrees into His likeness. The Bible calls this "*growing up in Him in all things.*" (Eph 4:15) Now that's important for us to grasp; we do not change overnight; we change by degrees - by the **GROWTH** of life - His life in us. The Bible says:

"The kingdom of God, is as if a man should cast seed into the ground;

"And should sleep, and rise night and day, and **THE SEED SHOULD SPRING UP AND GROW, HE KNOWETH NOT HOW.**

"For the earth bringeth forth fruit of herself; first the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear.

"But when the fruit is brought forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the harvest is come." (Mark 4:26-29)

ONE THING IS NEEDFUL

The kingdom of God - i.e., the rule of Christ in your individual life - is like a seed in you that is growing - "*and you know not how.*" (Mark 4:27) It is a mystery. But it has been planted in you, **AND IT WILL GROW!** - "*first the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear.*" (Mark 4:28) And it grows by the power of life that is in the seed, and not by any power that is in you. It is not dependent on anything you do; the Bible says that as you "*sleep, and rise night and day*" (Mark 4:27) the seed just keeps on growing - and as you "*behold and reflect*" (2 Cor. 3:18) that life, you "*are changed into the same image*" (2 Cor 3:18) and "*you know not how.*" (Mark 4:27).

Brothers and sisters, I tell you the truth: It is **IMPOSSIBLE** for this life to fail in you. **THIS IS WHAT CHRISTIANITY IS ALL ABOUT!** - this is the "gospel" (or "good news") of Salvation.

"Behold and reflect" the Lord (*cf.* 2 Cor. 3:18) - that's what we are called to do as Christians, and **EVERYTHING** will follow from that!

You object: That's too simple! Certainly there has to be some effort here. But that's not what the Bible says; that's not what the "good news" of the gospel is all about. The Bible says:

"Now it came to pass, as they [Christ and His disciples] went, that he [Christ] entered into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha received him into her house.

"And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at Jesus' feet, and heard his word.

"But Martha was cumbered about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me.



AND MARY HATH CHOSEN THAT GOOD PART

"And Jesus answered and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art careful and troubled about many things:

"BUT ONE THING IS NEEDFUL: AND MARY HATH CHOSEN THAT GOOD PART, which shall not be taken away from her." (Luke 10:38-41)

And what exactly was Mary doing? - **NOTHING!** She was simple sitting at the Master's feet and "beholding and reflecting" Him. This is what Jesus said was the **"NEEDFUL THING."** This is the **"NEEDFUL THING"** when you accept Christ into your heart, and this is the **"NEEDFUL THING"** as you *"grow up in Him in all things."* (Eph 4:15) Again, **THAT IS THE "GOOD NEWS" OF THE GOSPEL.**

KEEP YOUR EYES ON JESUS

Do you have some "besetting sin" in your life? - Behold and reflect Him, and by degrees it will fall away. Do you have problems of character in your life? - Behold and reflect Him in your spirit, and your character will by degrees and the growth in life be changed - and *"you know not how."* (Mark 4:27). There is no need to keep the law here; **CHRIST IS THE LAW**, and if you "behold and reflect Him" you will fulfill the Law - not all at once, but by degrees and by the growth in life. **KEEP YOUR EYES ON JESUS!** Remember what happened to Peter:

"And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: and when the evening was come, he was there alone.

"But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves: for the wind was contrary.

"And in the fourth watch of the night Jesus went unto them, walking on the sea.

"And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit; and they cried out for fear.

"But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer; it is I; be not afraid.

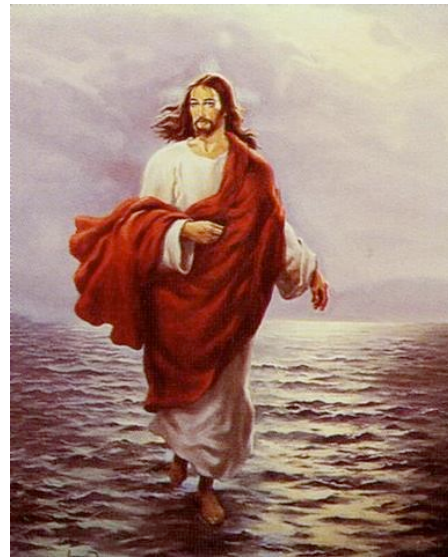
"And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water.

"And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Jesus.

"But when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid; and beginning to sink, he cried, saying, Lord, save me.

"And immediately Jesus stretched forth *his* hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?

"And when they were come into the ship, the wind ceased." (Mark 14:23-32)



And in the fourth watch of the night Jesus went unto them, walking on the sea.

WE HAVE AN ADVOCATE IN HEAVEN

Peter took his eyes off Jesus, and he began to sink. And this is what will happen to **ALL** of us when we take our eyes off the Lord: We will sink! But, again, there is **"GOOD NEWS"** when we sink. The Bible says:

"My little children ... if any man sin, we have an **ADVOCATE** with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous:

"And he is the propitiation [or reparation] for our sins ..." . (1 John 2:1-2a)

And the Bible goes on to say:

"If we confess our sins, **HE IS FAITHFUL AND JUST TO FORGIVE US OUR SINS, AND TO CLEANSE US FROM ALL UNRIGHTEOUSNESS.** (1 John 1:9)

That's **ALL** unrighteousness; He will cleanse us from **ALL** unrighteousness!

And when the Bible says that Christ is the "propitiation [or reparation] for our sins," it means not only our sins, but the sins of the **WHOLE** world:

"... and not for our [sins] only, but also for *the sins* of the **WHOLE** world. (1 John 2:1-2)

And if that's the case, then who are we to judge **ANYONE?** - even the worst sinner.

GRACE IS NOT LOOKING FOR MEN OF GOOD CHARACTER THAT IT CAN APPROVE

Listen to me, brothers and sisters: Grace is not looking for men of "good character" that it can approve, but it is looking for men who are "down and out" - men who are helpless, men who are addicted to sin, whom it can save through faith, then sanctify and glorify.

The Bible says: "*Where is there any room for us to boast? - boasting is EXCLUDED.*" (Romans 3:27)

In other words, if God has done **ALL** the work insofar as our salvation is concerned, and if He does **ALL** the work insofar as our walk with Him is concerned, then where is there any reason for self-righteousness on our part? Specifically, the Bible says:

"But now the righteousness of God **WITHOUT THE LAW** is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets;

"Even the righteousness of God *which is* by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference:

"For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;

"THEREFORE BY THE DEEDS OF THE LAW THERE SHALL NO FLESH BE JUSTIFIED IN HIS SIGHT: for by the law *is* the knowledge of sin.

"Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus:

"Whom God hath set forth *to be* a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God;

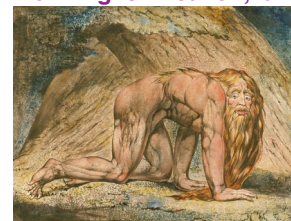
"To declare, *I say*, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus.

"WHERE IS BOASTING THEN? IT IS EXCLUDED. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith.



NEBUCHADNEZZAR REDUCED TO A BEAST BECAUSE OF PRIDE

The king spake, and said, Is not this great Babylon, that I have built for the house of the kingdom by the might of my power, and for the honour of my majesty? While this word *was* still in the king's mouth, there fell a voice from heaven, *saying*, O king Nebuchadnezzar, to thee it is spoken; The kingdom is departed from thee. And they shall drive thee from men, and thy dwelling *shall be* with the beasts of the field: they shall make thee to eat grass as oxen, and seven times shall pass over thee, until thou know that the most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever he will. And at the end of the days I Nebuchadnezzar lifted up mine eyes unto heaven, and mine understanding returned unto me, and I blessed the most High, and I praised and honoured him that liveth for ever, whose dominion *is* an everlasting dominion, and his kingdom *is* from generation to generation: Now I Nebuchadnezzar praise and extol and honour the King of heaven, all whose works *are* truth, and his ways judgment: and those that walk in pride he is able to abase. (Daniel chap. 4)



"Therefore we conclude that a **MAN IS JUSTIFIED BY FAITH WITHOUT THE DEEDS OF THE LAW.**" (Romans 3:20-28)

THERE IS NO ROOM FOR ANY OF US TO FEEL BETTER THAN ANYONE ELSE

Now, if there is no room for anyone to boast, then there is no room for anyone to feel better than his peers. Where is there, for example, any room for us to feel the way the Pharisees felt toward the publican in the Temple? -

"And he [i.e., Jesus] spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others:

"Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican.

"The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men *are*, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican.

"I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess." (Luke 18:9-12)

This kind of thinking is an **ABOMINATION** to God and an attack against the grace of God, and whereas Christ forgave the woman caught in the act of adultery, He never forgave the Pharisees for the sin of self-righteousness. Instead He said of them:

"Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers [i.e., poisonous snakes], **HOW CAN YE ESCAPE THE DAMNATION OF HELL?**" (Matthew 23:33)

DO NOT LET ANYONE ROB YOU OF YOUR FREEDOM IN CHRIST

Listen to me here, brothers and sisters in the Lord: Grace cannot continue with us if we in any way entertain the idea that, "*Having begun in grace, we can now be made perfect by the flesh.*" (Galatians 3:3) The fact is, even with the best of us,

"All our righteousnesses *are* as filthy rags." (Isaiah 64:6)

Those who think otherwise, and who attempt to bring us as Christians once again under bondage to the law — i.e., who judge their Christian brethren by the standards of the law; who carry about with them a kind of "holiness ruler" to measure their brothers and sisters -- prove that they are not living **IN** Christ (or by His life), but rather **OUTSIDE** of Him and by their own carnal strength. These are those about whom the Bible says are -

"... ignorant of God's righteousness, and who go about to establish their own righteousness ..." (Romans 10:3)

FALSE BRETHREN

These are those about whom Darby says are trying to **ROB** us of "*such a Christ, as we, **UNDER GRACE**, have known Him ... the Son of God devoted for us, and to us!*"

The Bible says that we must be on guard against such people -

"... **FALSE BRETHREN** unawares brought in, who came in privily to spy out our **LIBERTY** which we have in Christ Jesus, **THAT THEY MIGHT BRING US INTO BONDAGE.**" (Galatians 2:4)



"... FALSE BRETHREN unawares brought in, who came in privily to spy out our LIBERTY which we have in Christ Jesus, THAT THEY MIGHT BRING US INTO BONDAGE."

Now think about what the Bible is saying here! - it's saying that those who seek to impose their "standard of righteousness" on us are "**FALSE BRETHREN**;" and when we submit ourselves to their standards we are being **BEWITCHED** (Galatians 3:1). Now, that's a strong word! It means that we are being brought under the influence of witchcraft!

That's pretty heavy! - and, once again, it is precisely this that causes Paul to exclaim, "*This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith? Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh?*" (Galatians 3:1-3)

The Bible says that when we try to live by the standards of such people, we are doing so in order to please them and win their approval. But the Word of God says that we are **NOT** to conduct our lives -

"... as menpleasers; but as the servants of Christ, doing the will of God **FROM THE HEART**." (Eph. 6:6)

THE SPIRIT OF LIFE IN CHRIST JESUS

Again, the Bible says:

"**CHRIST IS THE END OF THE LAW** [i.e., all external standards] ... to every one that believeth." (Romans 10:4)

Christ is "the end of the law!" - that's what the Bible says. The Bible continues:

"For ... the **SPIRIT OF LIFE IN CHRIST JESUS** hath made me free from the law of sin and death" [that is to say, the necessity of making our lives conform to the standards of the law]. (Romans 8:2)

And the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus does so, not by nullifying the law, but by fulfilling the law "after the Spirit:"

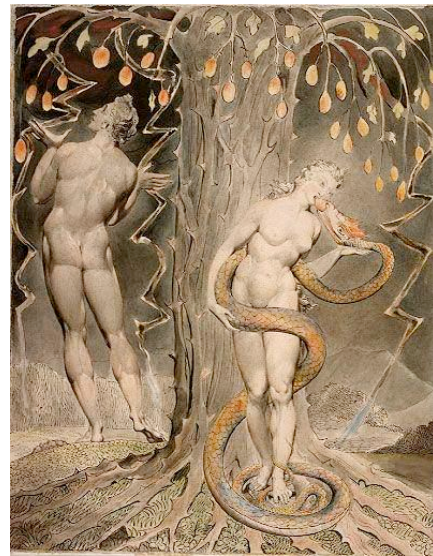
"That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh [i.e., the Law], but after the Spirit." (Romans 8:4)

And the Bible goes on to say:

"For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God." (Romans 8:14)

THE TREE OF LIFE, AND THE TREE OF THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOOD & EVIL

When we as Christians turn away from "beholding and reflecting" God in our spirit, and instead try to conform our lives to some external standard, and when we insist that others do the same, then we find ourselves back with Adam eating of the "Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil;" and when we do that, all we can do is minister death to ourselves and all those around us. This is precisely what the Bible calls living in the flesh. And the Bible warns us that -



"So then THEY THAT ARE IN THE FLESH CANNOT PLEASE GOD."

"... to be carnally [or fleshly] minded *is* death; but to be spiritually minded *is* life and peace.

"Because the carnal mind *is* enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can it be.

"So then **THEY THAT ARE IN THE FLESH CANNOT PLEASE GOD**." (Romans 8:6-8)

That is to say, if you conform your Christian life according to the law or any such similar external standard - no matter how holy such a standard might appear to be - you will break off your relationship with Christ. You must remember this: **"TO BE CARNALLY MINDED IS ENMITY AGAINST GOD"** (Romans 8:7); that is to say, when you live after the law and you force others to do the same, **YOU BECOME AN ENEMY OF GOD.**

If on the other hand, you allow yourself to be led by the Spirit of God in your spirit - that is to say, if you "behold and reflect Him" in your spirit - holiness will be imparted to you as a natural consequence of your walk with Him; these are the true sons and daughters of God. Again, the Bible says:

"For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.

"For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

"The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God:

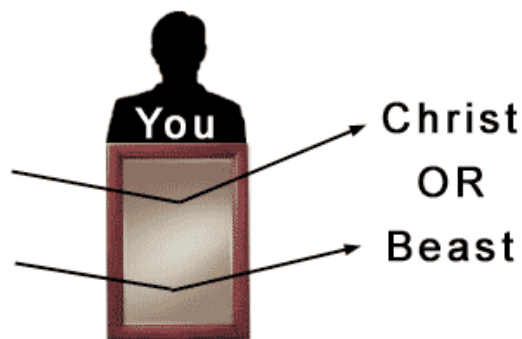
"And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with *him*, that we may be also glorified together." Romans 8:14-17)

And the Bible goes on to say:

"There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit." (Romans 8:1)

CHAPTER IV

THE IMAGE OF CHRIST & THE IMAGE OF THE BEAST



Who Do You Reflect?

"... the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the **IMAGE OF GOD**, should shine unto them." (2 Cor. 4:4)

"But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the **IMAGE OF CHRIST** from glory to glory, *even* as by the Spirit of the Lord." (2 Co 3:18)

"And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither the **IMAGE OF THE BEAST**, neither had received *his* mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years." (Rev. 20:4)

INTRODUCTION

The Bible speaks of two images:

- The image of Christ (who is the image of the Father).
- The image of the Beast.

And it further states that we all are being changed into the likeness of one of these two images. There is no middle ground here.

THE IMAGE OF CHRIST

In the first instance, the process that leads us in life to the image of Christ begins with (1) regeneration - specifically, when we are "born again," and our spirit is regenerated and becomes once more alive to the leading of the Holy Spirit; then (2), as we "behold and reflect" the Lord in our spirit, we are (3) changed into Christ's image (2 Cor. 3:18) [who is the image of the Father (2 Cor. 4:4)]; and (4) as we are changed gradually and in the "growth in life," we are brought into unity with our brothers and sisters in Christ; and this unity produces (5) the church; and the church produces (6) Christ's testimony in the earth. (John 17:21). And **ALL** this is accomplished through the operation of God's grace.

Moreover, in connection with this great truth, we must always bear in mind what **GRACE** is: **GRACE MEANS THE UNMERITED, UNRECOMPENSED FAVOR OF GOD**; **GRACE** cannot be earned; add even the slightest effort on the part of man, and grace is no more grace. (Rom. 11:6)

THIS IS A PROCESS OF LIFE THAT BEGINS DEEP WITHIN US - IN "OUR INNERMOST BEING" (i.e., OUR SPIRIT), AND THIS PROCESS IS PREDICATED SOLELY ON THE LOVE OF GOD:

"For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life." (John 3:16)

AND THIS PROCESS FLOWS OUTWARD FROM OUR SPIRIT TO THE WORLD, AND AS IT FLOWS OUTWARD TO THE WORLD, IT PRODUCES CHRIST'S TESTIMONY, BOTH IN HEAVEN AND IN EARTH. This is the "good pleasure" of the Father's will:

"That in the dispensation of the fulness of times **HE MIGHT GATHER TOGETHER IN ONE** all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; *even* in him." (Ephesians 3:10)



The "Beast" by
Albrecht Durer (1471 – 1528)

THE IMAGE OF THE BEAST

Contra wise, the image of the Beast is produced in **EXACTLY** the opposite fashion: it is the result of an action that operates from the outside inward, and it operates according to the Law. As C.I. Scofield writes:

- "Law is prohibiting and requiring." (Ex. 20:1, 17) It forces its oneness on others by compulsion and coercion. It's the kind of oneness that is produced by brutality and cruelty.
- "Law is a ministry of condemnation." (Rom. 3:19) It operates by the ministration of **GUILT**. (Ex. 20:18-19, and Phil. 3:4, 9) It motivates its adherents by guilt, not by love.

Law produces the kind of oneness that is achieved by an IBM or a General Motors; the kind of oneness that is produced out of a rule book and a set of regulations - of "**DOs**" and "**DON'Ts**." It's the kind of oneness produced by the "scribes and the Pharisees" of today's Christianity who trust in the Law and -

"... compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves." (Matt. 23:15)

This is the kind of oneness that produces the "image of the Beast."

THE QUESTION IS ...

The question is, what kind of oneness are you producing: the kind that is based on producing **GUILT** in your brothers and sisters in the Lord? The kind of oneness that is based on rules and regulations: get up at 5:00 a.m. in the morning; pray alone in your room until 7:00 a.m.; have breakfast precisely at 7:30 a.m.; etc., etc.? The kind of oneness found in monastic orders such as *Opus Dei*, and the Franciscans? The kind of oneness where your every waking hour is governed by this or that regulation? **IF THAT'S THE KIND OF ONENESS UPON WHICH YOU ARE RELYING, BE SURE THAT YOU WILL NOT PRODUCE THE CHURCH, BUT INSTEAD YOU WILL PRODUCE THE "IMAGE OF THE BEAST."**

The Bible says:

"FOR CHRIST IS THE END OF THE LAW FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS TO EVERYONE THAT BELIEVETH." (Romans 10:4)

And it goes on to say to **ALL** those who would set themselves up as **HOLINESS POLICEMAN** over "God's heritage" (the church):

"Why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou set at nought thy brother? for we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ.

"For it is written, As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God.

"So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God.

"LET US NOT THEREFORE JUDGE ONE ANOTHER ANY MORE ..." (Romans 14:10-13)



Holiness policemen

SPOTS IN YOUR FEASTS OF LOVE

The Bible says that those brothers and sisters who feel that they have been called as God's "**HOLINESS POLICEMEN**" (i.e., those who live by the law and force others to live by the law as well) -

"... are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds *they are* without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, **TWICE DEAD**, plucked up by the roots;

"Raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever." (Jude 1: 12-13)

Now think about what is being said here: People who set themselves up as God's "**HOLINESS POLICEMEN**" are -

- "Spots in your feasts of charity [love]" - without love; hateful; hurtful.
- "Clouds without water" - promising much, but delivering nothing.
- "Trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, **TWICE DEAD**, plucked up by the roots" - "**TWICE DEAD!**" Think about the horrible implications of that phrase!
- "Raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame" - raging against others, and as they do so, revealing their own shameful condition.

- "Wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever."

RAGING AGAINST YOUR BROTHERS AND SISTERS

And there is something more! - When you "**RAGE**" against your brothers and sisters in Christ, when **YOU** attack their character (as those who have "**RAGED**" against us in Antipas have done) you identify yourself with Satan. Why? - because he is called -

"... the accuser of the brethren." (Revelation 12:10)

And if that's so, whose side are **YOU** really on when you accuse your brothers and sisters in the Lord? Christ's or the devil's?

When you bring such accusations against them, you reveal the fact that you have no idea what **SALVATION** is all about; you have no real comprehension of what Christ did for you on the cross - which is a pretty serious matter insofar as your Christianity is concerned.

NOTE:

Now one must be very careful here; we are not talking about the necessity of confronting our brothers and sisters over matters that pertain to our Faith; indeed, we are told "... to be ready always to *give* an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you ..." (1 Peter 3:15); what we are talking about here are *ad homonym* attacks against the character of our brothers and sisters.

HOW QUICKLY AN ACCUSATION AGAINST A BROTHER AND/OR SISTER SPREADS

Darby says that those who accuse their brethren according to the Law -

"... **act only to do evil.**"

In other words, they intend to hurt and bring harm to their brothers and sisters in the Lord, and this is so regardless of their protestations to the contrary. And there is something more to be remarked on here: Those who involve themselves in this kind of wicked activity are more than cognizant of the fact that accusations are easily accepted by most people if they are repeated over and over again; that once such calumnies and defamations become widespread, they take on a life of their own - they spread like an "infectious **DISEASE**," and so much so that they are able to entrench themselves into the thinking of people without any real proof as to their veracity. As a result, they are subsequently able to withstand all the objections, criticisms and denials of those against whom these calumnies and defamations have been directed. The herd instinct in man then has its heyday, and even the most independent souls tend to follow the "great majority." But the so-called "great majority" will **NEVER** be on the side of God.



They that accuse their brethren act only to do evil.

It is not without reason that the Bible says:

"Wide *is* the gate, and broad *is* the way, that leadeth to destruction, and **MANY** there be which go in thereat:

"But strait *is* the gate, and narrow *is* the way, which leadeth unto life, and **FEW** there be that find it." (Matthew 7:13-14)

Dr. Ernst Simmel of the University of California calls the force that animates this **DISEASE** a -

"... **PATHOLOGY** of defamation and calumny."

In other words, when the target of such defamations and slander is subjected unrelentingly to vilification, and when the people who listen to what is being said do not **IMMEDIATELY** remove themselves from the influence of this slander, it will **INEVITABLY** take hold on them.

WHAT A POWERFUL THING OUR TONGUE IS

Brothers and sisters, I tell you the truth: we must guard our tongues carefully insofar as our brothers and sisters are concerned. Oh, what powerful things the words that flow from our tongues are. The Bible says that with the tongue we -

"... bless God, even the Father; and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God." (James 3:9)

And when our tongue is used to curse men - believer and unbeliever alike - it becomes an instrument of Hell; **IT SETS ON FIRE THE COURSE OF NATURE**. That's what the Bible says:

"The tongue *is* a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue among our members, that it defileth the whole body, and **SETTETH ON FIRE THE COURSE OF NATURE**; and it is set on fire of hell." (James 3:6)

Now, note carefully what the Bible is saying here:

- The tongue is a fire.
- It is a world of iniquity.
- It defiles us.
- It is set on fire by the forces of Hell.
- **IT SETS ON FIRE THE COURSE OF NATURE.**



The Bible continues:

"Behold, we put bits in the horses' mouths, that they may obey us; and we turn about their whole body.

"Behold also the ships, which though *they be* so great, and *are* driven of fierce winds, yet are they turned about with a very small helm, whithersoever the governor listeth.

"Even so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things. **BEHOLD HOW GREAT A MATTER A LITTLE FIRE KINDLETH!**

"For every kind of beasts, and of birds, and of serpents, and of things in the sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of mankind:

"But the tongue can no man tame; *it is* an unruly evil, **FULL OF DEADLY POISON.**" (James 3:3-5, 7-8)

"Behold, we put bits in the horses' mouths, that they may obey us; and we turn about their whole body ... But the tongue can no man tame; *it is* an unruly evil, **FULL OF DEADLY POISON."**

RAILING ACCUSATIONS

Listen, dear brothers and sisters in Christ: When you speak evil of people, especially on a **PERSONAL** level, when you bring "railing accusations" against them - even in the name of God - **BE SURE, IT IS NOT GOD THAT IS DIRECTING YOU**, even when you think you are right! And this is true not only of your brothers and sisters in Christ, but of your enemies as well: Consider the Archangel of God, Michael, when he disputed with the devil -

"... durst [dared] not bring against him a railing accusation ..." (Jude 1:9)

And one would think that if anyone deserved to be "accused," certainly it would have been the devil; and if anyone had the rank to do so, certainly it would have been Michael. But if Michael would not do so, then who are you to speak evil, even of your enemies? When you participate in such defamations, you "**CORRUPT YOURSELF**," speaking -

"... evil of those things which ... [you] know not: but what ... [you] know naturally, as brute beasts, in those things ... [you] corrupt ... [yourselves]." (Jude 1:10)

OUR CRITICISM OF OUR BROTHERS AND SISTERS DESTROYS THE UNITY OF THE CHURCH

Jesus said:

"... whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, *Raca*, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, **SHALL BE IN DANGER OF HELL FIRE**." (Matthew 5:22)

And why is that? - because when we criticize our brothers and sisters in Christ, when we "bring them down" because they fail to "measure up" to our standard of righteousness, we tear apart the Body of Christ, and that is something that the Lord will **NOT** tolerate!

Again, our testimony to the world is our **ONENESS**. Jesus prayed:

"THAT THEY ALL MAY BE ONE; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: **THAT THE WORLD MAY BELIEVE THAT THOU HAST SENT ME.** (John 17:21)

But when we tear each other apart by our incessant criticism, we destroy that oneness. The fact is, no matter how hard we strive, no matter how much we try to please others and demonstrate our worthiness to them, there will always be some whom we cannot please, and their ceaseless criticism will eventually wear us down and destroy us. This is what invariably happens when we are forced to "live up" to someone else's standard of what holiness is all about. I say again, it is **NOT** rules and regulations that produce unity in the church; as we have already indicated, this is how corporations achieve oneness; but this kind of oneness is of the flesh, and will only bring us misery and failure as anyone who has been subsumed in a "corporate culture" knows.

This, however, is **NOT** how the church produces oneness. The church's oneness is not based on rules and regulations, but on the life of Christ, and that life is not something that can be forced or coerced. The unity which Christ gives is ours as a natural by-product of our "abiding in Christ:" Again, as we abide in Christ, and as we -

"... behold ... the Lord [daily in our lives] as in a mirror ... [we] are changed into the same image [i.e., Christ's image] from **glory to glory**, even as by the Spirit of the Lord." (2 Cor. 3:18)

In other words, as we are changed into the likeness of the Lord, we reflect His glory, and His glory brings oneness among the brothers and sisters; then **THIS ONENESS PRODUCES THE CHURCH**, and **THE**



"... behold ... the Lord [daily in our lives] as in a mirror ... [we] are changed into the same image [i.e., Christ's image] from **GLORY TO GLORY**, even as by the Spirit of the Lord." (2 Cor. 3:18)

CHURCH PRODUCES CHRIST'S TESTIMONY IN THE EARTH and answers the Lord's prayer when He prayed -

"That they all may be ONE ... **THAT THE WORLD MAY BELIEVE THAT THOU HAST SENT ME.**" (John 17:21)

WHAT ARE YOU PRODUCING? - THE IMAGE OF THE BEAST OR THE IMAGE OF CHRIST

Brothers and sisters, you must ask yourselves what kind of an image is it toward which you are pressing? If you are building the church of God by means of rules and regulations, if you are judging your brothers and sisters by a holiness standard that you believe is the "measure of God," if you govern your life by "outward appearances," then be sure that what you are building has **NOTHING** to do with God. Indeed, you will find on **THAT DAY** that what you have produced is the **IMAGE OF THE BEAST**. Now you must be honest with yourselves here! You can't fool God on this point. Maybe everyone else, but surely not God. The Bible says:

"Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is." (I Cor. 3:13)

Again, the Bible says,

"FOR CHRIST IS THE END OF THE LAW FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS TO EVERYONE THAT BELIEVETH." (Romans 10:4)

If, on the other hand, you - in the course of your daily life - make it your business to simply "behold and reflect" the Lord in your spirit, then you will find that there will be shed abroad in your heart a love of the brethren - the kind of love that the Bible speaks of in I Cor. 13:4-7:

"Love suffereth long, *and* is kind; love envieth not; love vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up,

"Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil;

"Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth;

"Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things. (I Cor. 13:4-7) **Interestingly, the King James Version of the Bible uses the word "charity" rather than the world "love;" and this is because "Old English" differentiated between "passive love" and "active love." CHARITY MEANT "LOVE IN ACTION."**



Love suffereth long, *and* is kind; love envieth not; love vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up.

This is the kind of love that only the life of Christ can produce; there are no rules and regulations that can bring about such a result. And this love produces oneness, and that oneness produces the church, and the church produces the **IMAGE OF CHRIST**, which is His testimony in both the heavens and the earth.

NOTE

WHEN YOU SEE A BROTHER IN HARM'S WAY

Now this does not mean that when you see a brother in "harm's way" (so to speak) - and I have reference here to **REAL** harm, not imagined harm - you should leave the matter

alone. But when you go to such a brother (or sister) you must go with an attitude of humility and compassion, remembering all the while that with "*what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again*" (Matt. 7:2). God **HATES** a self-righteous person. Jesus -

"... spake this parable concerning certain [men] which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others [**And, oh, I tell you, I have known countless numbers of such people over the years (people I call "HOLINESS POLICEMEN") - many of whom visited our ranch and had to be told to leave; it is a sickness that seems to be inbred in American Christians - even many who have associated themselves with the ministry**]:

"Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican [a common person].

"The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men *are*, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican.

"I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess.

"And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as *his* eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner.

"I TELL YOU, THIS MAN (i.e., THE PUBLICAN) WENT DOWN TO HIS HOUSE JUSTIFIED RATHER THAN THE OTHER: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted." (Luke 18:9-14)



The publican and the Pharisee at the Temple.

Moreover, when we go to our brother, we must go believing the very best of him [*"love hopeth all things"* (I Cor. 13:7)]. In addition, we must go **PRIVATELY**; we must speak to no one else; we must **NEVER** talk behind our brother's back. (cf. Matthew 18:15) [*"Love suffereth long, and is **KIND**; love envieth not; love vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up, Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, **THINKETH NO EVIL** ..."* (I Cor. 13:4-5)]

In connection with this, we would do well to remember the **KINDNESS** of Joseph toward Mary when she "was found with child." The Bible says:

"Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together [sexually], she was found with child of the Holy Ghost.

"Then Joseph her husband, being a **JUST MAN**, and not willing to make her a public example, was minded to put her away **PRIVATELY**." (Matthew 1:18-19)

Oh, I tell you the truth, what a wonderful thing to be called a "**JUST MAN**" by God! And why was Joseph called "**JUST**?" - because he had compassion on Mary, even though he believed she had been unfaithful to him sexually. He did not want to make her a "public example" - as so many of our brothers in Christ like to do when - as they see it - they "confront evil in the church." These are those people who would have felt quite at home with Torquemada during the Spanish Inquisition.

So I say to you, when you go to your brother or sister in Christ, you must go with the mind that was in Joseph; you must **NEVER** go as God's "**HOLINESS POLICEMAN**" like the scribes and Pharisees who brought unto Jesus -

"... a woman taken in adultery; and when they had set her in the midst, "They say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act.

"Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou?

"This they said, tempting him, that they might have to **ACCUSE** him. But Jesus stooped down, and with *his* finger wrote on the ground, as *though he heard them not*.

"So when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.

"And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground.

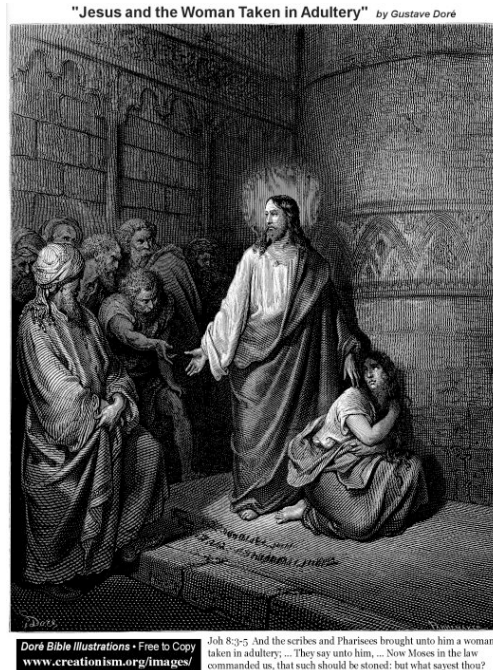
"And they which heard *it*, being convicted by *their own* conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, *even* unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.

"When Jesus had lifted up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those thine **ACCUSERS**? hath no man condemned thee?

"She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, **NEITHER DO I CONDEMNN THEE**: go, and sin no more." (John 8:3-10)

Remember! -

"God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. (John 3:17)



The woman taken in adultery by Doré

CHAPTER V

THE CHURCH

PART 1: THE PERFECT MAN

INTRODUCTION

Now it is not without reason that we have taken so much time to dwell on the matters of (1) the human spirit, (2) regeneration, (3) grace, and (4) the growth in life: because what all this leads to is our **ONENESS**; and our oneness produces the **CHURCH**; and **THE CHURCH PRODUCES CHRIST'S TESTIMONY IN THE EARTH**:

"That they all may be ONE ... **THAT THE WORLD MAY BELIEVE THAT THOU HAST SENT ME.**" (John 17:21)

That is God's testimony on the earth: our **ONENESS** which is manifested as a **PRACTICAL** matter in the **CHURCH**.

It's essential that we understand the progression here: it is a progression in **LIFE**, and not one of organizational skill. The church is not an organization, it is a living breathing organism - **IT IS THE "BODY OF CHRIST"** (Ephesians 3:23), and, once again, the development which leads to this culmination in life is initiated when we begin to "**BEHOLD AND REFLECT**" Christ in our spirit.

BEHOLDING AND REFLECTING

So let's examine this process in depth, because unless we fully understand these matters, we may find that what we produce as the church is **NOT** the church at all, but something more akin to General Motors or IBM - a successful corporation having **NOTHING** to do with the "**BODY OF CHRIST**"; a **DEAD MACHINE** rather than a **LIVING ORGANISM**.

Let's review: the Bible says that when our spirit is regenerated by the indwelling of the Holy Spirit, we are enabled - through the growth in life - to be changed into Christ's likeness. And how is that accomplished? - it is accomplished as we "**BEHOLD AND REFLECT**" Christ in our spirit (2 Cor. 3:18^a); and as we do so, we are -

"... changed into His image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord." (2 Cor. 3:18^b)
[The term "from **glory to glory**" means to be changed progressively over time from one stage of glory to the next and so on and on and on; this is the "growth in life."]

I say again, it's "beholding and reflecting" the Lord in our spirits that changes or **SANCTIFIES** us. This is what true godliness is all about. This is why the apostle Paul could cry out in Ephesians chapter three:

"Blessed *be* the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with **ALL** spiritual blessings in heavenly *places* in Christ:

"According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that **WE SHOULD BE HOLY AND WITHOUT BLAME BEFORE HIM IN LOVE:**

"Having predestinated us unto the **ADOPTION** of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will,

"To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath **MADE US ACCEPTED IN THE BELOVED.**

"In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, **ACCORDING TO THE RICHES OF HIS GRACE.**" (Ephesians 3:3-7)



That they all may be ONE ... **THAT THE WORLD MAY BELIEVE THAT THOU HAST SENT ME**

The Bible says here that (1) we have been blessed with **ALL** spiritual blessings in Christ; that (2) **WE ARE HOLY AND WITHOUT BLAME BEFORE HIM IN LOVE**; (3) that we have been **ADOPTED** by God as His children; (4) that we have been **MADE ACCEPTED IN THE BELOVED**; and (5) that **ALL** this was accomplished through the **RICHES OF HIS GRACE**.

GRACE: UNMERITED FAVOR

Now, once again, we must pause and remind ourselves what **GRACE** is: **GRACE** cannot be earned! **GRACE MEANS THE UNMERITED, UNRECOMPENSED FAVOR OF GOD**; add even the slightest effort on the part of man, and grace is no more grace. (Rom. 11:6)

So now, as this great truth begins - through the ministry of the Holy Spirit in our spirit - to sink into our consciousness, and as we concomitantly give up trying to be holy by our own efforts and instead simply "**BEHOLD AND REFLECT**" Christ in our spirit, Christ -

- "**ABOUNDS**" to us in "all wisdom and prudence," and
- begins to make "known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he hath purposed in himself."

That's what the Bible says:

"Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence;

"Having made known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he hath purposed in himself: (Ephesians 3:8-9)

THE GOOD PLEASURE WHICH HE PURPOSED IN HIMSELF

And what exactly is the "good pleasure which He purposed in Himself?" -

"That in the dispensation of the fulness of times **HE MIGHT GATHER TOGETHER IN ONE** all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; *even* in him." (Ephesians 3:10)

Concerning all this, the great apostle prays -

"That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him:
"The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his **INHERITANCE IN THE SAINTS**,
"And what *is* the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power,
"Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set *him* at his own right hand in the heavenly *places*,
"Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come:
"And hath put all *things* under his feet, and gave him *to be* the head over all *things* to the church,
"Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all." (Ephesians 3:17-23)

Now pause and think what the apostle is praying here; he is praying -

- That the Father of glory, may give unto you the **SPIRIT OF WISDOM AND REVELATION IN THE KNOWLEDGE OF HIM**;
- That the **EYES OF YOUR UNDERSTANDING MAY BE OPENED**;
- That ye may know what is the **HOPE OF HIS CALLING**;
- That ye may know what the **RICHERS OF THE GLORY** of his inheritance in the saints;
- And that ye may know what *is* the **EXCEEDING GREATNESS OF HIS POWER** to us-ward who believe which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set *him* at his own right hand in the heavenly *places*, far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come.



That ye may know what the **RICHERS OF THE GLORY** of his inheritance in the saints

Now pay attention particularly to verse 18: Where are all these riches and wisdom to be found? - "**IN THE SAINTS!**" (verse 18) [that is to say, in the church (verse 22)] - "which is His body, the fulness of Him that filleth all in all" (verse 23). That's the **PURPOSE** of God in Christ Jesus:

"That in the dispensation of the fulness of times **HE MIGHT GATHER TOGETHER IN ONE** all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; *even* in him." (Ephesians 3:10)

COMMUNITY WITH GOD & COMMUNITY WITH "ALL SAINTS"

"Gather together in one;" "fellowship;" "with all saints" - what is all this speaking about? - "community!" - "community" with God, and "community" with man! Where? - in the church! In other words, as we are changed into the likeness of the Lord, we reflect His glory, and His glory brings oneness among the brothers and sisters; then **THIS ONENESS PRODUCES THE CHURCH**, and **THE CHURCH PRODUCES CHRIST'S TESTIMONY IN THE EARTH**:

"That they all may be **ONE** ... **THAT THE WORLD MAY BELIEVE THAT THOU HAST SENT ME.**" (John 17:21) ?

Our oneness produces the church. Indeed, our oneness **IS** the church, and the church **IS** God's testimony in the earth. **IT IS THIS ONENESS THAT GOD INTENDS TO JUXTAPOSE AGAINST THE ONENESS THAT THE FALSE OR APOSTATE CHURCH ENGENDERS, AND IN DOING SO DRAW MEN AND WOMEN TO HIMSELF.**

OUR ONENESS, WHICH IS THE CHURCH, MUST BE DEMONSTRATED PRACTICALLY

Now in connection with all this, we should understand that the Bible speaks of the church in two ways: (1) the church universal, and (2) the church local. For example, in I Cor. 12:28 the Bible says:

"And God hath set some in the church (singular), first apostles, secondly, prophets, thirdly, teachers ..." (I Cor. 12:28)

However, in the Revelation the Bible says,

"I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last: and, What thou seest, write in a book, and send it unto the seven churches (plural) which are in Asia; unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and unto Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea." (Rev. 1:11)



"... the whole church assembled together ..."

And again, in I Cor. 14:23 we read,

"... the whole church assembled together ..." (I Cor. 14:23)

In the first instance (I Cor. 12:28), the Bible is referencing the church universal, and in the second instance (Revelation 1:11 and I Corinthians 14:23), the Bible is referencing the church local.

In speaking of the church universal, the Bible is referencing all those believers of every race, ethnicity, nationality, culture, locality, language, and civilization - and even those who have died and are now with the Lord.

When speaking of the church local, the Bible is referencing those believers who "assemble together" because they are physically able to do so - that is to say, they live in proximity with one another as in the two instances referenced above in Rev. 1:11 and I Cor. 14:23. **IT IS HERE - IN THE LOCAL CHURCH - THAT WE MUST BE BUILT UP TOGETHER IN ONENESS WITH OTHER SAINTS.**

IT'S IN THE LOCAL CHURCH THAT THE CHURCH MAKES CONTACT WITH THE WORLD

It is here - in the local church - that the "work of building" takes place. (I Pet. 2:5) **THIS IS WHERE THE CHURCH MAKES CONTACT WITH THE WORLD AND THE UNSAVED.** Indeed, it probably wouldn't be too much to say, that it's at the local level of the church's operation that the main struggle between it and the world for the souls of men and women takes place. It is here **AT THE LOCAL LEVEL** - where we live - that our **ONENESS** must be demonstrated to the world.

Finally, it is here - in the local church - **THAT THE ONENESS THAT CHRIST GIVES CAN BE JUXTAPOSED AGAINST THE KIND OF ONENESS THAT THE APOSTATE CHURCH ENGENDERS IN THE SERVICE OF THE KINGDOM OF THIS WORLD. IT'S HERE THAT PEOPLE CAN DISCERN THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE TWO; IT IS THEN THAT THE POOR WILL BE ABLE TO DISTINGUISH BETWEEN THE CHURCH (SO-CALLED) THAT IS CON-**

NECTED TO THE AMERICAN NEW WORLD ORDER SYSTEM AND THE CHURCH OF JESUS CHRIST THAT IS ASSOCIATED IN LIFE WITH THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN! AND IT IS HERE THAT GOD WILL BE GLORIFIED BECAUSE WE ARE UNITED TOGETHER NOT ON THE BASIS OF COMPULSION, BUT ON LOVE.

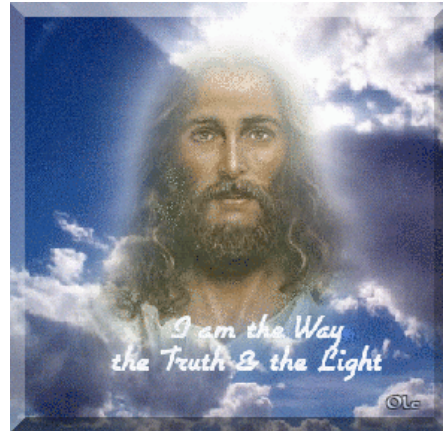
WE CANNOT GLORIFY CHRIST WITHOUT BEING BUILT-UP WITH OTHER SAINTS

But if we do not assemble together with other saints on a regular and meaningful basis, there is **NO** way that we can be a testimony for Christ. Remember here, that's how the world knows that Christ was sent by the Father: By our **ONENESS** - by our PRACTICAL, DAY-BY-DAY ONENESS with other saints. (John 17:21)

Now this doesn't mean that we can in any way compromise the truth as we seek others who are willing to stand with us insofar as that truth is concerned. If we give up on truth, we give up on Christ; and without Christ, there is no church. Jesus said:

"I am the way the TRUTH and the life; no man cometh unto the Father, but by me." (John 14:6)

That means that we cannot give up on what we've seen regarding the "end of the age." But we still must have the church. Therefore, we must diligently seek out others who see what we see and make every effort to establish a church-life with them - to get "built-up" with them as "living stones." Listen to me here, dear brothers and sisters in the Lord: there is simply no way that we can glorify Christ and be "perfected in Him" outside of being one with other saints where we live. The "PERFECT MAN" in the New Testament is that person **WHO HAS BEEN "FITTED" AS A "LIVING STONE" (I Pet. 2:5) INTO THE BUILDING OF CHRIST** (Eph: 2:21) which is the church; the Bible says:



"Ye also, as lively (living) stones, are **BUILT UP** a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ." (1 Pet. 2:5)

THE PERFECT MAN

It is in the church that we become "*no more children, tossed to and fro*" (Eph 4:14), but grow up in Christ "*unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ*" (Eph. 4:13) "*From whom the whole body fitly joined together and COMPACTED by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love*" (Eph. 4:16).

NOTE THE PERFECT MAN

Again, in speaking of the "PERFECT MAN," the New Testament is not talking about personal holiness here, for you must remember, whatever personal holiness we have is derived strictly and only from Christ's work on the cross. It is a holiness that is imparted to us apart from anything we have done. The Bible says: "... *all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags* ..." (Is. 64:6). When we measure one another by "our righteousnesses" we declare that we know **NOTHING** about God; and that the kind of Christianity that we are engaged in is a form of "Grail Christianity." [Please see our article, "[The Grail Quest: The Search for Inner Perfection](#)."]

Now look carefully here: Growing up in Christ "*unto a PERFECT MAN, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ*" (Eph. 4:13) is tied to being COMPACTED together with other saints. (Eph. 4:16) You cannot have one without the other. And where are we COMPACTED together? - in the church; in the LOCAL church. But how can that be accomplished if you have no one with whom you can "assemble together?"

- We urge you to see our follow-up book on this subject: "What to Do as the End Approaches" and "Looking Forward by Looking Backward."

PART 2: THE CHURCH AS THE "COMMUNITY OF GOD"

THE CHURCH: GOD'S ANSWER FOR MAN'S LONGING FOR COMMUNITY; FOR HIS DESIRE "TO BELONG"

The Bible says:

"... It is not good that ... man should be alone ..." (Gen. 2:18)

He needs other human beings with whom he can interact; with whom he can mutually relate; with whom he can share his joys and sorrows, his victories and defeats, his successes and failures. Yes! - even failures. Indeed, one of the most poignant passages of Scripture relates to the need for companionship when one is suffering failure:

"... woe to him that is alone when he falleth; for he hath not another to help him up." (Eccl. 4:10)

And this sad lamentation is repeated throughout the Scriptures (Ex. 18:18, Num. 11:14, Eccl. 4:11, etc.).



"... It is not good that ... man should be alone ..."

Even God cannot abide loneliness - and it was this more than all the other horrors of the crucifixion, that tore at Christ's heart when He was abandoned by the Father as He hung on the cross:

"And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, *Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani?* that is to say, **My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?**" (Matt. 27:46)

LONLINESS IS AN ABHORRENT THING

Loneliness is surely an abhorrent thing. Indeed, one of the most invidious things about sin is that sin destroys relationships; and in doing so, it creates separation and isolation. After all, what is it about adultery that makes it so abominable? - surely it is the fact that it tears at the fabric of trust which holds a husband and a wife together in love! And is it not the same with idolatry? Does not idolatry strike at the very heart of the relationship that God desires with man? - certainly it does! And what about honoring your parents? - when one fails to do so, does it not break the relationship between parents and children? - of course it does! And then there's stealing, and covetousness and all the rest. Do not all these things - in the end - destroy relationships and break the bonds of trust that hold a community together, creating in their wake suspicion, cynicism, hatred, etc. - all the things which are the progenitors (i.e., the origin and source) of isolation and division? Surely they do!

Man needs "community" - and sin destroys it. Sin destroys man's relationship with God, and it destroys his relationship with other men. Without "community" - i.e., "community" with man and "community" with God - man ceases to be man; he loses his humanity. And it is for this reason that God gave us the church -

"That they all may be one (i.e., that they may have "community" with each other); as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us (i.e., that they may have "community" with God): that the world may believe that thou hast sent me." (John 17:21)

"That the world may believe that thou hast sent me." This is very important! How does the world know that God sent Christ into the world? - because believers have (1) "community" with each other, and (2) "community" with God! That's our testimony: Community! -

"And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one: "I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me (John 17:22-23)

And how is this "community" demonstrated? - through the church!



THE CHURCH IS THIS

NOT THIS

WHAT CHRISTIAN "COMMUNITY" IS ALL ABOUT

Now it's important in this connection to understand what the word "community" means. The word "community" is taken from the word "commune," which means to "communicate intimately with," or to "be intimate with." The word implies "closeness," "affection," "familiarity," "friendship" - and is the word from which we derive the word "communal," meaning "belonging to," as, for example, in the way it is used in Mark 9:41:

"For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward."

We belong to Christ, and it's for this reason that those who help us help Christ; and in doing so, Christ incurs an obligation to them (i.e., He becomes indebted to them) - hence, His obligation to reward (or pay) them.

Now be clear what's happening here. It's not Christ *per se* who was helped; it was those who belong to Christ (i.e., Christians - us) who were helped; but because we belong to Christ, the debts we incur as a result of our testimony are *ipso facto* incurred by Christ. Our debts become Christ's debts. He is obligated to pay them. This is the sense that "belonging to" implied in the Ancient World. Therefore, when one "belonged to" a community, his debts too "belonged to" that community; his obligations became the community's obligations. Thus, "community" in the Ancient World meant "to hold things in common" in the sense that we today attach to the word "communal" or "commune."



Members of the Rubba House in Durham, N.C., gather for meals and morning and evening prayer.
(Globe / Davis Turner)

In the Ancient World, the church was the "community of God;" it was the "commune" of God.

In the Ancient World, the church was the "community of God;" it was the "commune" of God. Hence, unlike what most modern-day Christians have been taught, the early "communal" organization of the church in Jerusalem was no accident or fluke. It flowed naturally and in a very uncontrived manner out of the early saints' understanding of what "community" meant - which is to say, "communalism." Consequently, in speaking of the early church, the Bible says:

"And all that believed were together, and had all things common ..." (Acts 2:44)

"And the multitude of them that believed were of one heart and of one soul: neither said any of them that ought of the things which he possessed was his own; but they had all things common." (Acts 4:32)

Pretty scary, isn't it? It certainly strikes at our modern, "free enterprise" understanding of the church-life - but to the extent that this frightens those who are reading this material, it's to that extent that they have missed the mark of what the real church-life is all about -

"The unreserved sharing of one another in a community of believers who possess the life of Christ."

I say again, the church-life is the unrestricted sharing of one another in a community of believers dedicated to the Lord Jesus Christ. And believe me when I tell you that there exists in the heart of men - all men - a yearning for this kind of "community" and the friendships and commitment that flow out from it. It's exerts an enchanting pull on everyone - believer and unbeliever alike. But it is only through the church-life - the **REAL** church-life (not the dead, institutional kind of church-life that is extant in America today - that this yearning can ever be fulfilled.

THIS IS NOT TO SAY THAT THE CHURCH IS A SOCIALIST INSTITUTION

Of course, this is not to say that members of a church are **REQUIRED** to "sell all they have" and "have all things in common." There is no such requirement laid upon the saints of God. What the disciples did in the church in Jerusalem, they did of a willing spirit and because of the exigencies of the time. This is made plain in the account of Ananias and Sapphira:

"But a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession,

"And kept back part of the price, his wife also being privy to it, and brought a certain part, and laid it, at the apostles' feet.

"But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land?

"Whiles it remained, was it not thine own? and after it was sold, was it not in thine own power? why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God.
(Acts 5:1-4)



The death of Ananias

What's important to note here is that the Scriptures recognized the prior claim of Ananias and Sapphira on their property and money. It was theirs. They could dispose of it as they wished. The church as such had no claim on it; this passage of Scripture does not validate socialism as a Marxist ideology. While the Bible is certainly not a capitalist document, as some preachers of the "Green Gospel" and the Religious Right (and especially the "fat cats" of the Republican Party) suppose, it plainly recognizes the "right" of private property. What Ananias and Sapphira did that was wrong was not refusing to join in what appeared to be a "general rush" of some to sell their property and give it to the church, but was, instead, pretending to join that "rush" and lying to the church about it. Lying to the church was the sin they committed.

And it occurred in this way: some of the disciples had very evidently been led of the Lord to sell their property and give it to the church; for example, "Joses, who by the apostles was surnamed Barnabas, (which is, being interpreted, The son of consolation,) a Levite, and of the country of Cyprus ..." (Acts 4:36) And, of course, there were many more who had likewise been led of the Lord out of a willing heart to do so (Acts 4:34) - evidently to meet the very great need of the church at the time, which had, in a matter of days, expanded from a few hundred souls to thousands and thousands, many of whom were desperately poor. (Acts chapters 2-5) That they did so willingly is made apparent by the context. Obviously, Ananias and Sapphira were not so led, but they saw what appeared to them to be the general thanksgiving of the saints in connection with the generosity of those who had given so much, and they wanted to be "lifted up" (as they saw it) in like manner; hence their intrigue. (Acts 5:1-2) They wanted the "approval" (again, as they saw it) of the congregation minus the sacrifice that was necessary to obtain that "approval" (i.e., appreciation, thankfulness). They wanted recognition! - and an undeserved recognition at that. This was the problem! This was the sin!

- We urge you to see our articles, "[Capitalism and Christianity](#)" and "[The Marxist Paradigm](#)."

PART 3: THE CHURCH AS THE FAMILY OF GOD

THE CHURCH IS A FAMILY

For those on the left who claim to see an embryonic form of socialism (or even communism) in these passages of Scripture, or for those on the right who believe that the actions of these individuals resulted merely from an "over-enthusiasm of the moment" (or who would really rather see these passages excised altogether from the Scripture), they are missing the point altogether. The church is not a socialist institution; neither is it a capitalist institution. **IT IS A FAMILY!** Institutions - whether of the right or of the left - derive their validity from power, i.e., force or the ability to coerce or compel others. Not so with a family. Coercion has no part in a family. Families derive their validity from love. What motivates the action of family members is love, not coercion. We repeat, the church is a family; it's not an institution! We are the Lord's "brothers" and "sisters," and "brothers" and "sisters" one of another. The Bible says,



Families derive their validity from love

"While he (i.e., Jesus) yet talked to the people, behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him.

"Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee.

"But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?

"And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren!

"For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother. (Matt. 12:46-50)

Together, we all share the same life - Christ's life. Jesus said:

"Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

"I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.

"If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned." (John 15:4-6)

By abiding in Christ, we share Christ's life, and because we share Christ's life, we become Christ's family. This is why Jesus said:

"If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.
(John 15:7)

WE ARE THE FATHER'S CHILDREN

We are members of his family, and this is why we can ask the Father what we will - because we ask as His children:

"... what man (i.e., father) is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone?
"Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent?
"If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them (i.e., his children) that ask him?" (Matt. 7:9-11)

We are the Father's children because we are the brothers and sisters of Christ - we share Christ's life.

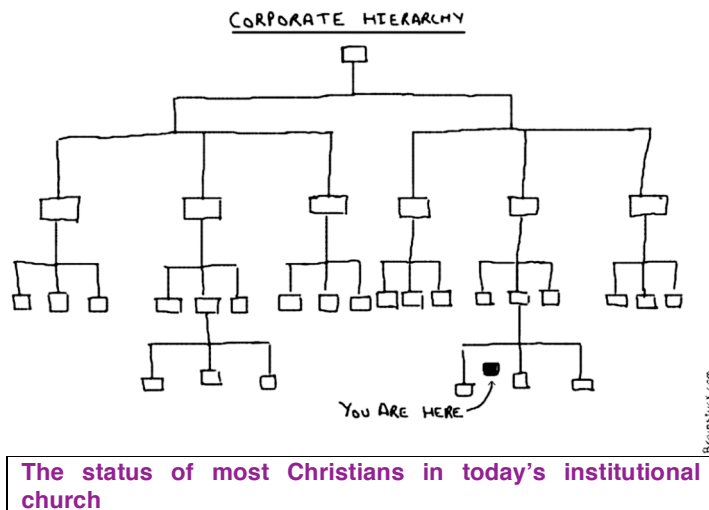
This brings us back to the matter of communalism. The communalism of the church is an attitude, it's not a "necessary way of doing things." Was the communalism of the early church a normal thing? Probably not. Was "living together" and "having all things in common" what everybody really wanted? Probably not. Living together and sharing things in common are not normal things - nor should they necessarily be. Nevertheless, the church should have a communal spirit (*Geist*). A willingness with regard to communalism. An attitude of communalism. Why? - because families are communal - not only in the Ancient World, but today.

It was in answer to their concept of communalism that those in the church in Jerusalem saw the need of their brothers and sisters in the Lord, and love motivated them to sell all that they had in order to help. What love! What compassion! This giving was not forced upon them by an unfeeling bureaucracy and the force of institutional power, but instead flowed out of love. It had nothing to do with an institution's compulsion, and everything to do with the love of one family member for another. This is what "belonging to" is all about. It's a family "belonging to," not an institutional "belonging to." This is what Christ meant when He said,

"For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward." (Mark 9:41)

INSTITUTIONAL "BELONGING TO" Vs. FAMILY "BELONGING TO"

Today, in church after church in America, we have institutional "belonging to," but we don't have family "belonging to."



When today's church helps its members, it helps its members as an institution, not as a family. Too often, the help that is extended is the unsympathetic, compassionless help that characterizes the welfare office rather than that of a family - and this is especially so in those churches which have adopted the elite establishment's attitude towards the poor - i.e., that people are poor because they are lazy.

Where is there any testimony to the Lord here? Why would unbelievers be drawn to the Lord as the result of this kind of a testimony? No, it's better for them to go to the institutions of the state rather than to the church. This is not the kind of love, the kind of "belonging to" that will draw unbelievers to Christ the way they were drawn to Christ in the early years of the church. Yes! - better that they go to the county welfare office than to the church - at least there is probably more money there, the files that are kept are probably more accurate, and the help comes on a more regular and non-judgmental basis than it does at the church. But if that's the case, we shouldn't wonder why unbelievers aren't drawn to Christ. Why? - because Christ's testimony lies in our oneness, a oneness that flows out of love. That's what the Bible says:

"And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one:
"I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me. (John 17:22-23)

If we don't have oneness, then we don't have a testimony. Our testimony lies in the fact of our oneness. And it's not the oneness that an institution generates or the oneness that ecumenicism creates, but the oneness that flows out of a shared life - the life of Christ - and that results out of the kind of oneness that a family alone - i.e., the family of God - is capable of producing.

PART 4: ABIDING IN THE TRUTH

REAL CHURCH UNITY HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH COMPROMISING THE WORD OF GOD

Again I say, the unity which the Bible has in mind here is not something for which we - as individual Christians - must strive; **nor is it - and this is important - something for which we must compromise the Word of God.** To say so is to imply that we can have either unity OR "sound doctrine," but not both.

That, however, is an absurdity - an absurdity which, nonetheless, many evangelicals seem willing to embrace. It's as preposterous as saying that God can be either loving OR righteous, but not both. Unity - real unity, **the unity which Christ gives - has nothing to do with compromising the Word of God.** To think so is to exhibit a superficiality and shallowness of faith that is shocking. The unity which Christ gives is ours as a natural by-product of our "abiding in Christ:" As we abide in Christ, and as we -

"... behold ... the Lord as in a mirror ... [we] are changed into the same image [i.e., Christ's image] from **glory to glory**, even as by the Spirit of the Lord." (2 Cor. 3:18)

YOU CANNOT HAVE THE CHURCH WITHOUT HAVING THE TRUTH

The Bible says that the church is -

"... the **PILLAR** and **GROUND** of the **TRUTH**" (1 Tim. 3:15)

If, then, a church no longer "abides in that truth" (I John 2:27) can it really be called a church? The answer is obviously, No! Just because people who call themselves Christian meet together does not in itself mean that they meet as the church. The Mormons, the Moonies, the Jehovah Witnesses and countless other similar sects call themselves Christian - but does that mean that when they



**CHURCH:
pillar and
ground of
truth**

meet together, they meet as (or constitute) the church? - No, of course not! Why? - because they do not meet on the "ground of truth," despite the fact that they call themselves Christian. The Bible says:

"... God is a Spirit: and they that worship him **MUST** worship him in spirit and in **TRUTH**. (John 4:24)

IF THE TRUTH WE PREACH DOES NOT PRODUCE THE CHURCH, IT IS NOTHING

Moreover, the Bible says,

"Whosoever ... abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, **HATH NOT GOD** ..." (2 John 1:9)

And it goes on to say,

"He that hath my commandments [i.e., my word (which is to say, the truth)] , and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him.

"... if a man love me, he will keep my words (i.e., he will abide in the truth): and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him. (John 14:21, 23)

If we are abiding in the truth, and - consequently - we are loving and being loved by the Father and this love is being manifested to our brothers and sisters in Christ, than all this will have an outcome: the church. Love is the outcome of "sound doctrine," (that's what John 14:23 says!) and that love then produces the church. If the church is not ultimately produced, than we should have concern as to what we are doing. If - in proclaiming what we perceive to be the truth - the truth we are proclaiming does not produce the church, but just empty words, than we're doing something wrong! The Bible says:

"... My word ... shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it. (Is. 55:11)

Again I say, if our "contending" for the faith does not produce the church, then all our contending is vain. There is no substance to it - and again, when we speak of the church, we're not speaking about an "institutional manifestation" of the church, but a "communal manifestation" of the church - the church as God's family. The Mormons, the Moonies, etc. produce a oneness from their false doctrine, but it's an institutional oneness, not a family oneness.

God's Word produces an "abiding in Christ," which then produces love, which then produces the church. That's what Isaiah 55:11 (when taken together with John 4:24; John 14:21, 23; and 2 John 1:9) plainly indicates.

PART 5: THE GLORIOUS CHURCH

GOD'S PURPOSE IN SAVING US

God's purpose, then, in saving us (Mat. 20:28) is to "*build us up (as) a spiritual house,*" and by doing so to establish the church - Christ's body "*... which is the fullness of Him that filleth all in all.*" (Eph. 1:23) The church, then, is the vehicle through which God has chosen to "make known" His glory and wisdom in the universe. **HOW UNIMAGINABLE SIGNIFICANT, THEREFORE, IS THE CHURCH IN GOD'S EYES!** Indeed, the Bible says:

"Christ ... loved the church, **AND GAVE HIMSELF UP FOR IT.**" (Eph. 5:25)

It's for this very reason that Christ even rose from the dead, and is now seated far above all rule and authority and power and dominion: that He might become the "*head over all things to the church*" (Eph. 1:22).

In fact, the entire work of the Holy Spirit during these last two thousand years has been to establish the church. God saves sinners and gives them victory in their personal lives not necessarily to perfect them as individual stones but to "mold and shape" them so that they can at last be "fitted" into the building; and it's for this purpose of "building up" the church (i.e., of "molding and shaping" - "perfecting" - the individual saints) that He bestows apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors and teachers as "gifts" to the church.

WHAT IS THE GOAL TOWARD WHICH YOU ARE PRESSING?

The Bible says:

"For the earnest expectation of the creature (i.e., the creation) waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God (i.e., the church) ... For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now." (Romans 8:19, 22)



The Bible says that all of creation is "travailing in pain" to have the church revealed.

The entire work of the Holy Spirit during these last two thousand years has been to establish the church.

Is being established in this **PERFECT** man [i.e., the "builded-up" church (Eph. 4:13)] the goal towards which you are laboring in your day-to-day life? Or does your labor consist simply of emailing others and talking with others on the telephone? Is your church simply the "church on the internet" where your brothers and sisters are merely "electrical impulses" suspended in the air? If that's what your church-life consists of, then your labor for Christ is in vain, and **ON THAT DAY** when you appear before the Judgment Seat of Christ, you will appear empty-handed. This may be an uncomfortable saying for most of you; nonetheless, it's true! The Bible says:

"We are labourers together with God: ye [plural] are God's husbandry, ye [plural] are God's building [which is the church].

"According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise masterbuilder, I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.

"For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.

"Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble;

"Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is." (1 Cor. 3:9-13)



For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.

The Bible says that our works will be made "manifest:" for "*the day (i.e., that day when Christ judges our works) shall declare it.*" And what is the "Work of God?" - **IT IS THE CHURCH!** That's what the Bible is

talking about here - after all, what are we as "God's building" if not the church? The Bible says "*Ye (corporately) are God's building!*" (I Cor. 3:9) Christ is the foundation: "*For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ!*" (I Cor. 3:11) We are called to labor on this foundation, and **OUR LABOR WILL BE JUDGED**: "*Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble: Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is.*" (I Cor. 3:12-13)

THE WORLD IS HEADED IN TWO DIFFERENT DIRECTIONS

The cosmos is headed in two different directions: one direction is towards Satan, and the other towards God; one direction is towards separation and isolation, the other towards community - community with man and community with God. Unbelievers know this! They may not know it because they've studied the Word, but they know it nonetheless. They know it intuitively. It's a "knowing" that God has put in the hearts and minds of all men everywhere. Again, the Bible says,

"That they all may be one (i.e., that they may have "community" with each other); as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us (i.e., that they may have "community" with God): that the world may believe that thou hast sent me." (John 17:21)



One direction is towards Satan, and the other towards God; one direction is towards separation and isolation, the other towards community - community with man and community with God.

CHAPTER VI

THE DISTINCTION BETWEEN ISRAEL & THE CHURCH

PART 1: A COMMITMENT TO LITERALISM

INTRODUCTION

The first thing one must do in coming to any meaningful understanding of the Prophetic Scriptures is to distinguish between Israel and the church. This distinction is forced on all those who take the Bible literally. Charles Caldwell Ryrie of Dallas Theological Seminary writes:

"A ... [a biblical literalist] keeps Israel and the church distinct. This is stated in different ways by both friends and foes of ... [biblical literalism]. Charles Fuller [who was **NOT** a biblical literalist] says the 'basic premise of biblical literalism is **TWO** purposes of God expressed in the formation of **TWO** peoples **WHO MAINTAIN THEIR DISTINCTION THROUGHOUT ETERNITY**. Arno Gaebelein, a friend of biblical literalism, stated it in [the same terms] ..." **THIS [THE DISTINCTION BETWEEN ISRAEL AND THE CHURCH] IS PROBABLY THE MOST BASIC THEOLOGICAL TEST OF WHETHER OR NOT A MAN IS A ... [BIBLICAL LITERALIST] AND IT IS UNDOUBTEDLY THE MOST PRACTICAL AND CONCLUSIVE ...**"



Israel

The Olive Tree
Romans 11: 15-26



The Church

The Candlestick
Revelation 1:20

Lewis Sperry Chafer, first President of Dallas Theological Seminary, agrees with Ryrie; he emphatically believed that if one read the Bible literally (reading "Israel" as Israel in the prophetic Scriptures, and the "church" as the church) one would be led systematically and logically to the conclusion that -

"... throughout the ages God is pursuing two distinct purposes: one related to the earth with earthly people [i.e., the Jews] and earthly objectives ... while the other is related to heaven with heavenly people [i.e., the Christians] and heavenly objectives, which is Christianity ..."

All these men believed that the denial of the distinction between Israel and the church rested on a very superficial understanding of the Scriptures and the rejection of a literal interpretation of the Word of God. The theology which denies that such a distinction exists is known as Covenant Theology [i.e., Post-Millennialism (Amillennialism is merely a sophisticated adaptation of post-millennialism)] - and is the historic theology of the liberal churches and the Roman Catholic Church. Covenant Theology sees the ages of history as the development of a single covenant made between God and sinners by which God would save, through the value of Christ's death on the cross, all who come to Him by faith.

While there certainly is much in Covenant Theology which is in agreement with the Scriptures, it is woefully inadequate to explain the "doctrine of end times" (eschatology) and ultimately it leads the church down into the box canyon of the social, cultural and economic reformation of man-devised institutions - which institutions are not meant for reformation, but judgment and destruction.

Chafer writes:

"The theological terms [so dear to the Covenant theologian], 'Covenant of Works' and 'Covenant of Grace', do not occur in the Sacred Text. If they are to be sustained it must be wholly apart from biblical authority ... Upon this human invention of two covenants ... [Covenant Theology (and Post-millennialism)] ... [have] largely been constructed. It sees the empirical truth that God can forgive sinners only by the freedom which is secured by the sacrifice of His Son - anticipated in the old order and realized in the new - but that theology utterly fails to discern the purposes of the ages; the [differing] ... relationships of God to the Jews ... and [of God to] the church, with the distinctive, consistent ... obligations which arise directly and unavoidably from the nature of each specific relationship to God. A theology which penetrates no further into Scripture than to discover that in all ages God is immutable in His grace towards penitent sinners [which He no doubt is] and constructs the idea of a universal church [in which Israel is swallowed up by the church] - a church continuing through the ages - on the one truth of immutable grace, is not only disregarding vast spheres of ... [Scripture] but is reaping the unavoidable confusion and misdirection which part-truth engenders."

THE RESULT OF COVENANT THEOLOGY: A WORLDLY CHURCH

The "unavoidable confusion and misdirection" of the church alluded to by Chafer (above) results ultimately with the church involved up to its neck in the social, economic and even military affairs of this world - which activities are forbidden to the church - after all, how is it possible for the church to justify, for example, its involvement in the military affairs of this world in the light of Luke 6:27-35. Jesus said:

"But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you,

"Bless them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully use you.

"And unto him that smiteth thee on the one cheek offer also the other; and him that taketh away thy cloak forbid not to take thy coat also.

"Give to every man that asketh of thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods ask them not again.

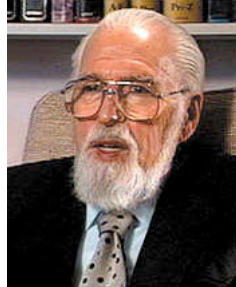
"And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise.

"For if ye love them which love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also love those that love them.

"And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same.

"And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as much again.

"But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil." (Luke 6:27-35)



=



THE THEOLOGY OF CALVIN & RUSHDOONY PRODUCES A WORLDLY CHURCH

The "unavoidable confusion and misdirection" of the church caused by Covenant Theology results ultimately with the church involved up to its neck in the social, economic and even **MILITARY** affairs of this world.

To deny that Covenant Theology eventually leads its adherents into the useless activity of social reformation (and even into military activity) - and then finally into the denial of a literal interpretation of Scripture (which Covenant theologians must ultimately accept in order to involve themselves and their churches in this kind of activity - at least in light of the New Testament) is to deny history itself. This has been the historic fate of the Presbyterians, Congregationalists, Methodists, American Baptists and countless other denominations that started off as conservative, Bible-believing bodies but which are today merely shadows of their former selves - bodies which at the drop of a hat are prepared to compromise the Scriptures to accommodate whatever current social fashion is in vogue and whose single aim seems to be nothing more than the fruitless task of world reformation.

THE SCRIPTURAL BASIS FOR EVANGELICAL THEOLOGY

Of course, if we demand of Covenant theologians the Scriptural basis of their theology, it's only fair to demand the same thing from old-line evangelicals. What then is the Scriptural evidence upon which old-line evangelicals base their concept of the distinction between Israel and the church? What Scriptural proof exists to support the evangelical contention that Israel is not to be swallowed up by the church and is to maintain its distinction, as John F. Walvoord puts it, "throughout eternity ...?" Simply put, evangelicals base their belief on the eternal distinction between Israel and the church on a **LITERAL** interpretation of God's Word and what logically must follow such an interpretation - specifically, the **IMMUTABILITY** of God's "COVENANT TO ABRAHAM" which was reinforced and expanded upon by the "PALESTINIAN COVENANT," the "DAVIDIC COVENANT," and the "NEW COVENANT."

NOTE:

We make a very crucial distinction between what we call "old-line evangelicals" and today's evangelicals. The reason for this is that while the great majority of evangelicals today still call themselves Pre-Millennialists, they are no longer so in practice - and this has become so as they have been drawn ever more deeply into the attempt to "save America for Christ and the church" through the use of political activity. One simply cannot take part in such activity under the "cover" of a Pre-Millennial mandate which sees such activity as useless. One might understand this distinction better by using the analogy of a sinking ship: new-evangelicals are trying to save the ship; old-line evangelicals are trying to get as many people as possible off the ship; they are in absolute juxtaposition to one another.

DEFINITION OF THE WORD "COVENANT"

Charles F. Lincoln defines the word "covenant" as follows:

"A divine covenant is (1) a sovereign disposition of God, whereby He establishes an **UNCONDITIONAL** or declarative compact with man, obligating Himself in grace, by the untrammelled formula, **I WILL**', to bring to pass of Himself definite blessings for the covenanted ones, or (2) a proposal of God, wherein He promises, in a **CONDITIONAL** or mutual compact with man, by the contingent formula **'IF YE WILL'**, to grant special blessings to man provided he (man) fulfills perfectly certain conditions, and to execute definite punishments in case of his [man's] failure."

Two additional points should be noted -

GOD'S COVENANTS ARE LITERAL

First, God's covenants are literal. G.N.H. Peters writes:

"In all earthly transactions, when a promise, agreement, or a contract is entered into by which one party gives a promise of value to another, it is universally the custom to explain such a relationship and its promises by the well-known laws of language contained in our grammar or in common usage. It would be regarded absurd ... to view them in any other way ... The very nature of a covenant demands that it should be so worded, so plainly expressed, that it conveys a decisive meaning, and not a hidden or mystical one that requires many centuries to resolve in order to develop."

GOD'S COVENANTS WERE MADE STRICTLY WITH ONLY ONE COVENANT PEOPLE: THE JEWS

Second, no Gentile nation (including so-called "Christian" nations like America, Britain, France, etc.) has ever received a divine covenant from God; there is only one nation that God has ever covenanted with - Israel. J. Dwight Pentecost writes:

"Finally, these covenants were made with a covenant people, Israel. In Romans 9:4 Paul states that the nation of Israel had received covenants from the Lord. In Ephesians 2:11-12 he states, conversely, that the Gentiles have not received any such covenants and consequently do not enjoy covenant relationships with God. These passages show us, negatively, that the Gentile [nations] were [and are] without covenant relationships [with God] and, positively, that God had entered into covenant relationships with Israel."

THE FIVE COVENANTS OF GOD WITH ISRAEL

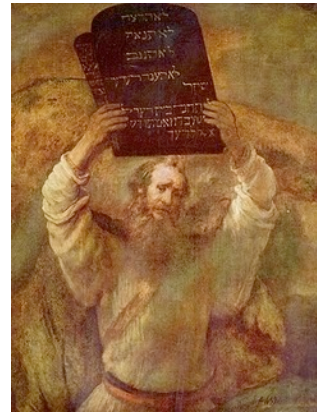
The Scriptures refer to five major covenants with Israel, all of them made by God with the Jewish people. Four of these covenants answer to the first formula defined above and are **UNCONDITIONAL**; one of them answers to the second formula and is **CONDITIONAL**. Lincoln writes:

"The four **UNCONDITIONAL** covenants, with the formula **'I WILL'**, are found in (1) Genesis 12:1-3, where the formula is found either expressed or understood seven times; (2) Deuteronomy 30:1-10, where it is found either expressed or understood, twelve times; (3) II Samuel 7:10-16, where it is found seven times; and (4) Jeremiah 31:31, where it is found seven times. The **CONDITIONAL** covenant, (5) with the formula **'IF YE WILL'**, is found besides in Exodus 19:5 ff., also in Deuteronomy 28:1-68; verses 1-14, 'If thou shalt hearken diligently ... blessings;' verses 15-68, 'If thou wilt not hearken ... cursings'."

Thus, it is to be observed that there are two kinds of covenants which God entered into with Israel: **CONDITIONAL** and **UNCONDITIONAL**.

THE CONDITIONAL COVENANT **(The Mosaic Covenant)**

In a **CONDITIONAL** covenant that which was covenanted depends for its fulfillment upon the **RECIPIENT** of the covenant (Israel), not upon the one making the covenant (God). Certain obligations or considerations must be fulfilled by the receiver of the covenant (Israel) before the Giver of the covenant (God) is obligated to fulfill that which was promised. It is a covenant with an "IF" attached to it. The **MOSAIC COVENANT** is such a covenant.



Mosaic Covenant

PART 2: THE UNCONDITIONAL COVENANTS

An **UNCONDITIONAL** covenant depends **ALONE** on the Giver of the covenant for its fulfillment. That which was promised is sovereignly given to the recipient of the covenant on the authority and integrity of the One making the covenant apart from the merit or response of the receiver. It is a covenant with no "IF" attached to it whatsoever. In addition, it should be noted that **the unconditional covenants made by God with the Jewish people are ETERNAL**. Lincoln writes:

"All of Israel's covenants are called eternal except the Mosaic Covenant which is declared to be temporal, i.e., it was to continue only until the ... (advent of a better covenant - the New Covenant). For this detail see as follows: (1) the Abrahamic Covenant is called 'eternal' in Genesis 17:7, 13, 19; I Chronicles 16:17; Psalm 105:10; (2) the Palestinian Covenant is called 'eternal' in Ezekiel 16:60; the Davidic Covenant is called 'eternal' in II Samuel 23:5; Isaiah 55:3; and Ezekiel 37:25; and (4) the New Covenant is called 'eternal' in Isaiah 24:5; 61:8; Jeremiah 32:40; 50:5; and Hebrews 13:20."

THE FOUR UNCONDITIONAL COVENANTS OF GOD WITH ISRAEL

Let us now turn our attention to an examination of the four specific **UNCONDITIONAL** and **ETERNAL** covenants of God with Israel.

A. THE ABRAHAMIC COVENANT

The Abrahamic Covenant is the first of the four great **ETERNAL** and **UNCONDITIONAL** covenants made by God with the Jewish people (Genesis 12:1-3; 26:1-5; 28:10-15). It forms the basis for the remaining three. It contains seven promises:

- **"I WILL MAKE OF THEE A GREAT NATION."** This promise was to be fulfilled in two ways.
 - a. **NATURAL POSTERITY**, i.e., "as the dust of the earth" through Isaac and the Jewish people.
 - b. **SPIRITUALLY**, i.e., "as the stars of heaven" – i.e., that out from the Jewish people would come Christ (Messiah) and that out from Christ would come the church. [It



Abrahamic Covenant

should be noted that the first hint is made here concerning the two entities through which God planned to bring into subjection the earth and the heavens: Israel was to subject the earth ("a" above), and the church was to subject the heavens ("b" above).]

- "I WILL BLESS THEE."
- "AND MAKE THY NAME GREAT."
- "AND THOU SHALT BE A BLESSING."
- "I WILL BLESS THEM THAT BLESS THEE."
- "AND CURSE THEM THAT CURSE THEE."
- "AND IN THEE SHALL ALL THE FAMILIES OF THE EARTH BE BLESSED."

B. THE PALESTINIAN COVENANT

In the closing chapters of the Book of Deuteronomy, the children of Israel faced a crisis in their national existence (Deuteronomy 28-30). They were about to pass from the proven leadership of Moses to the unproved leadership of Joshua. They were standing at the entrance to the land that was promised to them by God. **BUT THIS LAND WAS POSSESSED BY ISRAEL'S SWORN ENEMIES** who had shown that they would resist any attempt by Israel to enter the land promised them. It was impossible for them to return to their former status as a slave nation, and the land to which they were journeying seemed shut before them. As a result, many of them doubted the efficacy of the original **ABRAHAMIC COVENANT**. Had the inauguration of the **MOSAIC COVENANT**, which all agreed was **CONDITIONAL**, set aside the **UNCONDITIONAL ABRAHAMIC COVENANT**, the promises of which were now in doubt? To answer these important questions, God stated again His covenant promise concerning Israel's possession of and inheritance in the Land of Palestine.



Palstinian Covenant

The **PALESTINIAN COVENANT** promised the following:

1. It reaffirmed title to Israel of the land of promise.
2. It substantiated to Israel the fact that the introduction of the **TEMPORAL** and "**CONDITIONAL**" **MOSAIC COVENANT** had not set aside the **UNCONDITIONAL** and **ETERNAL** promises of the **ABRAHAMIC COVENANT**.
3. It enlarged the boundaries of the promised land given in the **ABRAHAMIC COVENANT**. **IN ADDITION, THE PALESTINIAN COVENANT** contained certain statements:
 - a. That the nation would be punished because of its unfaithfulness *vis-à-vis* the **MOSAIC COVENANT**. (Deut. 28:63-68)
 - b. That Israel would be eventually restored to the land of promise after an as yet future dispersion among the Gentile nations. (Deut. 30:5)
 - c. That Messiah would come. (Deut. 30:3-6)
 - d. That there would be a future repentance of Israel. (Deut. 30:1-3)
 - e. That Israel would embrace Messiah as a nation. (Deut. 30:4-8; cf. Rom. 11:26-27)
 - f. That Israel's enemies would be judged. (Deut. 30:7)
 - g. That the nation would receive her full and eternal blessing. (Deut. 30:9)

It is interesting to note that the exact conditions which prevailed at the time wherein the **PALESTINIAN COVENANT** was given, prevail again today. We do well to stand with Israel despite temptations to the contrary; it is a fearful thing to be found fighting against the God of Israel for ANY reason.

C. THE DAVIDIC COVENANT

These promises made by God to Israel are contained in II Samuel 7:12-16. The historic background of the **DAVIDIC COVENANT** is well known. Inasmuch as David had come to power and authority in the kingdom and now dwelt in a house of cedar, it seemed incongruous that the One from whom he derived his authority and government should dwell in a house of skins - a tent. It was David's intention to build a suitable dwelling place for God. But because he had been a man of war, David was not permitted to build this house. However, God made certain promises to David concerning the perpetuity of his house. These promises pertained to the eternal nature of:



1. David's House.
2. David's Kingdom.
3. David's Throne.

John Walvoord, past president of Dallas Theological Seminary, writes:

Davidic Covenant

"What do the major terms of the [**DAVIDIC**] covenant mean? By 'David's House' it can hardly be doubted that reference is made to David's posterity, his physical descendants. It is assured that they will never be slain *in toto*, nor displaced by another family entirely. The line of David will always be the royal line. By the term 'throne' it is clear that no reference is made to a material throne, but rather to the dignity and power which was sovereign and supreme in David as king. The right to rule always belonged to David's seed. By the term 'kingdom' there is reference to David's political kingdom over Israel. By the expression 'forever' it is signified that the Davidic authority and the Davidic kingdom or rule over Israel shall never be transferred to another family, and its arrangement is designed for eternal perpetuity. Whatever its changing form, temporary interruptions, or chastisements, the line of David will always have the right to rule over Israel and will, in fact, exercise this privilege."

As with the **PALESTINIAN COVENANT**, certain prophetic implications resulted which naturally followed from the provisions of the **DAVIDIC COVENANT**:

1. Israel must be preserved as a nation.
2. Israel must be brought back into the land of her inheritance (including not just her 1948 boundaries, but also the so-called West Bank, the whole city of Jerusalem, and much of present day Jordan, southern Lebanon, Syria, etc.
3. David's "Seed," the Lord Jesus Christ, must return to the earth bodily to reign over David's promised kingdom.
4. A literal earthly kingdom must be constituted over which Messiah will reign. Peters writes: "The fulfillment of the covenant promises implies, in view of this restored Davidic throne and kingdom, that the Messianic Kingdom is to be a visible, external kingdom, not merely a spiritual one ..."
5. This kingdom must become an eternal kingdom.

D. THE NEW COVENANT

The **NEW COVENANT** as stated in Jeremiah 31:31-34 guarantees to Israel what the temporal and conditional **MOSAIC COVENANT** could never accomplish - *a converted heart as the foundation of all her blessings*:

"Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that **I WILL** make a **NEW COVENANT WITH THE HOUSE OF ISRAEL AND WITH THE HOUSE OF JUDAH**: not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day that I took them out of the land of Egypt [the **MOSAIC COVENANT**]; which covenant they brake, although I was an husband unto them, saith the Lord: But this shall be the covenant that **I WILL** make with **THE HOUSE OF ISRAEL**; after those days [i.e., the "last days"] saith the Lord, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be my people. And they shall teach no more every man his neighbor, and every man his brother, saying Know the Lord: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the Lord: for **I WILL** forgive their iniquity, and **I WILL** remember their sin no more." (Jeremiah 31:31-34)



New Covenant

Ryrie writes:

"The **NEW COVENANT** promises:

1. "An **UNCONDITIONAL**, grace covenant resting on the '**I WILL**' of God. The frequency of the phrase in Jeremiah 31:31-34 is striking (cf. Ezekiel 16:60-62).
2. "An **EVERLASTING** covenant. This is closely related to the fact that it is **UNCONDITIONAL** and made in grace ... (Isa. 61:2; cf. Ezek. 37:26; Jer. 31:35-37).
3. "The impartation of a renewed mind and heart which we may call regeneration ... (Jer. 31:33; cf. Isa 59:21).
4. "Restoration to the favor and blessing of God ... (Hos. 2:19-20; cf. Isa. 61:9).
5. "Forgiveness of sin: '... for **I WILL** remove their iniquity, and **I WILL** remember their sins no more' (Jer. 31:34).
6. "The indwelling of the Holy Spirit. This is seen by comparing Jeremiah 31:33 with Ezekiel 36:27.
7. "The teaching ministry of the Holy Spirit will be manifested and the will of God will be known by obedient hearts ... (Jer. 31:34).
8. "As is always the case when Israel is in the land, she will be blessed materially in accordance with the provisions of the **NEW COVENANT** ... (Jer. 32:41; Isa. 61:8; Ezekiel 34:25-27).
9. "The sanctuary will be rebuilt in Jerusalem, for it is written, ' ... I will set my sanctuary in the midst of them for evermore. My tabernacle also shall be with them'. (Ezek. 37:26-27a)
10. "War shall cease and peace shall reign according to Hosea 2:18. The fact that this is also a definite characteristic of the Millennium (Isa. 2:4) further supports the fact that the **NEW COVENANT** is Millennial in its fulfillment.
11. "The blood of the Lord Jesus Christ is the foundation of all the blessings of the **NEW COVENANT**, for 'by the blood of **THY COVENANT** I have sent forth thy prisoners out of the pit wherein is no water'. (Zech. 9:11)"

Ryrie continues:

"By way of summary, it may be said that as far as the "Old Testament" teaching on the **NEW COVENANT** is concerned, the covenant was made with the **JEWISH PEOPLE**. Its period of fulfillment is yet future, beginning when the Deliverer shall come and continuing throughout all eternity. Its provisions for the nation of Israel are glorious, and they all rest ... (solely) on the **WORD OF GOD**."

COVENANT THEOLOGY AND EVANGELICALISM

Covenant theologians (once again, those theologians who deny that modern day Israel has any biblical significance) have attempted to appropriate the provisions of the **NEW COVENANT** wholly and exclusively to the church. But to do so is to (1) deny the **LITERAL** nature of the Word of God which should be taken at face value (because the wording of all four **UNCONDITIONAL COVENANTS** make clear that these covenants were made specifically with the Jewish people), and / or (2) make God out as a liar. **There is simply no way to get around it: Israel is CLEARLY the recipient of these covenants.**

Covenant theologians base their contention that the church is now the exclusive recipient of the **UNCONDITIONAL COVENANTS** on certain passages in the New Testament which link the church to these covenants, specifically, Luke 22:20; I Corinthians 11:25; II Corinthians 3:6; Hebrews 8:8; and 9:15.

Evangelicals, however, do not deny that the church, as a "**MYSTERY**" is "hinted" at in these covenants:

"Now to him that has the power to stablish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, **according to the revelation of the MYSTERY, which was kept secret since the world began.**" (Rom. 16:25)

Moreover, these "hints" are substantiated and made real in the New Testament in innumerable passages as when Paul declares that Christians are children of Abraham by faith (Gal. 3:7 and 3:29). But these passages do not make void the original promises of God to Israel; they point out, rather, that in some "peculiar" way, Christians are to be made "joint heirs" with Israel. How? Not by displacing Israel or even making the church a partaker in the **EARTHLY** promises, but by **GRANTING THE CHURCH THE HEAVENLY COUNTERPARTS OF ISRAEL'S EARTHLY PROMISES** - so that now the following situation pertains and is made real:



Earth – Israel



Heavens – the church

	THE PROMISES	
The Earth: Israel		The Heavens : The Church
The Abrahamic Covenant	The children of God	Rom. 8:16
	The household of God	Eph. 2:19
	The children of Abraham	Gal 3:7
	Abraham's seed	Gal 3:29
	The children of Promise	Rom. 9:8
	A people of His own	Ti 2:14 RSV
	Heirs of God	Gal 3:29
The Palestinian Covenant	Heirs according to promise	Rom. 8:17
	The Temple of God	I Cor. 3:16
	The circumcision	Phil 3:3
	The Israel of God	Gal 6:16
	A chosen generation	I Pet. 2:9
	A royal priesthood	I Pet. 2:9
	A holy nation	I Pet. 2:9
The Davidic Covenant	A peculiar people	I Pet. 2:9
	Heirs of the kingdom	Jas. 2:5
	The sons of God	Jn. 1:12
	Kings and priests of God	Rev. 1:6
	The New Jerusalem	Rev. 3:12
	The holy city	Rev. 21:2
	The people of God	Heb. 4:9
	Mount Zion	Heb. 12:22
The New Covenant	The city of the living God	Heb. 12:22

SO WHAT DO WE HAVE ?

So now, what do we have? A church that has replaced Israel? - by no means! Rather, two entities, one heavenly - the church; and one earthly - Israel, which compliment and mirror the other; both of which reflect the glory of God, each in its own respective sphere.

Lastly, one additional point: this is not simply an academic exercise in "peripheral matters." How one answers the question concerning Covenant Theology as opposed to pre-millennial dispensationalism has very grave consequences - and these consequences go far beyond whether it's permissible for the church to participate in the political and military activities of this world. Ultimately, it also colors one's attitude towards Israel and the Jewish people.

PART 3: CONSPIRACY THEORIES

INTRODUCTION

The scourge of anti-Semitism is easier to catch than many of you may realize. Indeed, some of you may have contracted this horrible disease without even knowing it. The fact is, anti-Semitism is deeply embedded in the many "conspiracy theories" that relate to the so-called Illuminati, the Free-Masons, etc, and that swirl and surround such groups as the Bilderbergers, the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR), Skull and Bones, the Tri-Lateral Commission, the Bohemian Grove, etc, - "conspiracy theories" pushed by **NAIFS** and **DIMWITS** such as **Alex Jones, Pat Robertson, Tex Marrs, Paul Joseph Watson, Jeff Rense**, *ad nauseum*, and which inevitably **CONTAMINATE** any serious study of the Prophetic Scriptures.



Illuminati

You **MUST** understand something concerning the myths pushed by these **NINCOMPOOPS**; and that is this: If you involve yourself in them you will **INVARIABLY** be led away from the Scriptures and into "profane and old wives' fables" (I Ti. 4:7) which will lead you nowhere. Indeed, the myths pushed by these men, while they may be both seductive and intoxicating, are myths which have their origins in **DIVINATION AND SHAMANISM**, and those who are carried away by them will face a **TERRIBLE** end. These fables are "works of the flesh" (Gal. 5:19) and those who are carried away by them "**SHALL NOT INHERIT THE KINGDOM OF GOD.**" (Gal. 5:21) The Bible says:

"Beware of false prophets [people such as Alex Jones, Pat Robertson, Tex Marrs, Paul Joseph Watson, Jeff Rense, *ad nauseum*.], which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravaging wolves." (Matthew 7:15)

Brothers and sisters, listen to me here: **WHETHER YOU REALIZE IT OR NOT, ALL OF THE MYTHS WHICH SWIRL AND SURROUND THE ILLUMINATI, THE FREE-MASONS AND SIMILAR GROUPS HAVE THEIR ORIGINS IN ANTI-SEMITIC MYTHOLOGY, AND WHILE JONES, MAARS, RENSE, ETC. MAY CLAIM THAT THEIR RENDITIONS OF THESE MYTHS HAVE BEEN SCRUBBED CLEAN OF THEIR ANTI-SEMITISM, IT IS IMPOSSIBLE TO COMPLETELY REMOVE THE STAIN OF THIS SCOURGE FROM THEM. TO TOUCH THESE MYTHS IS TO CONTAMINATE YOURSELF WITH THIS DISEASE, AND THE BIBLE WARNS US THAT GOD WILL -**

"Curse him that curseth thee [that is to say, Israel] ..." (Genesis 12:3)

Hence our warning: **STAY AWAY FROM THESE MYTHS AND THE MEN WHO PROMULGATE THEM OR YOU WILL HAVE GOD'S CURSE BROUGHT TO BEAR AGAINST YOU, and you "SHALL NOT INHERIT THE KINGDOM OF GOD."** (Gal. 5:21) You are now warned!



Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion

WHAT HAVE WE LEARNED SO FAR?

Now, what have we learned so far? - The Scriptures refer to five major covenants with Israel, all of them made by God with the Jewish people. Four of these covenants are **UNCONDITIONAL**; one of them is **CONDITIONAL**. The great Bible expositor, Charles F. Lincoln writes:

"The four **UNCONDITIONAL** covenants, with the formula '**I WILL**', are found in (1) Genesis 12:1-3, where the formula is found either expressed or understood seven times; (2) Deuteronomy 30:1-10, where it is found either expressed or understood, twelve times; (3) II Samuel 7:10-16, where it is found seven times; and (4) Jeremiah 31:31, where it is found seven times. The **CONDITIONAL** covenant, (5) with the formula '**IF YE WILL**', is found besides in Exodus 19:5 ff., also in Deuteronomy 28:1-68; verses 1-14, 'If thou shalt hearken diligently ... blessings;' verses 15-68, 'If thou wilt not hearken ... cursings'."

Thus, it is to be observed that there are two kinds of covenants which God entered into with Israel: **CONDITIONAL** and **UNCONDITIONAL**.

At the risk of pressing the point too far, let us review a little:

- In a **CONDITIONAL** covenant that which was covenanted depends for its fulfillment upon the **RECIPIENT** of the covenant (Israel), not upon the one making the covenant (God). Certain obligations or considerations must be fulfilled by the receiver of the covenant (Israel) before the Giver of the covenant (God) is obligated to fulfill that which was promised. It is a covenant with an "**IF**" attached to it. The **MOSAIC COVENANT** is such a covenant.
- An **UNCONDITIONAL** covenant depends **ALONE** on the Giver of the covenant for its fulfillment. That which was promised is sovereignly given to the recipient of the covenant on the authority and integrity of the One making the covenant apart from the merit or response of the receiver. It is a covenant with no "**IF**" attached to it whatsoever. In addition, it should be noted that **the unconditional covenants made by God with the Jewish people are ETERNAL**. Lincoln writes:

"All of Israel's covenants are called eternal except the Mosaic Covenant which is declared to be temporal, i.e., it was to continue only until the ... (advent of a better covenant - the New Covenant). For

this detail see as follows: (1) the Abrahamic Covenant is called 'eternal' in Genesis 17:7, 13, 19; I Chronicles 16:17; Psalm 105:10; (2) the Palestinian Covenant is called 'eternal' in Ezekiel 16:60; the Davidic Covenant is called 'eternal' in II Samuel 23:5; Isaiah 55:3; and Ezekiel 37:25; and (4) the New Covenant is called 'eternal' in Isaiah 24:5; 61:8; Jeremiah 32:40; 50:5; and Hebrews 13:20."

- The four unconditional and eternal covenants by God with Israel are:

- (1) The Abrahamic Covenant
- (2) The Palestinian Covenant
- (3) The Davidic Covenant
- (4) The New Covenant

NOW ONE MUST UNDERSTAND SOMETHING HERE: THE FACT THAT GOD HAS COVENANTED WITH ISRAEL, AND THAT THESE COVENANTS ARE UNCONDITIONAL AND ETERNAL IN NATURE IS WHAT THE BIBLE UNWAVERINGLY TEACHES. ALL four of these covenants are covenants of **GRACE**, having **NOTHING** to do with the righteousness of the Jewish people.

ISRAEL AS A LIVING EXAMPLE OF GOD'S GRACE

To this end, Israel serves as a living, **PRESENT-DAY EXAMPLE** of the **GRACE** of God for all the world to see and marvel at. **What God is saying to us insofar as Israel is concerned, is that He is willing to do for us - indeed, for ALL mankind - what He has done for Israel - even YOU!** If God can save wretched Israel, than He can surely save you - and that without recourse to the Law. The Bible says concerning Israel:

"Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will make a new covenant with the House of Israel and with the house of Judah: not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day that I took them out of the land of Egypt [i.e., the **MOSAIC COVENANT**]; which covenant they brake, although I was an husband unto them, saith the Lord: But this shall be the covenant that **I WILL** make with **THE HOUSE OF ISRAEL**; after those days [i.e., the "last days"] saith the Lord, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be my people. And they shall teach no more every man his neighbor, and every man his brother, saying Know the Lord: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the Lord: for **I WILL** forgive their iniquity, and **I WILL** remember their sin no more." (Jeremiah 31:31-34)



"Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will make a new covenant with the House of Israel and with the house of Judah."

And isn't this EXACTLY the way of salvation that God is offering to ALL mankind? Of course it is! Indeed, the evidence that He can save us apart from the Law is **ISRAEL**. If God can fail with Israel, if He can renege on His promises in the Abrahamic Covenant, the Palestinian Covenant, the Davidic Covenant, and the New Covenant - **ALL** of them covenants of Grace - than He can renege on the promise of salvation that He has made with us. But the Bible says:

"God forbid: yea, let God be true, but every man a liar ..." (Romans 3:4)

In other words, let *God be true to His word (i.e., His promises), though every man be found out to be a liar insofar as their words (i.e., their promises) are concerned.*

GOD'S FAITHFULNESS TO ISRAEL IS A CONFIRMATION OF HIS FAITHFULNESS TO US

To teach, as Covenant theologians do, that - "*as a result of Israel's treatment of the Messiah ... God withdrew his presence from Israel as a nation ... that national Israel will never again be a fruitful nation*" - as Covenant theologians teach - is to condemn all mankind to the fires of hell. I say again, if God's promises can fail insofar as Israel is concerned - that is to say, if He can abrogate His four covenants of Grace to Israel as a result of their "*heinous crimes against Him*" - than the status of the church also stands in jeopardy, **OR** do you really think that the history of the church is any better than the history of Israel? It certainly is not!

The fact of God's faithfulness to Israel, however, is a **REALITY** that we can absolutely rely on. The very truth fact of the matter is - as one well-known pre-millennial writer put it more than a century ago (**even before the creation of the modern state of Israel**):

"For upwards of 4000 years, amid all civilizations and countries and under all conditions of government, there has existed a distinct people, with laws, habits, and customs distinctly their own. The history of the Jewish race reads like a story from the 'Arabian Nights', and is without parallel in human history. Though oppressed, downtrodden, carried captive to other lands, scattered among the nations, like the fabled Phoenix they have risen from the ashes of their dispersions, and appear ... again and again on the pages of history. They are remarkable in the first place for their 'Antiquity'. No nation can trace back its lineage by the clear light of reliable history so far as they. In comparison with the Jews the nations which are making the history of the world today are young. The 'Golden Age' of Israel's glory was long before the palmy days of Greece and Rome. Long before Socrates and Plato taught philosophy, or Herodotus wrote history; in the dim ages of which Homer's 'Iliad' preserves traditions and memorials; before all other authentic and circumstantial records, the nation of Israel was an organized, civilized, and well-established people. They had a literature before most nations had letters, a literature that today, in the Scriptures, is more widely diffused than the literature of any other people. Assyria has perished, Babylon is in heaps, Rome has tottered and fallen, Egypt has become a 'base' kingdom, but the Jew has outlived his conquerors and walks ... amid the general wreck. Dispersed for centuries among all nations, without a national center, capital, government, flag ... he has never been absorbed by the nations, nor lost his identity or national peculiarities and characteristics, and we have the unique spectacle of a nation without a king, government, or land retaining its national existence, and a land (the Holy Land) that seems to be under a curse, awaiting the return of its legal owners. [Again, it should be noted that this commentary was written in 1918, thirty years before the re-establishment of the nation of Israel.]



Though oppressed, downtrodden, carried captive to other lands, scattered among the nations, like the fabled Phoenix they have risen from the ashes of their dispersions, and appear ... again and again on the pages of history. The preservation of the Jews is the 'Miracle of History'.

"No nation has ever had such manifest and visible tokens of the 'divine presence'. For them the Red Sea was driven back and the Jordan parted. They were miraculously fed in the Wilderness, and divinely sheltered and guided by the Pillar of Cloud and Fire. At the blowing of ram's horns the walls of a besieged city fell, and the sun and moon stayed in their courses that they might have time to slay their enemies. The angel of the Lord encamped about them, and one angel slew 185,000 of the army of

Assyria for their deliverance. No nation has given to the world such a number of great men. Such a man of faith as Abraham; such a great leader and lawgiver as Moses; such a statesman as Joseph in Egypt and Daniel in Babylon; such a king as David, and wise man as Solomon. In the First Century there is no name that shines more resplendent than that of the Apostle Paul ...

"The preservation of the Jews is the 'Miracle of History'.

"How are we to account for the wonderful preservation of the Jewish people? *We can only account for it on the supposition that God had, and still has, some great work for them to do.* In the first place the Jewish people were raised up to reaffirm and teach that there is but one God. In the days of Abraham the nations of the earth were given over to universal idolatry, pantheism and polytheism. For 2,000 years ... no other people but the Jews believed the 'unity' of God, or taught it. The Jews have been the teachers of 'monotheism' to the nations. No Gentile nation, untouched by Jewish influence, ever became monotheistic. In the second place, the Jewish people were raised up to be the *writers, preservers, and transmitters of the Holy Scriptures.* To them were committed the 'Oracles of God'. (Rom. 3:1,2) In the third place, the Jewish people were raised up that God through them might give the world a *Savior.* Who was Jesus? *A Jew!!* How carefully His genealogy has been preserved in the Scriptures from Abraham to His birth at Bethlehem ...

"[THE COVENANT] WITH ISRAEL IS NOT A CONDITIONAL PROMISE, AND THERE IS NOT A PASSAGE IN THE BIBLE ANYWHERE THAT REVOKES IT."

COVENANT THEOLOGY LEADS INEVITABLY TO ANTI-SEMITISM

WE REPEAT: THE FACT THAT ISRAEL COULD NOT KEEP THE MOSAIC COVENANT - AND THAT SHE IS IN NEED OF THE GRACE OFFERED TO HER ON THE BASIS OF THE FOUR UNCONDITIONAL COVENANTS OF GOD TO ISRAEL - ONLY PROVES THAT SHE STANDS IN THE SAME RELATIONSHIP TO GOD AS DOES THE CHURCH.

Still, Covenant theologians persist in their folly - a folly that flies in the face of both the Scriptures and the history of the Jewish people; a folly so grotesque and ugly that it cannot help but transform one ultimately into an anti-Semite. Take, for example, the teaching of the Presbyterian church on Israel:

"... the crucifixion was Israel's most heinous crime against God. It was at this point - their treatment of the Messiah - that Israel failed the

*most miserably to keep the conditions laid down in God's promise to her ... What was the penalty for Israel's failure to meet the conditions laid down by Jehovah, and which climaxed in her heinous treatment of the Messiah? God withdrew his presence from Israel as a nation ... The Jewish state came to a bitter end in A.D. 70. **Nor will national Israel ever again be a fruitful nation ...***"

Think about the tone of these words: (1) *heinous crime against God*, (2) *heinous treatment of the Messiah*, (3) *God withdrew His presence from Israel*, (4) *Israel will never again be a fruitful nation!* These words are certainly not calculated to produce a love for the Jewish people, that's for sure!

And that's the teaching of the Presbyterians, hardly what one would call a radical right-wing anti-Semitic group like the Aryan Nations. But what other attitude could Covenant theologians adopt toward Israel? If the church was indeed the "New Israel of God" (as Covenant theologians postulated) it stood to reason that



Anti-Semitism: the scourge that Covenant Theology inevitably unleashes on the world.

after the establishment of the church (and the greater "reality" that the church seemed to represent), the Jewish community should have been absorbed into the church, and/or absorbed into the nations into which they had been dispersed. After all, was not Israel merely a "type" or "shadow" of the church, and when the reality appears, should not the "type" or the "shadow" disappear, there being no further need of it? But this was not what occurred. And not only that, but the Jewish community - despite the fact of its dispersion - gradually developed into an astonishingly tight-knit, well organized, and - in some countries - influential community whose organization and arrangement transcended national boundaries; a community that was international in scope at a time of growing particularism, provincialism, and insularism.

What possible explanation could there be for such a phenomenon? The continued existence of the Jewish people seemed to defy explanation by any normal standard. And that was the rub! - it could not be explained on a normal or rational basis. No people had ever before survived so long as a separate entity after losing their national homeland and being dispersed so widely. The explanation for such a phenomenon could only be accounted for on some supernatural ground. But if this was so - and all seem to agree that it was - was the supernatural presence which so obviously seemed to surround the Jewish people malevolent or benevolent?

For Covenant theologians, there could be but one answer to such a question, and that answer was but the natural consequence of Covenant Theology. It was an "either/or" situation that the church had created for itself in relation to Israel and the Jewish people - either the church, or Israel and the Jewish people. There was no middle ground. *And if one believed that the church was of God, than the presence which surrounded the Jewish people, and which empowered their continued existence beyond all reason, had to be of the Devil. There could be no other answer!! And once this conclusion was reached, than everything else followed - from the stories of their "apostasy" to the "Judeo-Masonic world-conspiracy" and the Illuminati - ALL OF WHICH ARE - AT THEIR ROOT - ANTI-SEMITIC IN NATURE. **ALL OF THEM!***

PART 4: THE "ILLUMINATI CONSPIRACY:" THE ORIGINAL, ANTI-SEMITIC VERSION

[What follows pertains largely to the forgery known to the world as *The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion*; but the same pattern of fabrication found here is repeated in all the other so-called "documentation" bearing on the Illuminati Myth. It also parallels the thesis behind Pat Robertson's book, *The New World Order*. Indeed, the extent to which the worldview behind Pat Robertson's book - *The New World Order* - and the hypothesis which undergirds *The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion* indicates the degree to which this kind of thinking - i.e., the kind of thinking which undergirds the *Protocols* - has seeped into the evangelical Christian community in recent years. (Many of these parallels are indicated in the text below.) Please note that we could have taken the work of any other purveyors of this myth and done the same thing. We chose to use Pat Robertson because he is the most well-known of these **NINCOMPOOPS**.]



We have said that **ALL** of the "conspiracy theories" which swirl and surround the "extra-biblical material" purveyed by such **NAIFS** and **DIMWITS** as **Alex Jones, Pat Robertson, Tex Marrs, Paul Joseph Watson, Jeff Rense**, *ad nauseum* find their origin in anti-Semitic literature; and that is so! - take the Illuminist

Conspiracy! Illuminati enthusiasts and devotees like to paint the myth as extending back into the misty past, but that simply is not the case. *The Illuminati Myth did not exist as literature prior to the French Revolution - and even then only as disjointed pieces, not as a consistent whole. Not until 1905 did the myth explode on the world as a coherent body of literature.* What anti-Semitic writings that did exist prior to 1797 had nothing to do with the Jews as participants in a revolutionary world-conspiracy aimed at the destruction of Christianity; it was largely confined to religious themes with only the most indirect political overtones. Clearly, the anti-Semitic literature which existed prior to 1797 tied the Jews to the death of Christ, and on that basis they were persecuted; it also pictured them as "moneylenders," and occasionally it linked them to the practice of witchcraft; but it never portrayed them as revolutionaries bent on the conquest of the world. On the contrary, Jews were painted as weaklings and cowards; a people hardly worth even the most indirect kind of political attention - and for that reason, most European armies excluded Jews from military service well into the nineteenth century.

The first disjointed pieces of the Illuminati Myth can be traced back to the French Revolution, specifically to the French cleric, the Abbe Barruel's anti-Semitic rantings. It should be noted here that most of the tomes that today exist about the Illuminati - again, tomes such as the ones promulgated by **IDIOTS** and **NAIFS** such as Alex Jones, Pat Robertson, Tex Marrs, Paul Joseph Watson, Jeff Rense, *ad nauseum* - stem directly from these crazed rantings. [Please see Norman Cohn, *Warrant for Genocide* (New York: Harper and Row)]

THE ABBE BARRUEL

As early as 1797, nine years after the French Revolution, Barruel, in his five-volume *Memoire pour servir a l'histoire du Jacobinisme*, argued that the French Revolution represented the culmination of an age-old conspiracy of the most secret of secret societies. Down through the centuries this secret society had purportedly poisoned a number of monarchs; and in the eighteenth century it had captured the Order of Freemasons. **[Here, for example, Pat Robertson's so-called *Juden-frei* (supposedly non-anti-Semitic rendition of the Illuminati Myth) parallels the original anti-Semitic rendition unswervingly as do any number of other similar *Juden-frei* renditions (please see pgs. 67-68 of Robertson's *New World Order*)]**



Abbe Barruel

In 1763, the conspiracy supposedly created a secret literary academy consisting of Voltaire, Turgot, Condorcet, Diderot, d'Alembert and other luminaries of the "French Enlightenment." This group of men ostensibly met regularly in the house of Baron d'Holbach and through its publications had undermined all morality and true religion in France **[parallels pg. 67, Robertson's *New World Order*]**. From 1776 onward, Barruel maintained, Condorcet and the Abbe Sieyes had built up a vast revolutionary organization of half a million Frenchmen who were the "Jacobins" of the French Revolution. But the heart of the conspiracy - the real leadership of the revolution - was supposed to rest in a Bavarian group known as the Illuminati under the headship of a certain Adam Weishaupt **[parallels pg. 67, Robertson's *New World Order*]**. To this handful of Germans, all the Freemasons and Jacobins of France owed blind allegiance - or so Barruel thought.

THE STUPIDITY OF IT ALL

It is almost beyond belief, however, that thoughtful men could possibly accept such drivel! To those possessing even a modicum of knowledge concerning the "Enlightenment" and the French Revolution, such a tale represents absurdity and factual inaccuracy on such a vast scale that it hardly merits attention, let alone serious refutation.

Diderot, Voltaire, Holbach and the other founders of the "Enlightenment" - whose writings in large part produced not only the French Revolution, but the American Revolution as well - were anything but "lovers of the Jews." Voltaire, perhaps the leading figure of the French Enlightenment, was often heard to say that all men were worthy of freedom and the benefits of the Enlightenment except the Jews!! Why? - *because*

"... *the Jews were not of the same species as the rest of mankind!*" This is hardly a statement which could reasonably be attributed to the supposed leader of the Jewish Conspiracy in France. Indeed, in it one can hear the demonic footsteps of the coming Holocaust echoing up through the corridors of history to lodge themselves finally in the hellish darkness of Hitler's Germany. Similar statements are easily attributable to many of the other leaders of the Enlightenment. But then such facts have never dissuaded anti-Semites before, and they could hardly be thought able to do so today.

To the men and women of the Enlightenment, Western Civilization had taken a wrong turn when it had embraced Judeo-Christianity. To "Enlightenment Man," history had begun with the flowering of Greek civilization in the sunny hills and islands of the Aegian - not the "backwaters" of Judea and Samaria - and had reached its zenith under Imperial Rome and the Emperor Marcus Aurelius - not the "secondary and relatively unimportant kingdom of David and Solomon."

The Ancient World of Greece and Rome had detested the Jews and their concept of "One God." Cicero and maintained, *"They (i.e., the Jews) are - all of them - born with a raging fanaticism in their hearts, just as the Bretons and the Germans are born with blond hair. I would not be the least surprised if these people would not some day become deadly to the human race."*

Voltaire's charge against the Jews - his hatred of them - had nothing to do with the Medieval and Catholic concept that they were the "killers of Christ." Voltaire refused to have recourse to the anti-Jewish position of the "Christian Civilization" that he himself had abandoned. Indeed, Voltaire was as much anti-Christian as he was anti-Semitic; to Voltaire, Christianity was merely an extension of Judaism, a view of Christianity which he had adopted from the Graeco-Roman Civilization he admired so much. Voltaire had instead recast his hatred of the Jews in the anti-Semitism of the Ancient World; he had cloaked his anti-Semitism in the ideas of Tacitus and Horace who had hated the Jews with a hatred older and much more obscene than anything conjured up by the Medieval Church - the pagan anti-Semitism of Greece and Rome.

The fact is, Voltaire's hatred of the Jews went far beyond the more "mundane" anti-Semitism of the church of his day, and there are scholars who argue with considerable persuasiveness that Voltaire's anti-Semitism was of a far more murderous kind than that found in the official church doctrine of his time. He had acquired his hatred of the Jews from the very same people who had supposedly taught him the value of freedom and the worth of man (i.e., the pagans of Greece and Rome). Moreover, it is probably not too much to say that his hatred went farther even than the hatred of Cicero, Tacitus, and Horace in as much as he viewed Judaism (and Judaism's daughter, Christianity) of having poisoned the civilization he loved so well. This feeling of contempt and disgust for Judaism and Christianity was the view of the mainstream of the Enlightenment. Montesquieu, Locke, Gibbon, Hume, Rousseau, Mirabaud, Holbach, Voltaire, etc., were all to one degree or another anti-Semitic. **The charge that these men were participants in some great Jewish world-conspiracy is so fraudulent and absurd that it hardly bears consideration, let alone rebuttal. It would be akin to seriously arguing with someone who insisted that two plus two equaled three. About all one could do is to shake his head and walk away.**

THE FREEMASONS AND THE ILLUMINATI

As for the obscure German group known as the "Illuminati" - it was anything but a sinister group of men bent on a world-conspiracy. It was in fact nothing more than a cluster of "armchair intellectuals" more at home in their comfortable gatherings than in the streets inciting rebellion; they were more like an over-aged "athletic club" whose members could talk a good game, but nothing else. Moreover, they were anything but the leaders of the French Enlightenment, they were rather its timid followers. Indeed, they derived their name - "the Illuminati" (meaning the "enlightened ones") - from the fact that they were followers of the French Enlightenment, not its leaders. Finally, the Illuminati and the other followers of the Enlightenment were not Freemasons at all, but rather their rivals.



The Freemasons were the sworn enemies of the French Enlightenment and - hence - the ideas of the so-called Illuminati

The Freemasons were the sworn enemies of the French Enlightenment and were (insofar as the French were concerned) originally Catholic and Monarchists who fought against the Revolution. Indeed, King Louis XVI and his brothers were all Freemasons. Rather than profiting from the Revolution, the Freemasons suffered greatly from its excesses under the Terror which the Revolution unleashed. The Freemasons were hunted down mercilessly and guillotined by the hundreds by the Jacobins. Furthermore, the charge that the Illuminati involved itself in witchcraft is so absurd that it fairly boggles the mind; these men were men who prided themselves on being men of science and rationalism; they everywhere denounced the "medieval" concept of witchcraft as being superstitious. Finally, the thought that half a million Frenchmen would ever under any circumstances "blindly" follow a small group of Germans (Bavarians) is so ridiculous that it is dizzying in its stupidity.

THE SIMONINI LETTER

In 1806, Barruel produced a document in support of his slanderous charges against the Jews - the *Simonini Letter*. Like almost everything else connected with the myth of the Jewish world-conspiracy, the letter was a forgery - a fabrication produced by the French Political Police under Fouché. Its objective was to influence Napoleon against the Jews. The letter was ostensibly written by an army officer, J.B. Simonini. After having congratulated Barruel on "unmasking" the Jacobins, which Simonini claimed were preparing the way for Antichrist, the letter went on to describe the so-called Jewish role in the entire "Jacobin Plot."

At the time of his death in 1820, Barruel had elaborated the beginnings of the modern myth of the Judeo / Masonic Conspiracy. He had written a vast manuscript to show how a revolutionary conspiracy had existed down through the ages, from Mani to the medieval Knights Templar, and thence to the Freemasons. The whole organization was supposedly controlled by a Supreme Council. **The Council was veiled in impenetrable secrecy and had no fixed residence, but wherever the statesmen of the Great Powers gathered, there they could be found as an "unseen and controlling presence" lurking in the background [parallels pg. 71, Robertson's *New World Order*].** The Council, which - according to Barruel - was made up entirely of Jews, elected a Grand Master and around the figure of the Grand Master, Barruel wove a truly lurid tale of intrigue, terror, despotism, sorcery and witchcraft. The tale was so fanciful, and so much the product of his own fevered imagination, that a few weeks before his death, Barruel - in a fit of conscience - sought to destroy all his existing manuscripts. He failed.

IN THE JEWISH CEMETERY IN PRAGUE

Barruel's fantasies and the Simonini fabrication by Fouché found little acceptance in the first half of the nineteenth century. But around 1850, the myth reappeared - this time in Germany as a weapon of the extreme right in its struggle against the growing forces of liberty and democracy.

Writing after the great democratic uprisings of 1848 had swept through Europe, rocking the monarchies of the "Old World" to their very foundations, E.E. Eckert began to expand on Barruel's themes of half a century earlier. The Catholic magazine, *Historische-Politische Blätter* picked up Eckert's writings and



Goedsche

helped spread them throughout southern Germany. **[And these are precisely the writings that Hitler "ran into" in Vienna and Munich in his youth.]**

A few years later, Herman Goedsche, writing for *Neue Preussische Zeitung*, authored a book which was to become the basis of one of the most famous anti-Semitic fabrications of all times - "The Rabbi's Speech." How a relatively obscure and openly fictitious novel by Goedsche was transformed into the twisted and demonic "Rabbi's Speech" is itself a case study in the pathological mental processes at work in those who give credence to the Illuminati Myth. Herman Goedsche had at one time been a minor official in the Prussian postal service. He had been dismissed, however, after having participated in a plot designed to incriminate the famous democratic leader, Benedec Waldeck. The plot had involved the use of forged letters.

In 1868, Goedsche produced a sensational novel under the pseudonym of "Sir John Retcliffe." The novel was entitled *Biarritz*. It contained a chapter called, "In the Jewish Cemetery in Prague." The novel itself was straight fiction and Goedsche never claimed that it was anything else but that. The chapter in question described a secret, nocturnal meeting which was supposed to have taken place in the Jewish Cemetery in the city of Prague during the Feast of Tabernacles. **[It's interesting to note in this connection that there are some in the "Latter Rain" movement (people like William Branham, etc.) who have taken note of the "Rabbi's Speech" and who have described these "goings-on" as a kind of "Black Mass" - a satanic precursor or spiritual counterfeit to the "real thing" (speaking here of the so-called "Black Mass.") which some "Latter Rain" devotees expect to occur in the "Latter Days" just prior to the Return of Christ.]**



At eleven o'clock, the gates of the cemetery creak softly and the rustling of velvet coats is heard. A vague, white figure passes like a shadow through the cemetery until it reaches a certain tombstone; here it kneels down, touches the tombstone three times with its forehead and whispers a prayer. Another figure approaches; it is that of an old man, bent and limping. It coughs and sighs as it moves. The figure takes its place next to its predecessor and it too kneels down and whispers a prayer. A third figure appears, and then a fourth and so on until thirteen figures have finally appeared, each one having repeated the aforementioned procedure.

When the thirteenth and final figure has at last taken its place, a clock strikes midnight. From out of the grave there comes a sharp, metallic sound. Suddenly, a blue flame appears and lights up the thirteen figures. A hollow voice says, "I greet you heads of the Twelve Tribes of Israel." And the figures dutifully reply, "We greet you, Son of the Accursed" - which is to say, "Antichrist." The assembled figures are meant to represent the twelve tribes of Israel. The additional figure represents the "unfortunates of the exile" - the *Diaspora*.

In the Jewish Cemetery in Prague: Suddenly, a blue flame appears and lights up the thirteen figures. A hollow voice says, "I greet you heads of the Twelve Tribes of Israel." And the figures dutifully reply, "We greet you, Son of the Accursed" - which is to say, "Antichrist."

BIARRITZ SPREADS

The relevant volume of *Biarritz* was published in 1868. But this was only the beginning of the story - for soon this frankly fictional episode began its demented transformation. It was the Russian anti-Semites who first thought of treating the story as an authentic record. In 1872, the chapter, "In the Jewish Cemetery of Prague," appeared by itself in St. Petersburg, then the capital of Czarist Russia, as a pamphlet. In 1876, a similar pamphlet appeared in Moscow with the title, "In the Jewish Cemetery in Czech Prague - the Jews, Sovereigns of the World." In 1880, a second edition of the Moscow pamphlet appeared in both Odessa and Prague. In 1886, it appeared in the Paris publication *La Contemporain* for July of that year. In all these versions, the chapter from *Biarritz* was presented no longer as fiction, but as fact - "The Rabbi's Speech."

The authenticity of the speech was vouched for by an English diplomat - one "Sir John Readclif." To complete the irony and twisted turns of this story, when Francois Bournand printed the "Rabbi's Speech" in *La Contemporain*, he prefaced it with a startling revelation: "We find the program of Jewry, the real program of the Jews, expressed by ... the Chief Rabbi, John Readclif ... It is a speech made in the 1880s."

Like a boomerang, the whole thing had come back on the unsuspecting Goedsche (Retcliffe).

Later editions of the "Speech" pictured Goedsche (AKA, Retcliffe, Retclif, Readclif, etc.) not as the Chief Rabbi, but as a hero. For instance, in 1933, the "Speech" surfaced in Sweden and was prefaced by a melancholy statement: "Sir John Readclif paid with his life for exposing the great Jewish conspiracy. It was a sad ending for a man ... who had been an English diplomat and historian."

Unbelievable? It would seem so! - but such are the so-called "facts" that Illuminati enthusiasts marshal in defense of their system of conspiracy theories. And make no mistake about it, this is the stuff from which the entire myth of the Illuminati Conspiracy has been built.

DISJOINTED PIECES COME TOGETHER

Within a year of the publication of Goedsche's fantasy, there appeared in France a book which was to become the "Bible" of the modern Illuminati Myth: *La Juif, le judaïsme et la judaïsation des peuples chrétiens* by Gougenot des Mousseaux.

Mousseaux had become convinced that the world was falling into the grip of a mysterious body of Satan worshippers whom he called "**Kabbalistic Jews**."

In reality, the *Kabbalah* is nothing more than a body of Jewish mystical and theosophical doctrine dating in the main from the late medieval ages. It has been fully expounded in such works as the *Zohar*. While there can be no doubt that the *Kabbalah* falls outside the mainstream of Western (and Jewish) religious thinking, *there is nothing secret about it*.

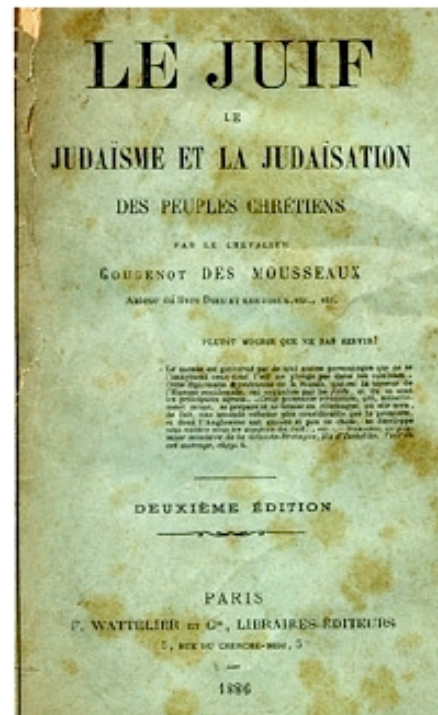
Des Mousseaux, however, imagined the *Kabbalah* as something quite different: a secret demonic religion; a systematic cult of evil, established by the devil at the beginning of the world. According to des Mousseaux, the first practitioners of this cult were the sons of Cain, who after the flood were succeeded by the sons of Ham - these were the Chaldeans. In due time, they passed their secret on to the Jews who in turn controlled the Gnostics, the Manichees, and the Moslem sect of the Assassins. They at last transmitted their diabolical lore to the Templars who handed it to the Freemasons. But at all times the Jews, as the "representatives on earth of the spirit of darkness," had supplied the Grand Masters. [None of this, of course, is in the Bible - none of it; and for Christians - especially evangelicals - to accept such drivel and to pattern their "mindset" around it is tantamount to calling upon themselves the curse of Revelation 22:18 -

"For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book".

Why? - because isn't that what one is doing by embracing such extra-Biblical material? - i.e., religious material that is so foundational to one's thought processes that it helps to shape one's world-view, but material which - nonetheless - cannot be found in the Bible.

According to des Mousseaux, the cult centered on the worship of Satan or Lucifer; the chief symbols of the cult were the serpent and the phallus. The rituals included exotic orgies of the wildest kind. But this was not all: by murdering Christian children, the Jews - who in reality were supposed to be witches - acquired demonic power. All this was supposed to be a part of the *Kabbalah*. Of course, it never was! Never! - except in the imaginations and innumerable forgeries produced by devotees of the Illuminati Myth.

Finally, in the last chapter of his book, des Mousseaux pictured Antichrist as a Jewish king whom all nations would accept as their savior. As he neared the 500th page of his manuscript, the author began to ratchet his frenzy up into monumental heights:



Des Mousseaux, however, imagined the *Kabbalah* as something quite different: a secret demonic religion, a systematic cult of evil, established by the devil at the beginning of the world.

"... the Jews will raise up a man with a genius for political imposture, a sinister bewitcher around whom fanatical multitudes will cluster. The Jews will hail this man as the Messiah, but he will be more than that. After destroying the authority of Christianity, he will unite mankind in one great universal brotherhood and bestow on it a superabundance of material goods. For these great services, the Gentile nations will accept him, exalt him, and worship him as a god - but in reality, for all his apparent benevolence, he will be Satan's instrument for the perdition of mankind." [Gougenot des Mousseaux, *Le Juif, le judaisme et la judaisation des peuples chretiens*, Paris, 1869, pgs. 485-498.]

What des Mousseaux had done was to bring together all the heretofore disjointed pieces of the Illuminist Myth and weave them together as a coherent whole. All that was needed now was for someone to tie it all to a specific and contemporary event. The man that did this was Pyotr Ivanovich Rachkovsky.

PYOTR IVANOVICH RACHKOVSKY

In the late nineteenth century, Russia was a hotbed of religious (as opposed to political) anti-Semitism. Russia was the last true autocracy or absolute monarchy in Europe. It was also the country with the largest Jewish population in the world - some five million, or about a third of all Jews everywhere. They were confined by decree to the "Pale of Settlement" - a group of provinces extending from the Baltic Sea in the north to the Black Sea in the south - an area which embraces much of what is today modern Poland and the Ukraine - all of which was then part of the Russian Empire. They were subjected to severe economic, residential, and educational restrictions. Throughout the nineteenth century, they were persecuted by the peasantry and were on the whole miserably poor.

The nineteenth century was also a time when the Russian Autocracy was beginning to encounter active political opposition, notably from clandestine terrorist groups which were then operating throughout Europe much in the same fashion that Middle East terrorist groups are doing today. The authorities were determined at all costs to mask the fact that the main opposition to the regime was Russian in origin and that there were actually real Russians - and educated ones at that - who

so hated the Autocracy that they were prepared to assassinate its representatives. Slowly at first - and quite haphazardly - they, accordingly, began to pretend that all opposition to the regime, and particularly all terrorism, was the work of a "Jewish conspiracy." The appearance of *Biarritz* in St. Petersburg in 1872, in Moscow in 1876, and in Odessa in 1880 was connected to this pretense. Still, there existed as yet no overall theme to the tales which surfaced, and there appeared to be no coordinated effort behind it all.

After the shocking assassination of Czar Alexander II in 1881, the *Okhrana* (i.e., the secret police) was founded by imperial decree for the "protection of public security and order." Previously, the chief organ of the Secret Police had been the "Third Section" of the Imperial Chancellery, which was founded after the Decembrist Revolt of 1825. The *Okhrana* had branches in all the principal towns in Russia, as well as a foreign service centered in Paris. The foreign service of the *Okhrana* was headed up by Pyotr Ivanovich Rachkovsky. A Russian compatriot described him as "... slightly too ingratiating in his manners and his suave way of speaking ... which made one think of a great cat carefully concealing his claws."



Rachkovsky in Paris; leaders of the Okhrana in St. Petersburg

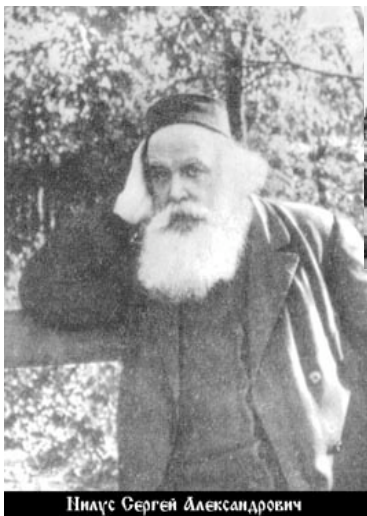


As chief of the foreign branch of the *Okhrana*, Rachkovsky organized over a period of some nineteen years (1884-1903) a network of agencies in France, Switzerland, London, and Berlin. As a result, he was easily able to keep a close check on the activities of the various exiled Russian revolutionary and terrorist groups. During this entire period, Rachkovsky resided in Paris and made it his headquarters.

Rachkovsky was a born intriguer who delighted in forging documents. One of his favorite methods of sewing discord in the ranks of the opposition was to forge a letter or pamphlet in which a supposed revolutionary attacked the revolution. For example, in 1887 there appeared in the French press a letter by a certain "P. Ivanov" who claimed - quite falsely - that the majority of the terrorists were Jews. In 1890 there appeared another pamphlet accusing the revolutionaries who had taken refuge in London of being British spies. In 1892 a letter appeared over the famous name of Plekhanov, accusing the leadership of *Narodnaya Volya* of having published the "confessions" of Plekhanov. A few weeks later came another letter in which Plekhanov in turn was attacked by other supposed revolutionaries. In reality, all these documents were forged by one man - Rachkovsky! Rachkovsky's life was filled with such intrigues.

SERGEY ALEXANDROVICH NILUS

In 1902, Rachkovsky became involved in a court intrigue in St. Petersburg which also involved the future editor of the infamous *Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion*: Sergey Alexandrovich Nilus. Nilus, a man wholly dedicated to Orthodoxy and the concept of a "Holy Russia," was the perfect picture of the classic Russian - a huge man with a long, flowing gray beard and deep blue eyes. He had a veiled and somewhat troubled look. He wore boots and a simple peasant's shirt with a belt which had a prayer embroidered on it. In character he was capricious, unruly, and despotic. He fancied himself a mystic and a heaven sent defender of "Holy Russia." He repudiated modern civilization and saw it as a conspiracy of the powers of darkness. He had become a systematic "anti-rationalist."



Нилус Сергей Александрович



The monastery of Optina Pustyn and Sergey Alexandrovich Nilus

the same side. Phillippi was cherished, flattered, and almost worshipped by the Imperial family, but he also had powerful enemies - the Dowager Empress Maria Feodorovna and the Grand Duchess Elizaveta Feodorovna. To break Phillippi, they had turned to Rachkovsky. Thanks to the relations which he had so carefully cultivated with the French police, Rachkovsky was able to develop an incriminating file on Phillippi.

The intrigue against Phillippi involved Nilus as the central player. Nilus, who had lost his entire fortune in riotous living while living in France as a young man, had returned to Russia and had adopted the life of a perpetual pilgrim, wandering from monastery to monastery. Around 1900 he wrote a book which described how he had been converted from atheistic intellectualism to a fervent believer in Orthodoxy. The book came to the attention of the Grand Duchess Elizaveta Feodorovna. Nilus was accordingly summoned to St. Petersburg at the end of 1901 and the court clique surrounding Rachkovsky and Feodorovna hit upon the following plan: Nilus was to be formally ordained as an Orthodox priest and then married to one of the Czarina's ladies-in-waiting, Yelena Alexandrovna Ozerova. A concerted effort was then to be made to impose Nilus on the Czar and Czarina as their confessor; if it had succeeded, Phillippi would have been removed.

It was an ingenious plan, but Phillippi's supporters were able to counter it. They drew attention to Nilus's immoral past - Nilus had been (and still was) a notorious womanizer; as a result, Nilus fell into disgrace and was forced to leave the court. Nilus, who was then aged forty-seven, made his way to the great monastery of *Optina Pustyn*. There he and his dependents - which included his usual retinue of women (of which his new bride was now a part) - found permanent lodging in four rooms of a large villa located on the grounds of the famous monastery. The rest of the villa was employed as a home for cripples, idiots, and the mentally ill who lived there in the hope of a miraculous cure.

If the intrigue had failed in its original intent, it did accomplish one thing: it had brought together Rachkovsky and Nilus and established a relationship between the two which was to have a profound effect on the future course of the world.

THE GENESIS OF THE PROTOCOLS

Between 1894 and 1899, France was rocked by the arrest and imprisonment of Captain Alfred Dreyfus, a Jew who had been falsely accused of selling French military secrets to the Germans. During this same period, Russia was moving inexorably in the direction of revolution. It was during this period that Rachkovsky hit upon a plan to take des Mousseaux's anti-Semitic material, weave it into an obscure play entitled *Dialogue* by Maurice Joly, and create thereby the *Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion* - and by doing so to lay the blame for all the unrest in Russia on the Jews. The French military authorities had been doing just that insofar as the Dreyfus affair was concerned, and by 1895 it looked as if they had been successful in transferring the blame for France's sorrowful military condition from themselves to Dreyfus and the Jews. Rachkovsky reasoned that if it had worked so well for the French, why then not for the Russians? And this is precisely what Rachkovsky was attempting to do in forging the *Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion*.



Drefus

THE DIALOGUE AND THE PROTOCOLS

Maurice Joly, the author of *Dialogue*, had conceived the idea of the play during a time when it was forbidden to criticize the despotic regime of Napoleon III. In order to avoid press censorship, Joly had developed the idea of writing an imagined dialogue between the great champion of the French Enlightenment, Montesquieu, and the infamous Italian cynic, Machivelli. Montesquieu was to present the case for democracy, liberalism, and reform. Machivelli would defend the position of cynical despotism and Napoleon III. In this way he thought that he could criticize the Emperor. But the play, which was published in Brussels, was confiscated in Paris. Joly was arrested by the agents of Napoleon III and his writings were suppressed. In despair, Joly committed suicide in 1879.



Maurice Joly and the Dialogue

But Joly's play was indeed an admirable work - incisive, ruthless, and logically and beautifully constructed. The debate is opened by Montesquieu who argues that in the present age, the enlightenment ideas of liberalism had made despotism, which Montesquieu argued had always been immoral, impractical as well. But Machivelli replies with such eloquence and at such length that he dominates the rest of the play. Machivelli argues that the great mass of people are simply incapable of governing themselves; normally, they are inert and only too happy to be ruled by a strong man. Machivelli maintains that the concepts of politics have never had anything to do with morality and insofar as practicality is concerned, the inventions of the modern world were better suited to the imposition of despotism than democracy. Moreover, the people in actuality desired despotism. The forces that might oppose the despot's rule could be dealt with easily enough: the press could be censored and political opponents could be watched by the police.

So long as the despot dazzled the people with his prestige, he could be sure of their support. Such is the book that inspired the forger of the *Protocols*. **He plagiarized it shamelessly. In all, about one-half of the entire text of the *Protocols* is clearly based on passages from Joly. In nine of the chapters, the borrowings amount to more than half of the text; in some they amount to three-quarters; in one (Protocol VII) they amount to the entire text. Moreover, with less than a dozen exceptions, the order of the borrowed passages remains the same as it was in Joly's play, as though the forger had worked through the *Dialogue* mechanically, page by page, copying straight into the *Protocols* as he proceeded.** Even the arrangement in the chapters is much the same - the twenty-four chapters of the *Protocols* corresponding roughly to the twenty-five chapters of the *Dialogue*. Only towards the end, where the prophecy of the anti-Christian "Messianic Age" of Antichrist appears, does the forger allow himself any real independence of thought. [Please see Norman Cohn, *Warrant for Genocide* (New York: Harper and Row) for a lengthy comparison between the *Protocols* and the *Dialogue*.]

NILUS AND THE PROTOCOLS

Rachkovsky entrusted the finished forgery to Yulina Glinka, his agent in Switzerland. She then transferred it to Rachkovsky's old friend, Sergey Nilus at *Optina Pustyn*. Nilus was enthralled and totally taken in by the ruse. Rachkovsky had reasoned that if anyone could be duped by the intrigue and find a way of publishing the *Protocols*, Nilus would be the man. Rachkovsky had not reasoned in vain.

Alexander du Chayla, a Frenchman who visited Nilus at *Optina Pustyn* during this time, has left an account of how truly fooled Nilus was by Rachkovsky's forgery. Du Chayla writes:

"Nilus took (the *Protocols*) from the shelf and began to [read to me] ... the most remarkable passages of the text and of his own commentaries. At the same time he watched the expression on my face, for he assumed that I would be dumbfounded by the revelation. He was rather upset when I told him that this was nothing new to me ...

"Nilus was shaken and disappointed by this. He retorted that I took this view because my knowledge ... [of these things] was superficial and fragmentary. It was absolutely necessary that I should feel the full impact. And it would be easy for me to get to know the *Protocols* because the original was in French.



Du Chayla

"Nilus did not keep the [actual] manuscript of the *Protocols* in his house for fear lest it be stolen by the Jews. I recall how amused I was by his perturbation when a Jewish chemist of Kozelsk, taking a walk with a friend in the monastery forest and trying to find the quickest route to the ferry, happened to stray into Nilus's garden. Poor Nilus! He was convinced for a long time afterwards that the chemist had come to carry out a reconnaissance.

"Some time after our first conversation about the *Protocols*, one afternoon about four o'clock, one of the patients from Nilus's home ... brought me a letter: Nilus was asking me to come and see him on an

urgent matter. [He was at last prepared to show me the actual manuscript - the original - of the *Protocols*.]

"I found Sergey in his study. He was alone ... Dusk was falling, but it was still light for the earth was covered with snow. I noticed on his writing-table something like a rather large envelope, made of black material and decorated with a big triple cross with the inscription: 'In this sign you shall conquer'. A little picture of St. Michael, in paper, was also stuck in the envelope. Quite clearly all this was intended as an exorcism.

"Sergey crossed himself three times before the great icon of the Mother of God ... and opened the envelope, from which he took a leather-bound notebook ...

"'Here it is', said Nilus, 'the charter of the Kingdom of Antichrist'.

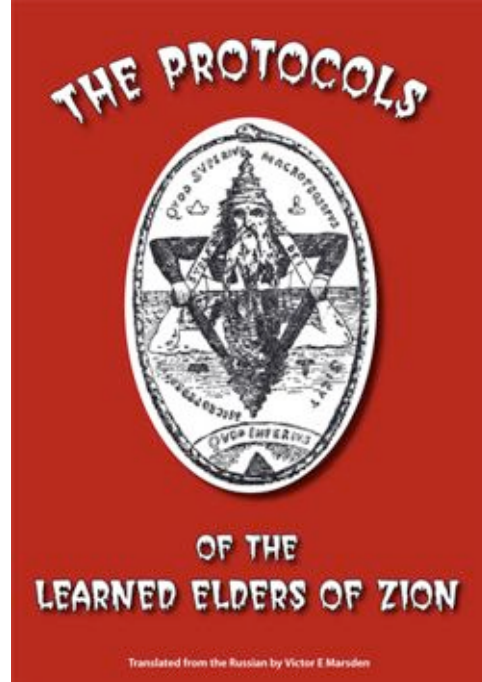
"He opened the notebook ... The text was written in French by various hands and, it seemed to me, with different inks.

"'You see', said Nilus, 'during the sessions of the secret Jewish government, at different times, various people filled the office of secretary, hence the different handwritings'.

"After showing me the manuscript, Sergey placed it on the table ... and said: 'Well, now read!' ... While reading the manuscript, I was struck by certain peculiarities in the text. There were some spelling mistakes and above all, some expressions which were not French [Du Chayla was a native Frenchman, while the forger, Rachkovsky, was Russian and spoke French only as a second language - editor.] Clearly the manuscript was written by a foreigner ... It took me two and a half hours to read the document ... [Finally] Sergey wanted to know what impression my reading had produced on me. I told him straight out that I [still] stood by my previous judgment. I didn't really believe in the 'Elders of Zion'.

"Nilus's face clouded. 'You really are under the influence of the Devil', he said. 'Satan's greatest ruse is to make people deny [these things] ... What will you say now if I show you how what is said in the *Protocols* is being fulfilled, how the mysterious sign of the coming of Antichrist appears on all sides, how the imminent advent of his kingdom can be felt everywhere'?" Then he proceeded to the 'exhibits in the case'. He opened the chest. Inside there were, in an indescribable state of disorder, detachable collars, India rubbers, household utensils, insignia of various technical colleges, even the cipher of the Empress Alexandra Feodorovna and the Cross of the Legions d'honneur. On all these objects Nilus detected, in his hallucination, the seal of Antichrist, in the form of a triangle or of two superimposed triangles ... If an object bore a trademark even vaguely suggesting a triangle, that was enough to secure it entry to his museum ...

"With increasing excitement and anxiety, in the grip of a sort of mysterious terror, Nilus explained to me that the sign of 'the Son of Perdition' is now contaminating all things, that it shines even from the scrolls of the great icon behind the altar in the Church of the Hermitage ... I felt a sort of fear. It was now past midnight. The gaze, the voice, the reflex-like gestures - everything about Nilus - gave me the feeling that he was walking on the edge of a (mental) abyss and that at any moment his reason might disintegrate into madness." [A. du Chayla in *La Tribune Juive*, pgs 3-4.]



Clearly, then, Nilus really believed in the *Protocols* and in the myth of the "Jewish-World Conspiracy." Rachkovsky had done his work well in choosing as his agent the mentally deranged Sergey Nilus.

Nilus soon arranged to have the book passed by the Moscow Censorship Committee on September 28, 1905 and it appeared in print a short time later attached to a commentary by Nilus called *The Root of Our Troubles* - meaning, of course, the Illuminati, i.e., the Jews. Nilus's star quickly rose at the Imperial Court as a result, and the Metropolitan (Archbishop) of Moscow ordered a sermon quoting Nilus's version of the *Protocols* to be read in all 368 churches of Moscow. This was duly done on October 16, 1905 and the sermon was promptly reprinted throughout all of Russia.

PART 5: PLAYING WITH FIRE

THE PROTOCOLS AND THE RUSSIAN REVOLUTION

From 1905 onward, anti-Semitism took a decidedly different turn; no longer was it confined to religious circles; it had clearly burst those old bounds and had begun to flow in new and much more dangerous channels - so much so that agents of the government began to find it convenient to invent Jewish names for all the Autocracy's opponents. From any kind of a factual standpoint, this was nonsense; to be sure, Jews were involved in the revolutionary movements of the time, but they played no greater role than many other minorities who were likewise persecuted by the hated Autocracy.

The *Protocols* were republished in 1911 and 1912; but it was not until 1917 (at the time of the Revolution) that they really took off under a new title: *He is Near, at the Door ... Here Comes Antichrist*.



The Protocols and the Russian Revolution

The 1917 version was distributed as a pocket-sized pamphlet to the soldiers of the "White Armies" during the Revolution; most, therefore, came to believe that the Revolution had been the product of a Jewish conspiracy; and that Lenin, Trotsky, and the Red Army were nothing more than puppets in this vast plot, an intrigue which was - like the French Revolution before it - ultimately under the control of the "Illuminati."

After the defeat of the "Whites," thousands of them fled as expatriates to Western Europe, carrying with them their pocket-sized *Protocols* - and it was this rendition of the *Protocols* - with the imprimatur of the Czarist government on its cover - which found itself onto the pages of the *Times of London* and other newspapers and magazines in the West; and more, it was this version which Russian émigrés carried with them to America after the final collapse of their forces in the Crimean Peninsula in 1922.

TO THESE EMIGRES, THE WAR IN RUSSIA HAD BEEN A CONTEST WHICH HAD PITTED "CHRISTIAN RUSSIA" AGAINST THE POWER OF SATANIC ILLUMINISM, and it was this mindset, along with their pocket-sized copies of the *Protocols*, which they brought to this country that Pat Robertson and others are using today as a means to galvanize Christians into political action aimed at taking back the country for "Christ and the church." To be sure, the references to the Jews have been dropped and "code words" adopted (i.e., "secular-humanism," "liberals," "Illuminists," etc.), but the myth is the same - and there, lurking in the background, are still the Jews.

Some Christians, no doubt, will have a difficult time believing that their leaders could have "hooked into" such a deadly mythology; that certainly the story which Robertson has described in the pages of *The New World Order* is different from that which Hitler used to bewitch the German people. The sad answer is, it's not! And it's not just that there exists a good deal of evidence which suggests the parallel nature of the two mythologies [i.e., Hitler's and Robertson's (minus the naked references to the Jews and the overt racism which characterized German fascism)] - but the fact is, it's relatively easy to prove the relationship between the two (i.e., Robertson's version and Hitler's version) by tracing the trail of the original mythology from Russia - where it first surfaced as a full-blown story - to Germany and ultimately to the United States. From there, it is not particularly difficult to follow its path up through the years straight to Pat Robertson and others in the Christian Right today. Many have done so. For example, take Professor Donald S. Strong of the University of Texas. As early as 1941 he wrote,

"... it is important to note here that the ideology spread by ... [enthusiasts of the Illuminati Myth] in the United States is the same as that which accompanied certain political developments in Russia before World War I, in Poland and Hungary shortly after that war, and more recently in Nazi Germany, Fascist Italy [and finally here in the United States]." [Donald Strong, *Organized Anti-Semitism in America* (New York: Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1941), pg. 1.]

THE TORTURED PATH OF THE ILLUMINATI MYTH

Strong continues,

"The appearance of this ideology [i.e., the Illuminati Myth] in postwar Hungary is of interest because, before World War I, anti-Semitism was almost unknown there ... It was during the crushing of the short lived ... [Communist] regime [in Budapest] that the antirevolutionary, anti-Semitic ideology made its [first] appearance. Here, as in postwar Russia, the ideology was not used as a means of elite defense; instead an old elite [i.e., the aristocracy and the large landholders] temporarily dislodged [by Bela Kun and the socialists], employed it as a means of discrediting the new revolutionary [i.e., communist] elite and justifying its [i.e., the aristocracy's] own return to power. Thus, in the name of this antirevolutionary, anti-Semitic ideology, the White Terror was directed not only against the ... [communists] in general and the few Jewish Bolsheviks [who were connected to them], but against all the half million Jews in Hungary. The speedy association of [the Jews ...



Bela Kun of Hungary

with the] Bolsheviks in the [Illuminist] ideology came about partly from the spread of the ideology from the White Russians and partly from the fact that Bela Kun and several other leaders of the revolution actually were Jews." [Donald Strong, *Organized Anti-Semitism in America* (New York: Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1941), pg. 6.]

From Hungary, the myth then spread into Germany. Like Russia, there had been a history of anti-Semitism in the Reich; but like Russia again, the anti-Semitism which had manifested itself prior to the First World War was more religious than it was political. Moreover, the anti-Semitism which had taken hold in Germany prior to the war had existed principally only in the lower classes. The middle and upper classes were relatively free of the scourge. Indeed, Bismarck, an aristocrat, had been responsible for launching a campaign in the latter part of the nineteenth century which had aimed at the full integration of the Jewish community into all aspects of German life. There was, of course, some resistance: in 1871 Professor August Rohling, a theologian, produced *Der Talmudjude* which represented Judaism as a devilish doctrine; in 1878, Adolf Stocker, the court preacher, founded the anti-Semitic Christian Social Labor Party; and finally - in connection with the *Kulturkampf* - the Catholic Church initiated a crusade which aimed at blaming the Jews for its troubles with Bismarck. But all in all, the population embraced Jewish assimilation as a measure whose time had come - modernity seemed to demand it. Nonetheless, despite this history of toleration, Germany - like Russia, Poland and Hungary before it - succumbed quickly to the allure of the Illuminati Myth and the political anti-Semitism which the myth inevitably unleashed; and in this respect, the German experience differed from the others only insofar as the "Communist Revolution" never really took hold in Germany.

While the Spartacists - a radical group of German Socialists under Karl Liebknecht and Rosa Luxemburg - threatened the government in Berlin for three months in the winter of 1918-1919, and Socialists seized power in Munich for a brief period, they were all quickly swept away. Unlike Poland, Hungary and Russia, no real military threat ever materialized in Germany. The catalyst in Germany was profound economic distress. Strong writes,

"The more menacing the ... [economic situation] became, the stronger the Nazis grew, ever professing to be defenders of the existing social order against revolutionary chaos." [Donald S. Strong, *Organized Anti-Semitism in America* (Washington, D.C.: American Council on Public Affairs, 1940), pp. 83-108.]

The *Protocols* are such a transparent forgery that one may wonder how it was that they spread so fast throughout the Christian West. The fact remains, however, that multitudes of people who were by no means insane took them very seriously at the time - after all, the government of one of the greatest nations in the world, Imperial Russia, had attested in unequivocal terms to their authenticity. Indeed, the *Times of London* editorialized,

"What are these *Protocols*? Are they authentic? If so, what malevolent assembly concocted these plans and gloated over their exposition? ... Have we by straining every fiber of our national body escaped a *Pax Germanica* only to fall into a *Pax Judaica*?"

But shortly thereafter, the myth began to unravel. On August 18, 1921, the *Times of London*, which had done so much to spread the myth, took the lead in unraveling it by devoting a resounding editorial admitting its error. *The Times* had just published in its issues of August 16, 17, and 18 a lengthy dispatch from its correspondent in Constantinople, Philip Graves, which revealed the fact that the *Protocols* were nothing more than a clumsy forgery copied from Maurice Joly's play, *Dialogue aux Enfers entre Montesquieu et Machiavel*.



What are these *Protocols*? Are they authentic? If so, what malevolent assembly concocted these plans and gloated over their exposition?

THE RAISON D'ETRE BEHIND THE MYTH'S MAGNETISM

Still, countless numbers of people continued to feel irresistible drawn to the myth - the facts of the matter notwithstanding. Professor Strong also noted this phenomenon back in 1941 and was puzzled by it - and he refused to write off those who were drawn to it as uneducated buffoons - certainly Ford, DuPont, the Pope, Churchill and countless others like them could not be so easily dismissed. There had to be something more behind the myth's "drawing power."

To get a more precise idea of why people were drawn to the myth, Strong undertook a study of more than 121 organizations which were involved in one way or another with the Illuminist Myth during the years 1933-1940. Strong wrote,

"To understand precisely how and why ... the [Illuminist Myth] has circulated in America ... it is necessary to examine the character of the proponent organizations. What are the personality types, occupations, and affiliations of the leaders? What is the class status, religion, and geography ... of the membership? How are funds raised? What sort of propaganda is used and through what channels? To what extent do the groups cooperate? What objectives have they in common? These are the key questions to be answered." [Donald Strong, *Organized Anti-Semitism in America* (New York: Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1941), pg. 15.]

Strong chose 9 groups out of the 121 as representative; he then proceeded to subject these groups to a minute examination. He found that they could be grouped broadly into three different categories:

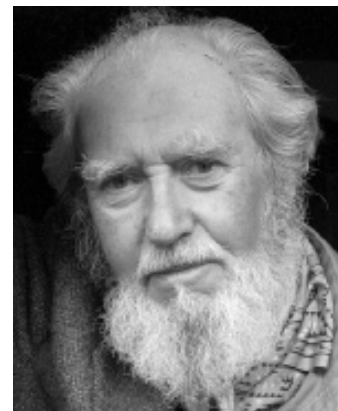
1. **Christian groups**: the National Union for Social Justice, the American Christian Defenders, and the Defenders of the Christian Faith;
2. **Antilabor and business groups**: the Industrial Defense Association, the Edmondson Economic Service, the American Vigilant Intelligence Service, and James True Associates; and
3. **Political and patriotic groups**: the Paul Reveres and the Order of '76.

AND IT'S PRECISELY HERE THAT STRONG BEGAN TO DISCOVER THE REAL REASON BEHIND THE "STAYING POWER" OF THE ILLUMINIST MYTH: IT WAS THE GLUE WHICH WAS HOLDING TOGETHER THIS RATHER POLYGLOT ALLIANCE OF OTHERWISE UNRELATED CULTURAL, ECONOMIC AND POLITICAL GROUPS WHICH WAS STANDING IN THE WAY OF SOCIALIST FORCES WHICH THREATENED THEIR UNDOING. The myth (whether expressed as the "Illuminist Plot," the "Communist Conspiracy," and/or "Secular-Humanism") gave the alliance the *raison d'etre* necessary to hold it together. It provided an enemy against which they could rally their forces and make "common cause." Without it, the alliance would fall apart.

The myth stimulated -

1. Businessmen and antilabor groups because it portrayed communism and the business community's hated adversaries, the labor unions, as tools of Illuminism;
2. It galvanized Christians in as much as it painted a dire threat against Christianity; and finally
3. It excited national and patriotic groups as a response to the "one-worldism" of Illuminism.

Thus, it was (and is) in the interest of all three communities [Big Business and antilabor groups); Christians; and the various nationalist and patriotic groups (i.e., the John Birch Society, the American Security Council, etc.)] to fan the flames of Illuminism, and - if only unwittingly and unintentionally - the underlying anti-Semitism that goes along with it. Thus, it is a matter of pure fact - even today - that one cannot involve



Norman Cohn

himself in this alliance without someday involving himself in anti-Semitism! - and this is as true for Christians as it is for Big Business, and the various nationalist and patriotic groups.

PLAYING WITH FIRE



What is it about American Christians which makes them think that they can play with such fire (i.e., the Illuminist Myth) and not get burned? Over twenty million people - from the White Terror which so gripped Europe after the First World War to the ovens of Auschwitz during the Second World War - have perished directly as a result of this myth.

Christians are being hustled, and its not "Minnesota Fats" who's doing the hustling, but experts at the game of politics who would pimp their own mothers as prostitutes if it could achieve their goal of worldly political power. Thinking we

are wise, we have become fools and are playing with the same fire which consumed the White Russians and the German people. American Christians think to use the political process for their own ends, but in the final analysis it may be the political process which will use them for its ends.

Much of this information comes from two sources: Norman Cohn, *Warrant for Genocide* and Donald Strong, *Organized Anti-Semitism in America*.

- **We urge you to see the following articles for more information on this subject: “Origins of the Illuminist Myth,” “Pat Robertson, Illuminism and the New World Order,” “Anti-Semitism and the Economic Crisis” and “What’s Really behind the Phenomenon of Anti-Semitism.”**

CHAPTER VII

THE GREAT ESCAPE: MISCONCEPTIONS CONCERNING THE RAPTURE

PART 1: A DAMAGING CONCEPT

INTRODUCTION

Now that we have made the distinction between Israel and the church and examined the fires of anti-Semitism the failure to recognize such a distinction ultimately ignites, the next fundamental issue we must consider before we can really plummet the depths of the Prophetic Scriptures is whether or not Christians will go through the Tribulation? - after all, why prepare for something which, in the end, we think we're going to escape. We need to be clear with regard to this matter because - although we don't like to admit it - nothing so focuses the mind as preparing for something we know is going to affect the future course of our lives. The fact is, if we don't think something we are studying is really going to affect us one way or another, we probably will acquire a rather cavalier attitude towards it: it's like taking a course of instruction on some particular subject without at the end having to face an examination.



Of course, we would like to think that as "mature" Christians, we're above trivializing the search for truth in such a way - and, no doubt, some are. But most of us aren't. Tell us, however, that there is a final examination, and that if we don't pass the examination, we will fail the course - that will get our attention. Add to that the fact that if we fail the course, we will be dropped from school, then our minds really get focused. That's what makes the rapture question so important - the question of the rapture's timing is as essential to arriving at a meaningful understanding of the prophetic Scriptures as is differentiating between Israel and the church. To a large extent, it determines how important we take the question of the "End of Days."

A DAMAGING CONCEPT

That's why one of the most damaging deceptions to which Christians have fallen prey in recent years is the thought that they will escape the Tribulation by means of a *Secret Rapture*. To those who have "bought into" such thinking, the study of the prophetic Scriptures is, at best, academic - nice to know information if there is time for it, but relatively useless in any practical way since they will be gone because of the Rapture. While Christians who hold such views would never admit it, what they have done is to effectively consign as useless a great portion of the Word of God - at least as it pertains to them personally.



Secret Rapture

Consider for a moment the following facts. The Bible, taken as a whole, is a relatively small book in the sum total of things - a book which could be lost in any public library. Think of all the things that God could have written about - medicine, science, history, ethics, etc. All the libraries of the world could not even begin to contain the smallest fraction of the knowledge and wisdom of God. Yet God reduced the essence of all His wisdom and knowledge to one small book; that portion which He considered indispensable to our salvation and spirituality. That means that every word in the Bible must be of inestimable value. Yet we must throw out as unimportant to us a great portion of this book; that portion which deals with the "Last Days" (more than one-half of the prophetic Scriptures - almost one-fourth of the entire Bible) if we accept the argument of those who say we will not go through the Tribulation. Such thinking is absurd - even on the face of it.

A NAÏVE ACCEPTANCE

Many fine Christians have accepted the teaching of the Secret Rapture theory with little or no investigation and with little realization of its ultimate consequences. But this teaching was not taught by the early church - indeed, it was not taught by anyone until around the year 1830. Every "Church Father" expected the church to suffer at the hands of the Antichrist and they fully expected to suffer material privation and tribulation in their daily lives as a **NORMAL CONSEQUENCE** of their choice to follow Jesus. There is no trace of the Secret Pre-Tribulation Rapture Theory in the early church, and no adherent of the Secret Pre-Tribulation Rapture Theory has ever successfully proven that this particular doctrine was ever held by any of the "Church Fathers" or by any student of the Word before the

IMPORTANT NOTE

In dealing with this subject matter, one must clearly differentiate between (1) Pre-Millennialism and Post-Millennialism, and (2) Pre-Tribulationism and Post-Tribulationism.

Post-Millennialists (and Amillennialists, for that matter) discount the Millennial Reign of Christ *per se*, and believe that the church will eventually conquer the world for Christ, at which time Christ will return and eternity will begin. Post-Millennialists and Amillennialists also discount the idea of an actual Tribulation Period of seven years.

Pre or post Tribulationism is a "sub-set" of Pre-Millennialism — i.e., the belief that there will be an actual reign of Christ for one thousand years prior to the advent of eternity and that there will actually be a seven year Tribulation Period at the "end of this present age -- and has reference only to when the Rapture itself will occur – before or after the Tribulation Period.

IN THIS CHAPTER WE ARE DEALING ONLY WITH PRE-TRIBULATIONISM AND POST-TRIBULATIONISM.

last century. Indeed, John Walvoord, a proponent of the Secret Rapture Theory, has admitted as much in his book, *The Rapture Question*. He writes:

"... it may be conceded that ... [the] pre-tribulationism [i.e. the Secret Rapture theory] of today is not found in the early church Fathers ..."

The *Didache* and the *Letters of Barnabas* [both written in the First Century] attest to the fact that the early Christian church fully expected the church to go through the Tribulation and to suffer at the hands of the Antichrist. Justin Martyr (100-165), Irenaeus (130-202), Tertullian (160-240), Hippolytus (170-236), Cyprian (200-258), Lactantius (260-330), and Cyril (315-286) all expected the same. Both Martin Luther and John Calvin believed the church would go through the Tribulation. More recently, such Christians as Charles Finney, George Whitefield, D.L. Moody, Charles Spurgeon, Matthew Henry, B.B. Warfield, Robert Gundry, Carl Henry, and Walter Martin (to name but a few) could not bring themselves to believe that the church would escape the Tribulation.

FLIPPANT AND OFFHAND ATTITUDES

- As a result of the controversy which now surrounds the question of the Secret Pre-tribulation Rapture Theory, many Christians have begun to take a very flippant and offhanded attitude towards the matter. Again and again one hears the rather mocking and acerbic remark, "I'm a pan-rapturist - I believe it will all 'pan out' in the end." Such statements expose a very nonchalant and indifferent attitude towards a question that the Bible considers very important. People who adopt such an attitude may someday live to regret it.

For those, however, who are serious about these matters, they need to make their minds up one way or the other (i.e., whether or not the church will go through the Tribulation), because if the church is not destined to go through the Tribulation, why should Christians take the Prophetic Scriptures seriously? - **again, why prepare for something – i.e., the Tribulation - that's not going to affect us personally?**

THE RAPTURE: A PLAY IN TWO ACTS?

Those who hold what is called the "Pre-Tribulation Rapture" interpretation of prophecy -- or for that matter, the "Mid-Tribulation Rapture," the "Partial Rapture" and the "Split Rapture" Theories -- teach the *incredibly convoluted, complex and perplexing notion* that the Second Coming of Christ will be in two stages:

- first, the **RAPTURE** (His coming **FOR** the saints), and
- later the **REVELATION** (His coming **WITH** the saints).

The interval between these two events is the seven-year period of Daniel's Seventieth Week - i.e., the Tribulation. [**We will concentrate initially only on the "Pre-Tribulation Rapture" Theory; but it should be noted that almost everything we have to say below applies with equal logic to the so-called Mid-Tribulation Rapture Theory, the Split Rapture Theory, and the Partial Rapture Theory; placing the time of the rapture at any time other than on "the last day" does not remove the problem that one is forced to deal with "two second comings" rather than one.**]

Those who assume that the Second Coming of Christ will be really two events rather than one - which is something that all adherents of the Pre-Tribulation, Mid-Tribulation, Partial Rapture and Split Rapture theories suppose - believe that verses such as Revelation 1:7. "Behold, He cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see Him," refer to the **REVELATION** - His coming in open power and glory.

The **RAPTURE**, on the other hand, is presented as a quiet, invisible and secret coming of Christ for His Church. The following quotations from Pre-Tribulation writers are representative of this interpretation:

"Quickly and **INVISIBLY**, unperceived by the world, the Lord will come as a thief in the night and catch away His waiting saints." (Silver, *The Lord's Return*, pg. 260.)

"His appearance in the clouds will be veiled to the human eye and **NO ONE WILL SEE HIM**. He will slip in, and slip out, move in to get His jewels and slip out as under the cover of night." (Roberts, *How to be Personally Prepared for the Second Coming of Christ*, pg. 341.)

"(The Rapture) will be a **SECRET** rapture - **QUIET, NOISELESS**, sudden as the steps of a thief in the night. All that the world will know will be that multitudes at once have gone." (Bishop, *The Doctrine of Grace*, pg. 341.)



THE RAPTURE IS TO BE A LOUD AND NOISY EVENT; NOT A SECRET AND HIDDEN AFFAIR

But do the Scriptures really teach that the Rapture will be a secret, invisible, and quiet event? Let's look at the main verse on the Rapture and see:

"For the Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a **SHOUT**, with the **VOICE** of the archangel, and with the **TRUMP** of God: **and the dead in Christ shall rise first (i.e., the resurrection): then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds (i.e., the rapture), to meet the Lord in the air.**" (I Thess. 4:16-17)



"For the Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a SHOUT, with the VOICE of the archangel, and with the TRUMP of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first (i.e., the resurrection): then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds (i.e., the rapture), to meet the Lord in the air." (I Thess. 4:16-17)

To us, these verses indicate anything but a quiet, secret rapture. Whether we take the "**shout**," the "**voice**," and the "**trump**" in a literal sense or as having a figurative meaning, either way, this passage does not convey the idea of a secret and quiet event. If anything, it would indicate that the coming of the Lord will be a loud, noisy, open and wondrous happening. Amid the sound of the Lord Himself descending from heaven with a shout, the voice of the archangel, and the trumpet of God, there will be the sounds of praise and rejoicing from the vast multitudes of saints caught up to meet the Lord. Where is any secrecy here? This is not the description of a hidden and quiet event. Nevertheless, in spite of every indication to the contrary, this verse is constantly used as a text for sermons which describe the Rapture as a secret, hidden, and quiet coming of

Christ.

The Scriptures do teach, of course, that Christ will return "as a thief in the night." ***This means that the time of His coming is unknown.*** It will come as a complete surprise to those that are not watching for His return. ***But the use of this term never indicates in any way that the event itself will be a secret and quiet occurrence.*** The "thief" passages are found in the words of Jesus, Peter and Paul, which we will now consider.

Jesus

First, let's look at the words of Jesus Himself: "But know this, that if the good man of the house had known in what watch the **THIEF** would come, he would have watched and would not have suffered

his house to be broken into. Therefore, be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of Man cometh." (Matt. 24:43, 44; also Lk. 12:39, 40) The return of Christ will be like the coming of a thief in the sense that we know not **WHEN** it will be. We must watch at all times. But there is nothing here to indicate the **EVENT ITSELF** will be secret. [**Remember here, Silver, Roberts, Bishop et. al. insist that both the time and the event will be secret; but obviously, according to this passage, once the thief arrives and begins "breaking up the house," the secrecy will end and the event will be known by all.**]



We are told to "watch," for we know not the time of His coming. He will come as a thief. But there is nothing here to indicate a secret and quiet coming of Christ in which He will mysteriously take believers out of this world so that no one will know what happened to them or who took them. The meaning is that He will **COME "as a thief,"** not that He will **ACT AS A THIEF.**

Instead of teaching that His coming would be shrouded in secrecy, Jesus actually warned against this concept: "If any man say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there; believe it not ... If they shall say ... behold, it is in the **SECRET** chambers; believe it not. For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth unto the west, so shall also the coming of the Son of Man be." (Matt 24:23, 26, 27) Whatever else may be included in these statements, one thing is certain; such wording is surely contrary to the idea of secrecy and quietness in connection with the coming of Christ.

Also in the context of Matthew 24, Jesus stressed that men do not know the day nor the hour of the Second Coming. (Matt. 24:36) It will be "as in the days of Noah" when people were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage - not expecting the destruction to fall. They "knew not **UNTIL** the flood came, and took them all away, so shall also the coming of the Son of Man be." (verses 38, 39) The wicked knew not until the flood came - but obviously when it came they knew it. It was no secret, quiet event. [**And again, it must be stressed that pre-tribulationists like Silver, Roberts and Bishop insist that both the timing and the event will be secret**] It was observed by believers and unbelievers alike.

"If therefore thou shalt not watch," Jesus said, "I will come on thee as a **THIEF**, and thou shalt not know what hour I shall come upon thee." (Rev. 3:3) "Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth." (Rev. 16:15) Here again is the warning to "watch," for we know not the time of His coming. He will come as a thief. But there is nothing here to indicate a secret and quiet coming of Christ in which He will mysteriously take believers out of this world so that no one will know what happened to them or who took them. The meaning is that He will **COME "as a thief,"** not that He will **ACT AS A THIEF.**

Peter

Next, we look at the words of Peter. Though scoffers will say: "Where is the promise of His coming?" Peter assures us that the day of the Lord will come. We do not know when, however, for "the day of the Lord will come **AS A THIEF IN THE NIGHT.**" (II Peter 3:10)

But it is evident that Peter did not mean that the event itself will be quiet, for he goes on to say that it will be accompanied with a great sound - "in which the heavens shall pass away with a **GREAT NOISE.**" Where is there any secrecy here? - and it should be emphasized that Peter is specifically talking about both the timing *and* the event as a loud and noisy affair. This is just the opposite of what Silver, Roberts and Bishop teach.

Paul

The final New Testament "thief" passage is found in the words of Paul. Turning again to the noted rapture passage (I Thess. 4), we find that speaking of the Lord's coming with a shout, the voice of the



"For when they shall say peace and safety; then SUDDEN DESTRUCTION

and safety; then **SUDDEN DESTRUCTION** cometh upon them, **as travail upon a woman with child**; and they shall not escape ... But ye, brethren, are **NOT IN DARKNESS**, that that day should overtake you as a thief;" (verses 3 and 4) for those that truly follow Christ will "watch at all times and seasons."

Paul continues with these words:

"For when they shall say peace and safety; then **SUDDEN DESTRUCTION** cometh upon them, **as travail upon a woman with child**; and they shall not escape ... But ye, brethren, are **NOT IN DARKNESS**, that that day should overtake you as a thief;" (verses 3 and 4) for those that truly follow Christ will "watch at all times and seasons."



PART 2: WHEN WILL THE RAPTURE BE?

WHEN WILL THE RAPTURE BE? BEFORE OR AFTER THE TRIBULATION?

Having now examined the rapture passage (I Thess. 4) and all of the "thief" passages, we fail to find any scriptural basis for the teaching that the Rapture will be a secret, invisible, quiet event. If anything, the evidence is to the contrary.

Where, then, do the Scriptures place the Rapture? - will it be before the Tribulation (Daniel's Seventieth Week - a period of seven years) or will it be at the end of this period?

TRIBULATION - GOD'S WAY OF DELIVERANCE

Shortly before His death, Jesus spoke these words to His disciples: "In the world ye shall have tribulation ..." (John 16:33) The verses that follow the prayer in which Jesus prayed for His disciples record what He prayed to the Heavenly Father. He said, "I pray **NOT** that thou **TAKE THEM OUT OF THE WORLD**, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil." (John 17:15)

Though it would be no easy task to take a stand for Jesus Christ, though they would be persecuted, though in the world they would have tribulation, yet Jesus did not pray that the Church would be taken out of the world. The Church was to remain in the world, but it would not be of the world.

Some might object, however, that Jesus was praying only for His immediate disciples of that time. But not so. "Neither pray I for these alone," He said, "but for them also which shall believe on me through their word." (verse 20) Does this not include us today? - have not we believed on Christ as a result of the message that was handed down to us from those original disciples of Christ? Indeed, we have. So Jesus was praying for us too. He said so. He prayed that we would be kept from the evil of the world, but He did not pray that we would be taken out of the world - even though in the world we would have tribulation.

Let us suppose for a moment that Jesus had told believers, "In the world there shall be tribulation, but I will pray that you will be taken out of the world." If Jesus said this, those who teach the Pre-Tribulation Rapture

Theory would have a basis for their position - and this statement would no doubt be quoted often as a proof text. But since this is **NOT** what the verse says - but just the **OPPOSITE** - surely this should be regarded as evidence against the idea of the special " Secret Pre-Tribulation Rapture" designed to take the Church out of this world so that it would escape the suffering and tribulation of the Antichrist.

THE CHURCH IS CALLED TO REMAIN UNTIL THE "END OF THE WORLD"

Instead of the Church being taken out of the world, Jesus taught that it would remain in the world to accomplish a definite purpose: to preach the Gospel. Jesus commissioned His disciples to "go ... and teach all nations" and in connection with this commission He promised, "Lo, I am with you always, even unto the **END** of the world (*Aion* - age)." (Matt. 28:19-20)

According to this, how long will the Church be in the world fulfilling this divine commission? The answer is that the Church will remain in the world until the **END** of the age. Surely His promise to be with the Church until the **END** of the age would be strange if it is His plan to remove the Church seven years before that time - or even three and a half years before, as those who subscribe to the Mid-Tribulation Rapture Theory suggest. If, when the end of the age comes, the Church would no longer be on the earth, a promise such as this would be meaningless.

Parable of the Wheat and the Tares

Earlier, in the Book of Matthew, Jesus made it very clear that the righteous would not be separated from the wicked until the end of the age. Jesus spoke a parable about "a man which sowed good seed in his field" and while men slept, "his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat." When the crop had grown a little, the servants discovered what had happened. So the servants of the householder came and said, "Wilt thou then that we go and gather them (i.e., the tares) up?" But He said, "Nay, lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of the harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together **first** the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into the barn." (Matt. 13:24-30)

We are not left to speculate as to the proper meaning of this parable, for Jesus Himself gave the interpretation. The "good seed" (the wheat) is sown by "the Son of Man" - Jesus Christ. The tares, "the children of the wicked one," are sown by the enemy - the devil." They are sown in the same field - "the world," where both grow together until the harvest. And when will this be? - "the harvest is the **END OF THE AGE**." (verses 37-39)



Jesus said that "**BOTH**" would grow "**TOGETHER**" until the "**END OF THE WORLD**" - and **THEN** the harvest would occur, producing the great separation. The harvest occurs at the end of the age, and it is at the time of the harvest that the rapture will occur - right after the tares have been gathered up and burned (Matthew 13:24-30). This is the Biblical teaching. But the Pre-Tribulation Rapture position says that **BOTH** will **NOT** grow together in the field until the end of the age, for they teach that the wheat portion will be harvested sooner, being separated from the wicked seven years **BEFORE** the end of the world (or three and a half years before as the Mid-Tribulation Rapture Theory so ridiculously postulates)

"As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire, so shall it be in **THE END OF THE WORLD**. The Son of Man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of His kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; and shall cast them into a furnace of fire ... **THEN** (after the tares are gathered out) shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the Kingdom of their Father."

(verses 40-43) Plainly, the time of separation between those who do iniquity and the righteous is at the **END** of this age.

Jesus said that **"BOTH"** would grow **"TOGETHER"** until the **"END OF THE WORLD"** - and **THEN** the harvest would occur, producing the great separation. The harvest occurs at the end of the age, and it is at the time of the harvest that the rapture will occur - right **after** the tares have been gathered up and burned. (Matthew 13:24-30) This is the Biblical teaching. But the Pre-Tribulation Rapture position says that **BOTH** will **NOT** grow together in the field until the end of the age, for they teach that the wheat portion will be harvested sooner, being separated from the wicked seven years **BEFORE** the end of the world (or three and a half years before as the Mid-Tribulation Rapture Theory so ridiculously postulates).

In other words, instead of teaching that the separation of the wheat and the tares will be at "the end of the world," those that hold the Secret Rapture position say that the wheat will be gathered **FIRST**, and then, seven years later, the tares will be gathered out. This is the point that C.I. Scofield attempts to make in his footnote on page 1016 of the Scofield Reference Bible: "At the end of this age (v. 40), the tares are set apart for burning, but **FIRST** the wheat is gathered into the barn." But if anything might be implied as coming first, it would be that the wicked would be separated out first. For in the parable portion it said, "Gather ye together **FIRST** the **TARES** (for destruction), but gather the wheat into the barn." (Matthew 13:30)

What? The Scripture says, "First the tares," Scofield says just the opposite. He says, "First the wheat is gathered." Such direct contradiction to what the Bible itself says ought to be enough to make any Christian suspicious. And such a twisting of terms to uphold a theory ought to immediately make us see how weak the teaching of a rapture seven years before the end of the age really is.

We repeat: according to Jesus, the righteous and the wicked will both be in the world until the harvest - "the end of the world." And if the great separation is not until the end of the world, the idea of the Church being removed from the earth seven (or even three and a half years) before that time is an impossibility.

The Parable of the Good Fish & the Bad Fish

Looking further in Matthew 13, we find another parable and its interpretation which stresses the end of the world as the time of the great separation. Jesus likened the kingdom to a net which was cast into the sea. It gathered fish of every kind - some good and some bad. Finally, the good were placed into vessels (pots or containers) and the bad were cast away. And **WHEN**, according to the interpretation that Jesus gave, will this great separation occur? "So shall it be at the **END** of the world, the angels shall come forth and sever the wicked from among the just, and shall cast them into the furnace of fire" (Matt. 13:47-50) - and once again, the implication here is that the bad fish are separated out **first**, leaving the good fish which are then placed in separate vessels (pots or containers). How then can it possibly be maintained that Christians (the good fish) are separated out seven years (or 3 1/2 years) **before** the bad fish (the unbelievers)? Such thinking is absurd, even on the face of it!

We see, then, that the parable of the wheat and the tares, as well as the parable of the good fish and the bad fish, clearly pinpoint the time of separation as the end of the world. It should also be noted that the time of this event is based on the words that Jesus gave in explaining these parables. This is important, for doctrine must always be based upon



We see, then, that the parable of the wheat and the tares, as well as the parable of the good fish and the bad fish, clearly pinpoint the time of separation as the end of the world.

clear statements, not upon symbolic or parabolic expressions which might be capable of several meanings. According to Jesus, at the end of the world (not seven years before the end of the world), those that belong to Him will be spared, while destruction shall fall upon the wicked.

The Days of Lot

Jesus further likened this time to the days of Lot. "As it was in the days of Lot; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they built" - those common routine things that people have been doing all along, not expecting any catastrophe. "But the same **DAY** that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all. Even thus shall it be in the **DAY** when the Son of Man is revealed." (Luke 17:28-30)

Even as Lot, the believer, was spared and all the unbelievers of Sodom and Gomorrah were destroyed, so when Christ returns, believers will be spared (caught up to meet the Lord in the air) while **THAT "SAME DAY"** fiery destruction shall fall upon the unbelievers. Needless to say, this passage does **NOT** say that Lot went out of Sodom and then, seven years later, fiery destruction fell upon them. No, it says that all these things happened the **SAME DAY**.

The Days of Noah

Jesus also likened His Second Coming to the destruction of the flood in the days of Noah. "But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of Man be. For as in the days that were before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage ... and knew not until the flood came and took them all away - or, as Luke's account says, "destroyed them all," (Luke 17:27) ... "So shall also the coming of the Son of Man be" (Matt. 24:37-40). When the flood came, Noah was spared and the unbelievers were destroyed. That destruction produced a great separation. So shall it be at the Second Coming of Christ. Christians will be caught up to meet Christ; unbelievers will be destroyed. Though the "world" was formerly destroyed by water, Peter now points out that the destruction that the world now faces will be by **FIRE**. (II Peter 3:6-7)

The Church Is Called to Remain until the "Day of the Lord" or "The Day of God"

Peter had personally heard Jesus give the promise: "I will come again, and **receive you unto myself**." (John 14:3) Years had passed and apparently some began to scoff at this promise, saying: "Where is the **PROMISE** of His coming?" To this, Peter replied: "**THE DAY OF THE LORD WILL COME** ..." (II Pet. 3:4-10) Let us notice the way in which Peter said this promise would be fulfilled: "The day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night: **IN THE WHICH** the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up ... all these things shall be dissolved ..." (II Peter 3:10-11) **Peter believed the coming of the Lord (i.e., the rapture) would be at the very end, when the present "heavens and earth shall pass away," at the end of the age.**

"Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved," Peter continues, "what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godliness, **LOOKING FOR** and hastening unto the coming of the day of God wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?" (verses 11 and 12) **This day shall bring destruction upon unbelievers and deliverance for those who believe. But if believers were to be taken out of the world seven years BEFORE the end, why would Peter exhort them to be "looking for" the coming of the day of God in which the heavens shall pass away?** Surely he would not attempt to encourage them by something that will happen at the **END** of the age, if their real hope was an event to take place seven years earlier.

According to Peter, "the day of the Lord" which will come "as a thief in the night" is the time when the heavens shall pass away and the earth shall melt with fervent heat. And according to Paul, "the day of the Lord" which "cometh as a thief in the night" (the **SAME** expression) is the



The earth shall melt with fervent heat

time of the Rapture: "The Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a shout ... then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up ... in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. Wherefore comfort one another with these words. But of the times and seasons [when this shall happen], brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you. For yourselves know perfectly well that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape." (I Thess. 4:16-17; 5:3) This passage is all connected together.

A study of II Peter 3 and I Thessalonians 4-5 plainly reveals that the "day of the Lord that cometh as a thief in the night" is the time when Christ will descend from heaven with a shout, believers will be caught up to meet the Lord in the air, destruction will fall upon the unbelievers and the present heavens and earth shall pass away with a great noise.

The Church Is Called to Remain until the "Last Day"

Jesus also linked His Second Coming with the time when heaven and earth shall pass away. "Heaven and earth shall pass away ... But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels in heaven, but my Father only ... Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come." (Matt. 24:35-36, 42) This passage clearly refers to the time when Christ will return and gather believers - the time of which **NO MAN KNOWETH**, and for which we must "watch." Did Jesus say that this would happen before the seven-year tribulation period? No. Instead, this passage points to the **END** of the age - when heaven and earth shall pass away - as the time when Christ will return.



The Last Day

Even the ancient Job implied that the Resurrection would not take place until the heavens shall pass away - the end of the age. "Man dieth, Man lieth down, and riseth not: **TILL THE HEAVENS BE NO MORE**, they shall not awake, nor be raised from their sleep." (Job 14:10-12; 19:26-27)

Expressions such as "till the heavens be no more," "heaven and earth shall pass away," and similar expressions all seem to indicate the very end of things as we know them now - the end of the age. Until that time, the dead shall not be resurrected. This conclusion is also seen in the Scriptures which say the Resurrection will occur on the "**LAST DAY**."

Martha, for example, believed her brother, Lazarus, would "rise again in the resurrection **AT THE LAST DAY**." (John 6:39)

"And this is the will of Him that sent me," Jesus said, "that everyone which seeth the Son, and believeth on Him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up **AT THE LAST DAY**." (John 6:40, 44) And again, He repeated the words in verse 54: "I will raise him up **AT THE LAST DAY**."

With this evidence in mind, certain conclusions are apparent. Since the "catching up" or Rapture occurs at the same time as the Resurrection of the dead in Christ (I Thess. 4:16, 17), it is plain to see that the Rapture will take place **AT THE LAST DAY** and not seven years (or 3 1/2 years) **BEFORE** the last day.

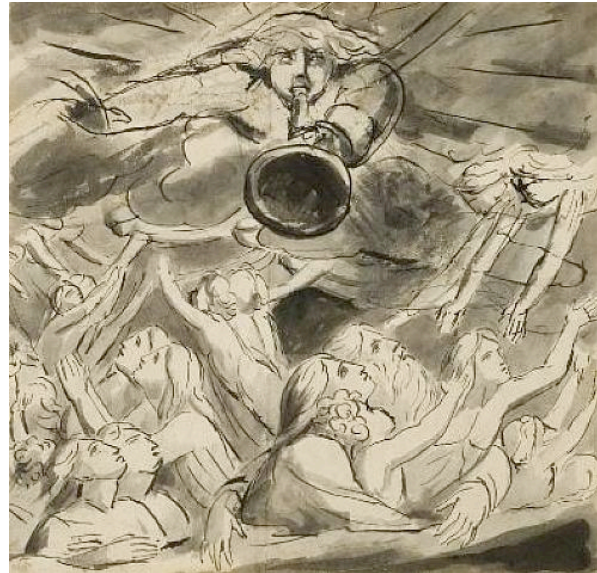
The Church is Called to Remain until the "Last Trump"

Turning again to I Thessalonians 4:16-17, we read, "For the Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the **TRUMP** of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air." Now turn to 1 Corinthians 15:52, "In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, **AT THE LAST TRUMP**: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed."

Notice three things that are mentioned here: (1) the **TRUMPET** sounds; (2) the **RESURRECTION** of the dead in Christ; (3) the living saints are **CHANGED** (which all agree, is when this mortal puts on immortality and believers rise to meet the Lord in the air). Both of these passages mention the sounding of the trumpet, but the latter passage specifies that this trumpet is the **LAST TRUMPET**. Bearing this in mind, we turn to Revelation 8:2 in which we read, "And I saw the seven angels which stood before God; and to them were given seven trumpets - so the **LAST** trumpet (in linking this passage with the others) would be the seventh.

Let us now notice what events are connected with the sound of the **LAST** trumpet: "The seventh angel sounded and there were great voices in heaven, saying the Kingdoms of this world have become the Kingdoms of our Lord, and of His Christ; and He shall reign for ever and ever ... And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and **THE TIME OF THE DEAD**, that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give **REWARD** unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name, small and great; and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth." (Rev. 11:15-18) Again, we notice the same three things that were included in the other three passages: (1) the **TRUMPET** sounds (the seventh - the **LAST TRUMPET**); (2) the time of the dead to be raised - the **RESURRECTION**); and (3) the saints **REWARDED**, which would include their having changed from mortality to immortality; caught up to meet the Lord in the air.

These things indicate that the Rapture will be at the **END** of the age; at the **LAST DAY**, at the **LAST TRUMP**. But according to the Pre-Tribulationists, the Rapture would have to take place at the time of the **FIRST** trumpet or **EVEN BEFORE**, since - according to this interpretation - the Church will be gone when the trumpets of Revelation sound. Revelation 11:18 says that the sounding of the seventh trumpet - the **LAST** trumpet - will be the time of the dead to be resurrected. God will then "give reward unto ... the saints." Where, then, is there any room for the idea that before any of these trumpets sound the saints will have already been raptured to heaven to be rewarded?



These things indicate that the Rapture will be at the **END** of the age; at the **LAST DAY**, at the **LAST TRUMP**. But according to the Pre-Tribulationists, the Rapture would have to take place at the time of the **FIRST** trumpet or **EVEN BEFORE**, since - according to this interpretation - the Church will be gone when the trumpets of Revelation sound. Revelation 11:18 says that the sounding of the seventh trumpet - the **LAST** trumpet - will be the time of the dead to be resurrected.

Jesus made it clear that there will be no "secret" coming before His coming in glory with the holy angels. "Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me and my words in this adulterous and sinful generation," He said, "of him also shall the Son of Man be ashamed, when He cometh in the glory of His Father with the holy angels." (Mark 8:38) In that day, Christ shall be ashamed of some, of others He

will not be ashamed. Some will be accepted and some will be rejected. **WHEN?** "When He cometh in the glory of His Father." It is agreed that the coming of Christ in glory with the holy angels is at the **END** of the age, and this verse actually shows that there will be no secret coming prior to this. Why? Because if there had been a secret coming of Christ seven years before His coming in glory with the angels, whether Christ would be ashamed of people or not would have **ALREADY** taken place.

The Church is Called to Remain until Christ Is Revealed

Finally, the Christians at Thessalonica were enduring "persecutions and tribulations" and were being troubled by unbelievers. But Paul encouraged them with the truth that they would be given rest from their troubles "... when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with His mighty angels, in flaming fire taken vengeance on them that know not God," for "He shall come to be glorified in His saints." (see II Thess. I:7-10)

In this passage, we notice - as in the others - that the reward of the righteous and the destruction that shall befall the wicked are interwoven with each other as to time. **BOTH** occurring at the deliverance of His troubled saints when He comes in **FLAMING FIRE**. No "secret" rapture here.

When will the Lord render vengeance to the wicked on one hand and comfort to the saints on the other? The answer is clear. "**WHEN** the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with His mighty angels, in flaming fire, taking vengeance on them which know not God." The time of His being glorified in His saints is also the time when destruction will befall the wicked. There is no interval of seven years (or even 3 1/2 years) between the two. It does not say that Christ will come to be glorified in His saints and then come again seven (or 3 1/2) years later to bring destruction upon the oppressors.

PART 3: WILL THE RETURN OF CHRIST BE IN TWO STAGES

When Jesus ascended into heaven and His disciples stood watching, two angels said, "Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven. This same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in **LIKE MANNER** as ye have **SEEN** Him go into heaven." (Acts 1:11) According to this verse, the same Jesus that those disciples knew and loved will return "in like manner" as they saw Him go into heaven. They did not see Him go into heaven in two separate ascensions, and so it is clearly implied that His return will not be in two separate comings. "Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many - at His **FIRST** coming - "and unto them that look for Him shall He appear the **SECOND** time without sin unto salvation." (Heb. 9:28) Here we read of the **SECOND** coming of Christ. Those who hold that Christ will return for His Church, and return **AGAIN** seven years later, are actually teaching a doctrine not only of the **SECOND** coming of Christ, but a **THIRD** coming as well. However, the idea of a **THIRD** coming of Christ is nowhere mentioned in the Bible. Such terminology is completely foreign to the Scriptures.



When Jesus ascended into heaven and His disciples stood watching, two angels said, "Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven. This same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in LIKE MANNER as ye have SEEN Him go into heaven." (Acts 1:11)

Some explain that they believe in **ONE** Second Coming, but that it will be in "two stages." However, this does not really solve the problem. If the Rapture is a separate "stage" from the coming of Christ in power and glory, how could each stage be the **SECOND COMING**? If they are separate and distinct events, each could not be the Second Coming, for the coming that would follow the second would still be the third.

But some teach that there will be **TWO** second comings. Surely this is a contradiction in terms. The Scriptures speak of the Lord's Second Coming (singular), never of the second comings (plural). We repeat, the term "two second comings" is in itself contradictory.

FALSE ARGUMENT #1: THE RAPTURE IS NOT THE SECOND COMING OF THE LORD

In attempting to explain this difficulty which the Pre-Tribulationists must face, we have actually heard it argued that the Rapture is not the **COMING** of the Lord. One writer puts it this way: "Strictly speaking, the Rapture is **NOT THE SECOND COMING AT ALL**. The Second Coming is the visible, local, bodily appearing of Christ in the clouds of heaven as He returns to this earth ... in power and glory." (Boyd, *Ages and Dispensations*, pg. 60)

Another says, "The thrilling event which will both mark the end of the day of Grace and open the door of the Great Tribulation is the Rapture ... Specifically speaking, **THIS IS NOT THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST**. Rather, this is the Rapture, or the catching up of the true church." (Orr, *Antichrist, Armageddon, and the End of the World*, pg. 9)

Another emphatically states that the Rapture is **NOT** the Second Coming and that "the Scriptures referring to the Rapture could **NOT** refer to the second coming." (Hall, *Prophecy Marches On*, Vol. 2, pgs. 36, 39)

According to these Pre-Tribulation writers, the Rapture will take place first, and the **COMING** of Christ will take place seven years later. But attempting to make the Rapture a **SEPARATE** and earlier event from the coming of Christ is a teaching that is totally contrary to the united testimony of the Bible.

For example, Jesus said, "Be ye therefore also ready for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of Man **COMETH**." (Matt. 24:44) Why should Jesus warn about being ready for the **COMING** of the Son of Man, if really what we are to be ready for is a Secret Rapture that is to take place seven years (or even 3 1/2 years, as the Mid-Tribulation Rapture people so senselessly contend) **BEFORE** His coming?

This same point can be seen in Revelation 16:15: "Behold, I **COME** as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth." Why would such a warning be given about his **COMING** if seven years **BEFORE** his **COMING** believers would have already been taken to heaven?

Or notice Hebrews 10:36-37: "For ye have need of patience, that after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise. For yet a little while, and He that shall **COME** will **COME**, and will not tarry." Believers are thus exhorted to be patient until the **COMING** of Christ. But why point them to the **COMING** of the Lord if their real hope was something that was to occur seven years earlier? "Be patient then, brethren, unto the **COMING** of the Lord. (James 5:7) Again, why exhort the brethren to be patient unto the **COMING** of the Lord, if a Secret Rapture **BEFORE** His coming was when they would be gathered unto Him?

Jesus said, "Occupy till I **COME**." (Luke 19:13) But how could the **CHURCH** occupy until he **COMES** if the Church will be taken away seven years **BEFORE** His coming? [**Once again, please remember that, according to Pre-Tribulationists, the "Coming" of the Lord is the event which is supposed to happen at the end of the Tribulation, while the Rapture occurs seven years earlier at the beginning of the Tribulation - see Ord, Boyd, Hall, etc.**]

NOTE

Please bear in mind that in reading this material, that - according to the Pre-Tribulationists - the rapture is NOT the "COMING" of the Lord, which they believe is the appearing of the Lord with the saints and all the holy angels at the end of the Tribulation Period.

Paul speaks of Christians as "waiting for the **COMING** of our Lord Jesus Christ." (I Cor. 1:7) If Paul believed Christians would be caught up to heaven in a Secret Rapture seven years before the Lord's **COMING**, why did he not speak of Christians as waiting for that? Why would he tell them to wait for something that would take place seven years after they had already been raptured? Obviously, to Paul, the coming of the Lord and the Rapture were considered as one and the same event.

Paul prayed that the Christians at Thessalonica would be "preserved blameless unto the **COMING** of our Lord Jesus Christ." (I Thess. 5:23) Again, the event for which they were watching was the "**COMING**" of Christ. Why pray for them to be preserved blameless unto the coming of Christ if the Rapture is an event that will take place seven years before the Lord's coming?

Such expressions as these we have given - "be ready for the coming of the Lord," "watch for the coming of the Lord," "be patient for His coming," "waiting for His coming," "preserved unto His coming," "occupy until His coming," etc. - all show that it is when Christ **COMES** that believers are gathered to meet the Lord. In view of this, the concept that the **RAPTURE** is a **SEPARATE** event from the **COMING** of the Lord is simply not true. The Rapture of believers to meet the Lord in the air and the coming of the Lord are one and the same event.

FALSE ARGUMENT #2: THE MISUSE OF THE GREEK

But what about the **MEANING** of the Greek words that are used to describe the Second Coming? Those who believe that Christ will return in two separate stages, commonly teach that a study of the original Greek makes this distinction clear. One writer, for example, says, "The **TWO PHASES** of Christ's Second Coming are **CLEARLY** distinguished in the Greek. The **PAROUSIA** ... is His coming for His saints. The **APOKALUPSIS** (the revealing, unveiling, making manifest) is His coming with the saints." (Sabiers, *Where are the Dead?* pgs. 123-124)

But instead of the Greek terms used in describing the Second Coming indicating two separate events, we find that these terms are used **INTERCHANGEABLY** in such a way that they show there is but **ONE** Second Coming - **NOT TWO!**

φίλοι, κακῶν μὲν ὅστις ἔμπε
ἐπίσταται βροτοῖσιν ὡς ὅταν
κακῶν ἐπέλθῃ πάντα δειμαίν
ὅταν δ' ὁ δαίμων εὐροῇ, πεπ

Misuse of the Greek

The following is a list of the six words that are used to describe the Second Coming of Christ and the shades of meaning they present:

- **PAROUSIA** - This word stresses the actual personal presence of one who comes and arrives. It is used in James 5:7 "Be patient ... unto the **COMING** of the Lord ..."

- **APOKALUPSIS** - This word stresses appearing, revelation. It is used in II Thess. 1:7 - "The Lord shall be **REVEALED** from heaven with His mighty angels ..."
- **EPIPHANEIA** - This word means manifestation and speaks of the glory that will attend Christ when He comes. It is used in I Timothy 6:14 - "The **APPEARING** of our Lord Jesus Christ ..."
- **PHANEROO** - This word means to render apparent. It is used in I John 3:2 - "When He shall **APPEAR** we shall be like Him."
- **ERCHOMAI** - This word indicates the act of coming, to come from one place to another. It is used in Luke 19:13 - "Occupy till I **COME**."
- **HEKO** - This word stresses the point of arrival, as "I am come and I am now here." It is used in Revelation 2:25 - "Hold fast till I **COME**."

PAROUSIA

This first word on our list, **PAROUSIA**, is the one most commonly used in reference to the "first stage" of the second advent or Rapture as opposed to the words **APOKALUPSIS** or **EPIPHANEIA** which are supposed to refer to the "second stage" of the second advent or coming of the Lord. **PAROUSIA** stresses the actual personal presence of one that has come and arrived. There is nothing in this word to convey the idea of secrecy. Paul, for example, was comforted by the "coming (**PAROUSIA**) of Titus" who brought word to him from the Corinthian Christians. (II Cor. 7:6) Likewise he spoke of the "coming (**PAROUSIA**) of Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaicus." (I Cor. 16:17) In writing to the Philippians, Paul said he would be "coming (**PAROUSIA**) to see them again." (Phil. 1:26)

Paul used this word in the noted "Rapture" chapter which speaks of the "coming (**PAROUSIA**) of the Lord" when the dead in Christ will be raised and believers will be caught up to meet the Lord in the air. (I Thess. 4:15-17) But was the **PAROUSIA** here to be a Pre-Tribulational coming? No! Turning to Paul's second letter to the Thessalonian believers, Paul again wrote about "the coming (**PAROUSIA**) of our Lord" and "our gathering together unto Him." (II Thess. 2:1) Here he explained that the "**PAROUSIA**" will not take place until **AFTER THE MAN OF SIN IS REVEALED AND HAS CARRIED OUT HIS EVIL WORK**: "The Lord shall destroy [the man of sin] with the brightness of His coming (**PAROUSIA**)." (II Thess. 2:8)

According to this, the coming (**PAROUSIA**) of the Lord, the Resurrection and the Rapture, will come **AFTER** the reign of the man of sin - **NOT BEFORE**.

In II Peter 3, we find more proof that the "**PAROUSIA**" is not a secret coming that will take place **BEFORE** our Lord's coming in flaming fire and glory. According to Peter, "the promise of His coming (**PAROUSIA**)" will be fulfilled when "the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat." (verses 11 and 12) The word "**PAROUSIA**" in these places obviously cannot refer to a secret rapture seven years before the end because it speaks of the earth as we know it being destroyed, which would be impossible if one supposes that the earth is to continue on for seven more years **AFTER** His *Parousia*.

Instead of the Rapture being a secret and invisible coming to be followed later by the Revelation, an open and visible coming, the Scriptures show that the Rapture and the Revelation are one and the same event - not two.

APOKALUPSIS

The word that is translated "revelation" in connection with Christ's return is **APOKALUPSIS**, which stresses appearing, revelation. Notice its use in II Thess. 1:7-10: "The Lord Jesus shall be

REVEALED (APOKALUPSIS) from heaven with His mighty angels, in flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God ... when He shall come to be glorified in His saints." According to this, the time when Christ is **REVEALED** in flaming fire is also the time when He comes to be glorified in His saints. If the Rapture had taken place seven years before this, the saints would have already been glorified.

Peter also spoke of the revelation of Christ in I Peter 1:13: "Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the **REVELATION (APOKALUPSIS)** of Jesus Christ." Again, it is evident that the Rapture is not an earlier event to take place seven years before the "Revelation." If this had been the case, these instructions about being sober and hoping until the **REVELATION (Apokalupsis)** of Christ would be meaningless. It would not be necessary for believers to hope to the end for the grace to be brought to them if they had already been raptured (*Parousia*) seven years earlier.

Likewise in verse 7, Peter spoke of Christians as being "found unto praise and honor and glory at the **APPEARING** (the revelation, same word, **APOKALUPSIS**) of Jesus Christ." But according to the Secret Rapture position, Christians will have already been taken to heaven and judged **BEFORE** the **REVELATION**. This is not what the Bible says. Christians are pointed to the appearing or **REVELATION** of Christ, a fact which clearly indicates that the Rapture **IS** the Revelation.

We learn from these verses that the **APOKALUPSIS** - the **REVELATION** - is when Christians will be gathered; this is when they will meet the Lord; this is the day for which they are waiting. The Rapture is **NOT** one event and the Revelation a different event. Instead of two phases being "clearly distinguished in the Greek" by the terms **PAROUSIA** and **APOKALUPSIS**, a study of these words and the context in which they are used reveals no such distinction whatsoever. To the contrary, both are used in a way that points us to **ONE** event, the Second Coming of Christ at the end of the age.

Instead of the Greek terms indicating two second comings, just the opposite is the case. This should be carefully noted. We know that the **PAROUSIA** is the **SAME** event as the **APOKALUPSIS** (Revelation), not only by the actual context in which these words are used (as we have seen), but by the way they are used **INTERCHANGEABLY**.

In Matthew 24:37, for example, we read: "But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming (**PAROUSIA**) of the Son of Man be." Luke's account of the **SAME** passage says, "As it was in the days of Noah ... even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of Man is **REVEALED (APOKALUPSIS)**." (Luke 17:26, 30) This shows us that the **COMING (PAROUSIA)** of Christ and the **REVELATION (APOKALUPSIS)** of Christ are the same event.

EPIPHANEIA

Another word used in describing the return of Christ is **EPIPHANEIA**, meaning "manifestation" and the glory that will attend our Lord when He comes and which, like the word **APOKALUPSIS**, has been used by Pre-Tribulationists to mean the "second stage" of the Second Advent. This word is not applied to a secret, Pre-Tribulational coming, for Christ will slay the man of sin with "the **BRIGHTNESS (EPIPHANEIA)** of His coming." (II Thess. 2:8)

Bearing this in mind, let us look at I Timothy 6:14, 15, in which this same word appears: "... keep this commandment without spot, unrebukeable, unto the **APPEARING (EPIPHANEIA)** of our Lord Jesus Christ; which in His times He shall shew, who is the blessed and the only Potentate, the King of Kings, and Lord of Lords."

Now we ask: Why would Christians be exhorted to keep the commandment until the **EPIPHANEIA** - the glorious appearing - if seven years before this there was to be a hidden, secret coming to take the Church out of the world? The **EPIPHANEIA** is when the man of sin is slain, it

is when Christ comes in **OPEN GLORY AND POWER**, and it is until this time that Christians are exhorted to remain faithful. Such instructions would be completely out of place if Christians were to be raptured several years before the **EPIPHANEIA**.

PHANEROO

The fourth word on our list is **PHANEROO**, meaning "to render apparent" - which also refers to Christ's coming in open power and glory. "When the Chief Shepherd shall **APPEAR (PHANEROO)**, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away." (I Peter 5:4) This verse does not say that when the Chief Shepherd shall appear - rendered apparent - that Christians will have **ALREADY** been raptured and crowned. No! The rewarding is when Christ shall **APPEAR**, and not at a supposed invisible coming seven years before.

John, like Peter, makes the same point: "We know that when He shall **APPEAR (PHANEROO)**, we shall be like Him; for we shall see Him as He is." (I John 3:2) As Christians, it is when Christ shall come and **APPEAR** - be rendered apparent - that we shall be like Him, not at a supposed invisible coming.

ERCHOMAI

Looking to Matthew 24 again, we find that **PAROUSIA** is used to describe the **SAME** event as **ERCHOMAI**. "But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the **COMING (PAROUSIA)** of the Son of Man be ... Therefore be ye also ready; for in such an hour as ye think not, the Son of Man **COMETH (ERCHOMAI)**." (Matt. 24:37, 44)

HEKO

ERCHOMAI, in turn, is used to describe the **SAME** event as **HEKO**, for in Hebrew 10:37, we read; "For yet a little while, and He that shall **COME (ERCHOMAI)** will **COME (HEKO)**, and will not tarry." Note again, as in the case of **APOKALUPSIS** and **EPIPHANEIA**, the way these words are all used interchangeably.

HEKO and **PAROUSIA** are used together by Peter. In answer to the question: "Where is the promise of His **COMING (PAROUSIA)**?" Peter answers: "The day of the Lord will **COME (HEKO)** as a thief in the night." (II Peter 3:10)

The word **PAROUSIA** and **EPIPHANEIA** are linked together in II Thess. 2:8, in which we read that the man of sin will be destroyed by the **BRIGHTNESS (EPIPHANEIA)** of Christ's **COMING (PAROUSIA)**.

And finally, we noticed that the **PAROUSIA** is also the **PHANEROO**, for both expressions are used in the **SAME** verse, referring to the **SAME** event: "And now, little children, abide in Him, that when He shall **APPEAR (PHANEROO)**, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before Him at His **COMING (PAROUSIA)**." (I John 2:28)

NOTE

We are more than cognizant that the material we are presenting in this chapter is difficult to "wade through." But we urge you to take the time to do so; It is imperative that you grasp what the Bible is saying here COMPLETELY and THOROUGHLY; otherwise, when challenged to give an account of yourself regarding this matter, you will not be able to do so. The Bible says that we must be prepared to defend our Faith "in season and out of season" and that we should be able to "reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine." (2 Timothy 4:2)

Thus, we see that **ALL** of these Greek words are used **INTERCHANGEABLY**. As in English, the different words present varied shades of meaning. But trying to split the Second Coming of Christ into "two stages" or "comings" on a supposed distinction in these Greek terms is completely artificial.

PART 4: COMING "FOR" AND COMING "WITH THE SAINTS"

According to the Pre-Tribulational interpretation, Christ will come in a secret rapture **"FOR"** His saints, take them to heaven for seven years (or, as in the case of the Mid-Tribulational Rapture, 3 1/2 years), and then come **"WITH"** the saints. The argument is, of course, that since He will come **WITH** His saints, He will have to come at an earlier time **FOR** the saints. But let us take a closer look at this argument. First of all, does the Bible anywhere use the expression "coming **FOR** the saints?"



Christ: Coming with the saints in glory

Repeatedly, we have heard statements like this: "Jesus is coming back **FOR** His Church without spot and wrinkle," or "Soon Jesus will return **FOR** His Church to take it out of this world," or "The Lord comes in the Rapture **FOR** His Church; after the Tribulation period, He comes **WITH** His Church," etc. But the fact is, the Bible never uses the expression, "coming **FOR** the saints." **NEVER!** Surely, then, an interpretation that continually uses an expression that the Bible never uses should be subjected to close examination. Once a person has the concept in mind that there will be a special coming of Christ **FOR** the Church, he then reads about believers being "caught up" and immediately concludes that they will be caught up to heaven. This is not what the passage says at all.

The Rapture passage, I Thess. 4:16-17, says that believers will be "caught up ... in the clouds to meet the Lord." **The place of meeting will be just above the earth - in the clouds, in the air.** These verses explain **WHERE** believers will meet the Lord. The place of meeting will be in the clouds, in the air. There is nothing in these verses to indicate that Christ will then turn around and take the Church back to heaven for seven years.

Notice that believers will rise to **MEET** the Lord. The word that is here translated **MEET** is a word that was used in reference to the coming of a king or governor to visit a city. As he approached, the citizens would go out to meet him and then escort him on the last part of his journey into the city; the word that is here translated **MEET** has precisely the same meaning here. As the Lord descends from heaven, believers will rise to **MEET** the Lord in the air in order to come **WITH** Him as He **CONTINUES** to earth.

THE USE OF THE WORD "APANTESIS" (MEET)

The word **MEET** in this verse is *APANTESIS*. It is used in two other passages which we will now consider to see exactly how this word is used in the Scriptures.

The parable of the five wise and the five foolish virgins

Matthew 25:1-6: "Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to **MEET** the Bridegroom ... And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the Bridegroom cometh; go ye out to **MEET** Him." In this parable the five wise and the five foolish virgins were to take their lamps and go out to **MEET** the Bridegroom. What for? To have Him turn around and take them back to where He had come from? No! If this had been the case, He would have been coming to meet **THEM**, instead of them going out to meet **HIM**.



Five wise and five foolish virgins

The plain and simple truth is that when the Bridegroom approached, they went out to meet Him so as to escort him back to where they had been waiting to the place where the marriage was to be held. They went out to **MEET** Him, and after meeting Him, they returned "**WITH** Him." Notice here how the word **MEET** was used.

Paul's Journey to Rome

Acts 28:14-16: "And so we went toward Rome. And from thence, when the brethren heard of us, they came to **MEET** us as far as Appii Forum and the Three Taverns ... And then we came (continued on) to Rome ..." Here the same point is seen. As Paul journeyed to Rome, certain brethren came out to meet him and then accompany him as he entered the city. It does not say that Paul got almost to Rome and then after meeting these brethren, took them back to where he had been. No, he continued on to Rome with them.

Let us suppose these men who met Paul had explained to the others where they were going: "We have heard that Paul is coming to our city; and we are going out to **MEET** him and will come **WITH** him." Would any have understood this to mean that they would meet Paul, go back to where Paul had come from, spend several years there with him and then return once again with Paul to Rome? No. None would ever get such a meaning. Yet, this is exactly the kind of "proof" that is offered for the idea of two second comings. We are told that since the saints will come **WITH** Christ, that in going out to **MEET** Him, they must be taken back to where He was, then wait several years so as to come **WITH** Him! **NONSENSE!** In the Scriptural examples, people went out to **MEET** someone and escort that person to the place where he was going. In a modern context, it would not be unlike going out to the curb to meet your grandparents who had traveled a long way in their car to be with you, hug and kiss them, collect their luggage and escort them back into the house. In no case are two stages, or two comings, implied by this word. There is no room for a period of seven years between the going out to **MEET** the one that is coming and the coming **WITH** him as He continues on to His destination.



Site of the Three Taverns along the Apian Way where Paul met the disciples who had come out to meet him and accompany him on to Rome.

Seeing, then, how the word **MEET** is used in the Scriptures, we understand that when Christ comes, believers will be "caught up ... to meet the Lord in the air" and from there will descend "with Him." So, the fact that the Lord will come **WITH** the saints (after they rise to **MEET** Him) does not in any way require two separate second comings of Christ. As Wilber Smith writes in *Tribulation or Rapture - Which?:* "That theory must be deliberately read into the passage. We might go through all the writers of the New Testament and we would still fail to discover any indication of the so-called 'two stages' of our Lord's coming."



Paul on the way to Rome with his disciples

One final New Testament reference remains to be considered in which we read of Christ's coming with the saints. Paul exhorted the Thessalonians: "Increase and abound in love one toward another, and toward all men (so that the Lord) may establish your heart unblamable in holiness before God, even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ **WITH ALL** His saints." (I Thess. 3:12-13)

We need only to notice this passage briefly, for it is doubtful that any would attempt to use this verse as a proof text for the idea of a coming for the saints as contrasted to a coming **WITH** the saints at a later date. There are several reasons for this. The word that is translated **COMING** in this verse is **PAROUSIA** - a word which Pre-Tribulationists commonly say refers to a "secret" rapture - a coming **FOR** the saints - whereas in this verse we read of His coming (**PAROUSIA**) "with all the saints." Instead of teaching two second comings of Christ, if anything, this verse would indicate that the **PAROUSIA** is the coming of Christ **WITH** His saints.

Paul is obviously not speaking of a coming of Christ **WITH** all the saints as contrasted to an earlier coming **FOR** the saints, for if there was to be an earlier coming, why would he put stress on their being established in holiness at the coming of Christ **WITH** all His saints? Surely he would have mentioned the earlier coming if any such existed. The meaning intended in this passage is simply that Paul desired the Thessalonians to be established in the faith and be found unblamable at the Second Coming - along with all the other saints - those at Corinth, Colossi, Ephesus and all other believers everywhere.

PART 5: AN EXAMINATION OF PRE-TRIBULATIONAL "PROOF TEXTS"

We shall now examine the so-called "proofs" or "proof texts" that are commonly used in support of the Pre-Tribulational Rapture position.

THE "ABSENCE" OF THE WORD "CHURCH" IN REVELATION 4-18

First, Revelation 4:1: "After this I (John) looked, and behold a door opened in heaven" and the first voice which I heard was as it were a trumpet talking with me; which said, Come up hither, and I will shew thee things which must be hereafter."

Now, since chapters 4-18 do not mention the word "**CHURCH**," this is taken as proof that the Church will be absent from the earth during this time. The verse that follows the third chapter (Rev. 4:1) tells how John in a vision was taken up to heaven and saw certain things. John is used as a **TYPE** of the Church and this verse is taken to mean that the chapters that follow describe things which will take place "after" the Church is gone! But trying to apply Revelation 4:1 to the Rapture is based only on **ASSUMPTIONS**, not plain

statements. It is **ASSUMED** that John himself is a type of the Church, for it is taught that his being caught up to heaven pictures the Rapture of the Church. And, finally, it is **ASSUMED** that since John saw things which would be "hereafter," that this means after the Church is gone. But now, step by step, we will take a closer look at these points.

It is claimed that since the word **CHURCH** does not appear in Revelation, chapters 4-18, we are to understand that the Church is absent from the earth during this time; not coming into the picture again until chapter 19, in which we read of the marriage supper and the coming of Christ as King of Kings.

But if the mere absence of the word **CHURCH** can prove that the Church is absent in chapters 4-18, we would have to conclude that the Church is also absent in chapter 19 too, for the word **CHURCH** appears **NOWHERE** in the entire chapter. Nor does the word appear in chapter 20. It is not even found in chapter 21. Would any contend that the Church is absent in these chapters? It is not until the last chapter of Revelation that we find the term **CHURCH** used again, and then only in a closing remark: "I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches." (Rev. 22:16)

The Church is not mentioned in chapters 4-18, we are told, and this is taken as proof that the Church is **IN HEAVEN** during this time. What? If the Church is not mentioned, how could this prove that it is in heaven? Since the Church is clearly on earth in chapters two and three, and since it is not expressly referred to as being in the heavens during the chapters that follow, the more natural inference would be that it is still **ON EARTH** during these chapters. One thing is sure: if the Church is not mentioned in these chapters, that is no proof it is in heaven during this time.

We are told that the Church is not mentioned in the chapters after Revelation 3:22. But technically, the Church (as a whole) is not mentioned in the chapters **BEFORE** Revelation 3:22. Instead, all of the references are to local assemblies, local churches in Asia, each being a part of the great universal Church of Jesus Christ. Here are the facts: the words **CHURCH** (singular) and **CHURCHES** (plural) occur 19 times in Revelation 1-3. The four references in Revelation 1 are about "the seven churches in Asia." The word **CHURCH** is used in each of the addresses to the seven churches: "To the angel of the church in Ephesus," etc., and at the conclusion of each of the letters: "Hear ... what the Spirit saith to the churches." "To all the churches," refers to all seven of the churches mentioned. Thus, the word **CHURCH** is never used in any of these chapters as referring to the Church in its totality. This is significant.

While it is true the word **CHURCH** does not appear after Revelation 3, until the last part of Revelation, it is, however, obvious that the Church is definitely referred to by other terms that are used in these chapters. Take Revelation 13:7, for example: "And it was given unto him (the beast) to make war on the **SAINTS**." Is not this a clear reference to the Church? Revelation 13:10 mentions the "patience and faith of the **SAINTS** - patience and faith in the midst of persecution! The **SAINTS** are again mentioned in Revelation



The Ecclesia: if the mere absence of the word CHURCH can prove that the Church is absent in chapters 4-18, we would have to conclude that the Church is also absent in chapter 19 too, for the word CHURCH appears NOWHERE in the entire chapter. Nor does the word appear in chapter 20. It is not even found in chapter 21. Would any contend that the Church is absent in these chapters? It is not until the last chapter of Revelation that we find the term CHURCH used again, and then only in a closing remark: "I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches." (Rev. 22:16)

16:6. In Revelation 17, we read about the Babylonian woman "drunken with the blood of the **SAINTS** (18:24)." Here, then, are several references to the **SAINTS**; that is, those that make up the Church.

Ah, but those who believe that the Rapture is pictured in Revelation 4:1, commonly teach that the **SAINTS** in these chapters are not **CHURCH SAINTS**, but **TRIBULATION SAINTS** - people that are not part of the Church whatsoever! Yet, when we find the word **SAINTS** in connection with the marriage supper of the Lamb in Revelation 19, then we are told that this refers to the **CHURCH SAINTS**. Notice the passage: "The marriage of the Lamb is come, and His wife hath made herself ready. And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of the **SAINTS**." The Scofield footnote says: "The Lamb's wife here is the Bride, the Church." So, it is agreed the saints here are **CHURCH SAINTS**. How can some rightly argue that the saints mentioned in the chapter before (Revelation 18), the chapter before that (Revelation 17), the chapter before that (Revelation 16), and Revelation 13 are different kinds of saints? By such arbitrary methods of interpretation, **ANYTHING** could be proved from the Bible.

JOHN AS A "TYPE" OF THE CHURCH IN REVELATION 4:1

Assuming that the churches of Revelation 2 and 3 represent seven church ages, a position generally accepted by Bible scholars, coupled with the idea that the word **CHURCH** does not appear in certain chapters that follow, Revelation 4:1 is then taken as a reference to the Rapture - **ASSUMING** that John is a type of the Church. But let us look at this verse again: "After this I [John] looked, and behold, a door was opened in heaven: and the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me; which said, Come up hither, and I will shew thee things which must be hereafter." Though this verse was plainly a message to John, many Pre-Tribulational writers feel this verse **CLEARLY** refers to the Rapture.

Scofield, for example, says: "This call seems **CLEARLY** to indicate the fulfillment of I Thess. 4:14-17 [the Rapture]. The word **CHURCH** does not again occur in the Revelation till all is fulfilled." DeHann says: "This brief passage from Revelation is one of the shortest, yet one of the clearest pictures in Scripture of the Rapture of the Church" (*35 Simple Studies of the Major Themes in Revelation*, Pg. 61).

But this verse is not talking about the Rapture, it is not talking about the Church, it is talking about John! It was John who was - in spirit - taken into the heavenly realm and saw various things which would come to pass. John being thus taken up does not prove we should look for the Church in heaven any more than being taken in the spirit into the wilderness to "Babylon" would prove that the Church was there. (Rev. 17:3-5)

Those who claim to "clearly" see a Pre-Tribulational Rapture of the Church in this verse must **ASSUME** (among other things) that John is a type of the Church. But John could not be a consistent type of the Church in heaven during this period, for sometimes he is represented as being back on **EARTH**. In Revelation 10:1 and also 18:1, for example, he sees an angel "come (not go) **DOWN** from heaven" - wording which apparently does not symbolize something in heaven, for it is pictured as having a court which is given to the Gentiles to tread down, unless one supposes that unsaved Gentiles have broken into heaven and are trampling down the heavenly temple - which is clearly an absurdity. This, then, would place below heaven in this scene. In Revelation 13:1, John is standing upon the sand of the sea, and a beast rising up out of the water appears, etc. John is sometimes pictured as being in heaven and sometimes on earth. He cannot, therefore, be a consistent representation of the Church in heaven during these chapters.

THE USE OF THE WORDS "COME UP HITHER" IN REVELATION 4:1

Adding to the foregoing Pre-Tribulational teachings (that the word **CHURCH** does not appear after Revelation 3, and that John is representative of the Church being taken up to heaven in Revelation 4:1), a final point is made in the attempt to establish a Pre-Tribulational Rapture from the verse under consideration. We are told that when the voice spoke to John and said: "Come up hither, and I will shew

three things which must be **HEREAFTER**," that the expression **HEREAFTER** means after the Church has been raptured to heaven. But the fact is, the **SAME** words in Greek - **META TAUTA** - that are translated **HEREAFTER** at the end of this verse, are exactly the same words that are rendered **AFTER THIS** at the beginning of the verse. The verse begins and ends with the same identical phrase in the original. Is it not inconsistent, then, to attempt to make it mean "after the Church" in one instance and not in the other? And to make it mean "after the Church" in both instances would be contradictory.

The normal reading of the passage is simply that John had received specific messages to the seven churches of Asia; after this, he heard a voice saying he would be shown things which would be hereafter - that is, he would be shown events that were **THEN FUTURE**. It is inexcusable to try to make it mean anything more than this, for this same expression was commonly used by John. **META TAUTA**, though translated in various ways into English, appears in the following verses in John's writings: "hereafter" (John 13:7; Rev. 1:19; 4:1; 9:12); "after these things" (John 3:22; 6:1; 7:1; Rev. 7:1; 18:1; 19:1); "afterward" (John 5:14); "After that" (Rev. 15:5; 20:3); "after this" (John 5:1; Rev. 4:1). To try to force a meaning upon the expression in one instance that is completely unheard of and unrelated to the use of the word in other parts of John's writings is very unsound.

THE CHURCH IN PHILADELPHIA

Another Pre-Tribulational "proof text" is found in the words of Jesus to the Church in Philadelphia: "Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth." (Rev. 3:10) It is **ASSUMED** that since these are to be kept from the hour of temptation, that this means that they will be raptured **CLEAR OUT OF THE WORLD** in order for this to be fulfilled. But again, the text does not say this.

The actual Church in Philadelphia - Primary Example

Let us consider this verse in its **PRIMARY** application - as it pertained to the Church in Philadelphia, located in Asia Minor, in the First Century. Was this church kept from a worldwide time of temptation? As sure as the promise was given, they were! But how were they kept? By being raptured to heaven? There is nothing to infer this and by any reckoning of the historical facts, they were not. They were kept by the **POWER AND GRACE OF GOD**.

The Church in Philadelphia as Representative of a "Church Age"

Let us consider Revelation 3:10 as it would apply to the teaching that the seven churches in Asia represent several church ages. In this case, the passage again falls short of proving there will be an **ESCAPE RAPTURE** from the Tribulation during the last days of this age. Had this been the case, Revelation 3:10 should have been given to the **LAST** church of the seven. But the promise of being "kept from the hour of temptation" was addressed to the **SIXTH** church, not the **SEVENTH**; and to say, as some do, that in the last days the last several churches or church ages will coincide simultaneously does little to truly alleviate the problem here.

Here again, we see inconsistency in the Secret Rapture teaching. When it is being stressed that Revelation 4:1 teaches the Secret Rapture, we are taught (correctly we believe) that the seven churches represent seven **SUCCESSIVE** ages of the Church, and that the last church age, **THE SEVENTH**, will end with the Rapture. Then later, when commenting on Revelation 3:10, this is contradicted by saying that the message to the **SIXTH** church refers to an **ESCAPE** for the Church at the end of the age - as though the **SIXTH** church was the **LAST** church. In other words, when commenting on Revelation 4:1, the Church ages are 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7. Then later, in order to apply Revelation 3:10 to a Pre-Tribulational Rapture, the age would have to be twisted around like this: 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 7, 6 or at least, the last two ages very **ARBITRARILY** merged together (as in the note on page 1332 of the Scofield Reference Bible).

Now since the Church in any century should be able to benefit from the letters to the seven churches, let us view Revelation 3:10 as setting forth truth which could apply to the churches in any century in which the same conditions might exist. This will be a more **GENERAL** application.

God's Keeping Power from Temptation

It is a recognized method of Biblical interpretation to consider other verses that might shed light on a subject. We will apply this rule here and compare a verse that **ALSO** contains the **WORDS OF JESUS** and one that was recorded by the **SAME DISCIPLE**. In **BOTH** verses we will find basically the **SAME** type of promise. But in the one - and this is significant - it is plainly shown that believers can be kept from the temptation or evil of this world **WITHOUT** being taken out of the world. We ask the reader to carefully compare the following passages:

"Because thou hast **KEPT** the **WORD** of my patience, I also will **KEEP** thee from the hour of **TEMPTATION**, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth." (Rev. 3:10)

"They have **KEPT** thy **WORD** ... I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest **KEEP** them from the **EVIL**" (John 17:6, 15)

In both passages, the people referred to have kept the word. And because they have kept the word, God will "keep them." In the one passage, they are kept from the hour of temptation; in the other, they are kept from the evil. The fact that they are kept from temptation in the one verse and kept from evil in the other, does not materially change the meaning involved, for evil and temptation are very closely related words. Jesus, for example, taught the disciples to pray: "And lead us not into **TEMPTATION**, but deliver us from **EVIL**." (Matt. 6:13) If we are kept from temptation, then surely we are kept from evil. The two go hand in hand.

Both of the passages that we are comparing use the expression "keep from" in English, and in Greek, both use the same basic words. In both instances believers are "kept from" evil or temptation, the one expressly explains that this would be accomplished **WITHOUT** their being taken out of the world - the exact opposite of the Secret Rapture teaching.

If it is possible to be in the world and yet be "kept from" the evil of the world, is it possible to be "kept from" the hour of temptation **WITHOUT** being taken out of the world? Surely!

Revelation 3:10 speaks about being kept from the hour of temptation "which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth." Paul also spoke of temptation as being common to all men - but with a special promise to the believer: "There hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man, but God ... will not suffer you [i.e., the believer] to be **TEMPTED** above that ye are able, but will with the temptation also make a way of **ESCAPE** that ye may be able to bear it." (I Cor. 10:13)

Here, then, is another reference about mankind's being tempted, but He promises that through Christ we can be kept from falling into temptation. Other verses also speak of God's **KEEPING** power, but none imply a rapture out of this world. Jabez prayed: "**KEEP** me from evil ... and God granted him that which he requested." (I Chron. 4:10)

And we, today, can also be "**KEPT**" by the power of God through faith unto salvation," (I Peter 1:5) "for God ... is able to keep you from falling." (Jude 2:4, etc.) Thus, by a study of the key words in the text under consideration, we find that believers can be "kept from" the world's evil or temptation, can "be delivered out of temptation," can find "a way of escape," without being taken out of this world.

Some attempt to teach that the Church will be taken out of the world because Revelation 3:10 mentions temptation that will "try them that **DWELL** upon the earth." It is taught that those who "dwell" upon the earth are those who choose earth as a **PERMANENT** abode, as compared to the Christians who

have spiritual objectives. But this conclusion will not stand up, for in the original, the same word is used in describing our Lord as **DWELLING** in Capernaum (Matt. 4:13)! None suppose that Jesus felt that Capernaum was His permanent dwelling!

The three applications we have made of Revelation 3:10, summed up, are as follows:

- Applied **SPECIFICALLY** to the Philadelphian Church in Asia of the First Century, it (i.e., the Rapture) would have had its fulfillment while those people were still living, a conclusion that no Bible scholar anywhere at anytime has ever reached.
- Applied to the seven church **AGES**, it falls short of reaching the last church age, which should be the **SEVENTH**, for the Philadelphian Church was the **SIXTH** in the succession, not the **SEVENTH** or last.
- Applied as a **GENERAL** truth for the Church in any century, it could not be limited to people living just prior to the last seven years, but would be a promise of God's **KEEPING POWER** in any hour of temptation.

THE USE OF THE WORD "ESCAPE" IN LUKE 21, ETC.

One more text should be noticed here: "Watch ye therefore and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to **ESCAPE** all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of Man." (Luke 21:36)

It is true that this verse speaks of **ESCAPE**, but it says nothing about the Church being taken to heaven in a Secret Rapture in order for this escape to be accomplished! This should be especially noticed, for this is the very thing that some have attempted to read into this passage.

In this verse, Jesus said to His disciples: "**PRAY** always that ye may be accounted worthy to escape ..." How? By a Secret Rapture to take them to heaven seven years before the end of the age? Apparently not! For in the prayer, we read: "**I PRAY NOT** that thou shouldest take them **OUT OF THE WORLD**, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil." (John 17:15) Would Jesus pray one way and then tell His disciples to pray another way? Surely this would be contradictory.

With what is this word **ESCAPE** to be connected? Is it a reference to escaping the Tribulation of the last seven years of this age? It does not say so. A look at the context shows that the reference is to **THAT DAY**, the time believers shall be gathered to meet Christ in the air and destruction shall fall upon the world - the end of this age.

"Heaven and earth shall pass away [the end of this age] ... take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and the **CARES OF THIS LIFE**, and so **THAT DAY** come upon you unawares." (Luke 21:33-34) Obviously, it could not come upon them unawares if they were to be raptured out seven years before the end of the age! "For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth. Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of Man." (Luke 21:34-36)

Notice that this passage also mentions **THAT DAY**. It will bring "sudden destruction" upon unbelievers "and they shall **NOT ESCAPE**." However, there will be those who will **ESCAPE** that sudden destruction - those who are sober, spiritually awake, and watching for the return of Christ.

Matthew's account (a parallel to Luke 21) also mentions **THAT DAY** and that we must **WATCH**, for the time of this event is unrevealed. "For as in the days that were before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage ... and knew not until the flood came and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of Man be." (Matt. 24:38-39)

When God's destruction fell upon the world in Noah's day, those who heeded God's message **ESCAPED** - they were not destroyed with the unbelieving world. According to the Scriptures, destruction shall again fall on the earth, this time by fire - and again those who have heeded God's message shall **ESCAPE** and not be destroyed with the unbelieving world. Whether we think of the end that came in Noah's day or the end that shall come upon this world at Christ's return, in neither event is it a case of the righteous escaping from the tribulation, but from the **DESTRUCTION** that brings the end.

We have, then, the words recorded in Luke, in Matthew, and by the Apostle Paul regarding **THAT DAY**. All speak of the uncertainty of the time. Luke records that it will come "as a snare." Matthew likens it to the days of Noah when "they knew not until the flood came" and destruction fell upon the world. And Paul says it will come "as a thief in the night," a time when men will be saying "peace and safety" - not expecting sudden destruction.

All three of these passages give warnings against the eating and drinking which would result in a condition of unconcern and spiritual neglect. Luke speaks of "surfeiting and drunkenness." Matthew speaks of "eating and drinking" and Paul's words exhort us to be sober and not drunken.

All three of the passages show that the time referred to by the term **THAT DAY** is the end of the age. Matthew and Luke both use the expression "heaven and earth shall pass away" in this connection, while Paul speaks of it as the time when "sudden destruction" shall fall upon the wicked.

Each passage indicates that those who believe will escape the destruction. Luke's account speaks of praying to "escape these things." Matthew's account likens it to the days when Noah escaped the destruction of the flood, and Paul says the wicked "shall not escape," which implies that there will be an escape for those that are not wicked. So, looking at Luke 21:36 again, we find that an **ESCAPE** is taught - but the reference is to **THAT DAY** when **SUDDEN DESTRUCTION** shall fall upon the world. There is nothing in this text about escaping from the Tribulation by escaping out of this world by means of a Secret Rapture. Those who are truly devoted to Christ shall escape all these things - the neglect, the over indulgence in eating and drinking - and "having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust" here and now (II Peter 1:4); they shall also escape the fiery sudden destruction which shall bring an end to this age.

PART 6: WILL CHRIST COME AT ANY MOMENT? **TERMS USED INTERCHANGEABLY** **OTHER RAPTURE VIEWS**

WILL CHRIST COME AT ANY MOMENT

Did the early Christians believe that the Rapture could occur at any moment" Or did they believe that there were certain things that would be fulfilled first? We believe there is conclusive proof in the New Testament that the early Church did **NOT** hold the "Any-Moment" Theory. Jesus pointed out that no man knows the time of His return and that we should live a life of watchfulness and obedience at all times (Matt. 24:36, 42-51, etc.). However, Jesus Himself taught that certain things would happen first:

The Ascension

When Jesus told His disciples of the Second Coming, He was still with them in **PERSON**. It is evident that the **ASCENSION** had to precede the **RETURN**. And before His ascension, of course, **CALVARY** had to have its fulfillment. Jesus likened His Second Coming to lightening and said, "But **FIRST** must He suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation." (Luke 17:25)

The Gift of the Holy Spirit

Jesus told His disciples that after His ascension, He would send the Holy Spirit. They would be endued with spiritual power to be witnesses unto Him. (Acts 1:8) These things were to take place **BEFORE** Christ would come again. Thus, prior to Pentecost, we see the disciples awaiting, not the coming of Christ (in His Second Advent), but the coming of the Holy Spirit - even as Jesus had promised.

The Preaching of the Gospel to All the World

Then, being filled with the power of the Holy Spirit, the disciples were to go into all the world and teach all nations. (Matt. 28:19, 20; Mark 16:15; Acts 1:8) Time had to be allowed for travel, preaching, baptizing, instructing converts, etc. Surely, Christ was not going to return before they would even have time to get properly started on what He had commissioned them to do!

The Destruction of the Temple

Jesus predicted the destruction of Jerusalem and told His disciples: "When ye see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh." (Luke 21:21) At the Second Coming, there will be no need for Christians to flee into the mountains, for they shall be caught up to meet the Lord in the air! The destruction of Jerusalem, then, was to be an event which would take place before the **SECOND COMING OF CHRIST**.



The destruction of the Jewish Temple in 70 A.D.

The Death of Peter

Jesus also explained that Peter would grow old and die **BEFORE** the Second Coming. In speaking to Peter, Jesus said: "When thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not. This spake He, signifying by what death he would glorify God." (John 21:18, 19; see also II Peter 1:14) According to this, though the time of the Second Coming was unknown, it was definitely implied that it would **NOT** take place before Peter's death.

Concerning John

Then Peter asked a question about John. He wondered if John would live to see the day of Christ's return: Jesus replied, "If I will that he tarry till I come, what is it to thee? Follow thou me. Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that this disciple should not die: yet Jesus said not unto him, he shall not die; but, if I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee?" (John 21:20-23) Concerning John, Jesus simply did not reveal whether he would or would not live until the Second Coming - though a rumor spread that he would live to see that day. But concerning Peter, it was definitely stated that he would grow old and die - and that he would not live to see the Second Coming.

We believe that early Christians lived in an expectation and **HOPE** of the Second Coming. For, whether alive at that time, or because of the resurrection, they knew that they would all ultimately share in the glory of that day. But they did not believe in the "Any-Moment Theory." They knew certain things would occur in their day.

The Great Falling Away (the Apostasy) and the Revelation of the Man of Sin

Even more positive evidence of this fact is found in Paul's writings to the Thessalonians. In his first epistle, he had explained to them about the resurrection and the catching up of believers to meet the Lord in the air. (I Thess. 4:16, 17) Later, some confusion had apparently developed in the minds of the

people concerning this glorious event, so Paul wrote his second epistle to them in which he clarified the matter. In his remarks, he clearly rejected the "Any-Moment Theory."

"Now we beseech you, brethren, by (concerning) the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by (concerning) our **GATHERING TOGETHER** unto Him, that ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand. Let no man deceive you by any means, **FOR THAT DAY SHALL NOT COME, EXCEPT THERE COME A FALLING AWAY FIRST, AND THAT MAN OF SIN BE REVEALED, THE SON OF PERDITION.**" (II Thess. 2:1-3)



FOR THAT DAY SHALL NOT COME, EXCEPT THERE COME A FALLING AWAY FIRST, AND THAT MAN OF SIN BE REVEALED, THE SON OF PERDITION. (II Thess. 2:1-3)

Here, then, is mention of two things Christians would **CLEARLY** witness **BEFORE** the day of Christ's coming to gather believers unto Himself. There would be a falling away and the man of sin would be revealed. Concerning these very things, the inspired apostle said, "Let no man deceive you." Let us beware, then, of a teaching which says that the Church will be raptured to heaven **BEFORE** the man of sin is revealed, for such is the exact **OPPOSITE** of what Paul taught.

According to Paul, the order of events would be: (1) a falling away; (2) the man of sin would be revealed; and (3) the coming of Christ and our gathering together unto Him. It is plain. But, according to the "Any-Moment" Theory, instead of these events being in order, they would have to be 3, then 1 and then 2. That is, (3) the coming of Christ and gathering together unto Him; (1) a falling away; and (2) the man of sin revealed: 3, 1, 2 or perhaps 3, 2, 1 instead of 1, 2, 3.

Bible students link the "man of sin" with the Beast of Revelation 13. Pre-Tribulationists claim that when the Beast takes over, the Church will have been raptured. But this is not what the Bible says. According to Scriptures, the Beast will make war with the **SAINTS**: "And it was given unto him to make war with the saints and to overcome them ..." (Rev. 13:7) The Beast could not make war with the saints and overcome them if they had been taken to Heaven before the Beast comes to power.

Paul knew that the man of sin would be destroyed by the brightness of Christ's coming. (II Thess, 1:7, 8; 2:8) Therefore, he knew that the man of sin would have to come to power **BEFORE** the Second Coming.

TERMS USED INTERCHANGEABLY

Being "troubled" with "persecutions and tribulations, the Thessalonian believers wondered if the day of Christ was not "right at hand." (II Thess. 1-2) If Paul had believed in the "Any-Moment" Theory, here was his perfect opportunity to encourage them with the teaching that the day of Christ was possibly right at hand. He might have said something like this: "Now we beseech you, brethren, concerning the coming of the Lord Jesus Christ and our gathering together unto Him, that ye be not soon shaken in mind, for **NOTHING NEEDS TO HAPPEN FIRST**. That day shall come **BEFORE** the man of sin is revealed. Yes, our gathering together unto Him could happen at any moment."

But, to the contrary, this was **NOT** his answer. Instead, he explained that the day of the Lord's coming, the day of Christ, when they would be "gathered unto Him," would **NOT** take place until there would be a falling away first, and the man of sin revealed. This is just the **OPPOSITE** of the "Any-Moment" Theory.

There can be no mistake that the **DAY OF CHRIST** refers to the Rapture, for it is used in reference to "our gathering together unto Him." (II Thess 2) Christians are "waiting" for the "day of the Lord Jesus Christ." (I Cor. 1:8, 9) It is "in the day of the Lord Jesus" that they will be gathered and "rejoice" at seeing each other. (II Cor. 1:14) The "good work" begun in Christians must continue "until the day of the Lord Jesus Christ." (Phil 1:6) Paul exhorted the Philippian believers to be "sincere and without offense" until "the day of Christ" (verse 10) and mentioned that when he would see them "in the day of Christ" he would "rejoice," knowing that his labor had not been in vain. (2:16) All of these verses plainly show that the "day of Christ" is the time when believers are gathered to meet Christ. And the same inspired apostle that wrote these things tells us that "the day of Christ" will **NOT** come except first the "man of sin be revealed." (II Thess. 2:1-3)

This conclusion is so obvious that those who hold the "Any-Moment Theory" try to make the "day of Christ" (in II Thess. 2:2) refer to something else! Scofield, for example, says that the authorized version "has 'day of Christ' - II Thess. 2:2 - incorrectly for 'day of the lord'." (Scofield Reference Bible, pg. 1212) Another Pre-Tribulational writer says that the "day of Christ" according to the Greek is really "the day of the Lord" in this passage (Chafer, *The Coming and Reign of our Lord Jesus Christ*, pg. 32, 60). But a look at *Strong's Concordance* reveals that the word translated "Christ" in this verse is **CHRISTOS** (number 5547 in *Strong's*). This word is used over 500 times in the New Testament and is translated **CHRIST**. (The Greek word that is translated **LORD** in the New Testament is a different word altogether, number 2962 in *Strong's*) "Day of Christ" is a correct translation.

But what if it did say: "the day of the Lord?" What difference would this make? We use the expression "the coming of the Lord" when referring to "the coming of Christ." Why, then, should some try to make the New Testament expression "the day of the Lord" mean something different from the "the day of Christ?"

The following terms are used **INTERCHANGEABLY** in the New Testament in reference to the Lord's coming to gather believers:

- (1) "The day of Christ" (Phil. 1:10)
- (2) "The day of Jesus Christ" (Phil. 1:6)
- (3) "The day of our Lord Jesus Christ" (I Cor. 1:8)
- (4) "The day of the Lord Jesus" (II Cor. 1:14)
- (5) "The day of the Lord" (I Thess. 5:2)

We think it very inconsistent to try to make the last expression mean a different "Lord" or a different time than what the other terms describe. The "day of the Lord" **IS** the "day of Christ." And according to Paul, the "day of Christ" - when believers will be gathered unto Him - will **NOT** come until **AFTER** the man of sin has been revealed.

OTHER RAPTURE VIEWS

A passing comment is now perhaps in order concerning the "three children" of the Secret Pre-Tribulational Rapture doctrine:

- the Mid-Tribulational Rapture,
- the Split Rapture, and

- the Partial Rapture.

All that has been said previously concerning the Pre-Tribulational Rapture applies with **EQUAL FORCE** to these doctrines. But with the last two, the Split Rapture and the Partial Rapture, we encounter an insidious evil which goes far beyond the mischief of the teaching of the Pre-Tribulational Rapture.

The teaching behind the doctrine of both the Split Rapture and the Partial Rapture contends that the Rapture of the saints is based upon personal merit and not upon the finished work of Jesus Christ on the cross. Nowhere in the Word is such a doctrine taught. In every instance where the rapture is mentioned, it is mentioned as only one single event, and like the Resurrection, the Rapture is based not on merit, but on the finished work of Christ on the Cross.

In this regard, it is of the utmost importance to remember that the object of both the Rapture and the Resurrection is quite simple: to usher the saints of God into Christ's presence at the end of the age. The only difference between the two is that one of necessity deals with the dead in Christ while the other deals with those that happen to be still alive at the Second Coming.

Thus, just as the Resurrection has always been considered a part of the finished work of Christ, so the Rapture must likewise be so considered; both events are part of **THE FINISHED WORK OF CHRIST ON THE CROSS**, having nothing to do with the awards at the Judgment Seat of Christ as such.

The Mid-Tribulational Rapture position is attractive to some who naively suppose that by choosing it, they have adopted the "best-of-both worlds" insofar as the Pre-Tribulational and Post-Tribulational positions are concerned.

But such thinking is exceedingly superficial! The exegetical problems relating to the Mid-Tribulational Rapture remain exactly as those which relate to the Pre-Tribulational Rapture: one is still left with two "Second Comings" (semantics notwithstanding) and a rapture which while three and half years closer to the "Last Day" is still not on the "Last Day."

PART 7: POST-MILLENNIALISM OR DOMINIONISM Vs. PRE-MILLENNIALISM

A SURPRISING TURN OF EVENTS OF WHICH MOST EVANGELICAL "LAY PEOPLE" ARE NOT AWARE

I wonder how many "lay people" who - despite the facts so clearly presented above - continue to hold to the Secret Pre-Tribulation Rapture Theory realize that many, if not most, of their leaders no longer believe in the pre-tribulation rapture of the church, and while they may, from time to time, mouth support for such thinking, they no longer embrace it as a viable eschatology. The fact is, whether "lay evangelicals" realize it or not, many of their leaders have adopted a "dominionist" or "post-millennial" mindset very similar to the eschatology espoused by the Roman Catholic Church - and, as a result, have abandoned pre-millennialism (the eschatology upon which the pre-tribulation rapture theory is erroneously linked) altogether.

Christian leaders who embrace political activity have very little choice in the matter. Logic dictates that if they espouse political activity, they must at the same time embrace an eschatology which will support that activity; again, why fight to return the nation to "Christ and the church" if after they capture it, they are going to then surrender it to the Antichrist and be raptured out of the world - which pre-millennialism postulates whether one speaks of a rapture which occurs at the beginning, the middle, or even the end of the Tribulation period.

Typical of those leaders who espouse political activity to "take the nation back for Christ and the church" (and are willing to ally themselves with the Catholics in order to do so) and have - as a result - adopted a "post-millennial" or "dominionist" mindset is Pat Robertson. Many recognize this transformation in Robertson's thinking. Clearly, Harvey Cox of Harvard University thinks Robertson is now - for all practical purposes, whether he admits it or not - a "dominionist." Moreover, according to Cox, it's not just Robertson, but almost everyone who is currently associated with Robertson at CBN and Regent University - and it's not only Cox, but "outsiders" like Jeremy Rifkin who recognize Robertson's transition here.

THE NEW DOMINIONIST MINDSET OF TODAY'S EVANGELICAL LEADERS



Dominionist seek to take over the world by means of military conquest.

"Dominionism" is a militant post-millennial eschatology ("doctrine of end times") which pictures the seizure of earthly (temporal) power by the church as the only means through which the world can be rescued; only after the world has been thus "rescued" can Christ return to "rule and reign." (Some dominionists see the seizure of the earth as the result of "signs, wonders, and miracles;" others picture it as the result of military and political conquest; most see it as a combination of both.)

Dominionists - whether subtly or otherwise - discount *altogether* the possibility of a rapture. They have rejected pre-millennialism completely - and in doing so, they have not only rejected the possibility of a pre-tribulational rapture of the church, but also

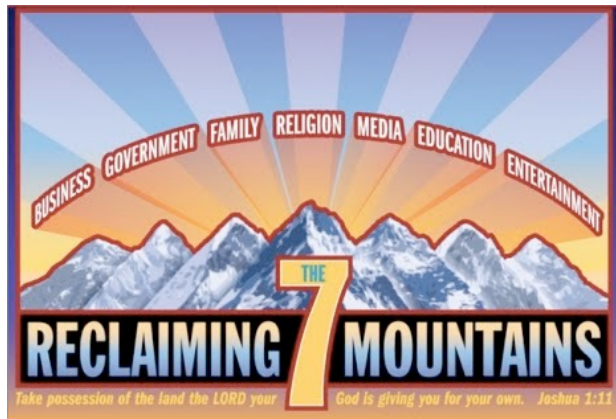
the possibility of a mid-tribulational rapture and a post-tribulational rapture. This is post-millennialism - the historic teaching of the Roman Catholic Church.

Al Dager, a recognized expert on the dominionist mindset, writes,

"Some two decades before Pentecostalism found its way into the (mainstream) denominations (i.e., the Episcopalians, the Catholic Church, etc.) as the 'Charismatic Renewal', it experienced a new surge of experience-oriented theology within its own ranks. It was from this neo-Pentecostal experience - what came to be called the 'Latter Rain Movement' - that Charismatic Dominionism sprang. The more prominent leaders of that movement blended Pentecostal fervor with teachings that the church was on the brink of a worldwide revival. That revival would result in a victorious church without spot or wrinkle ... (which) would inherit the earth and rule over the nations with a rod of iron."

Dager explains that at the core of the dominionist mindset is -

"... a ... premise ... that when Adam sinned, not only did man lose dominion over the



Dominionism seeks to place Christians in control over the world; one popular form of dominionism is SEVEN MOUNTAIN DOMINIONISM which is endorsed by C. Peter Wagner of the New Apostolic Reformation; it seeks to control the seven forces that shape and control our culture: (1) Business; (2) Government; (3) Media; (4) Arts and Entertainment; (5) Education; (6) Family; and (7) Religion. The reason for this, according to David Barton, is that Jesus "doesn't come back until He's accomplished the dominion of nations." And the "dominion of the nations" is accomplished by having Christians gain control of these "seven mountains" in order to install a "virtual theocracy" overseen by "true apostles" who will fight Satan and his Antichrist agenda.

earth, but God also lost control of the earth to Satan. Since that time ... God has been on the outside looking in, searching for a 'covenant people' who will be His 'extension' or 'expression' in the earth to take dominion back from Satan ..." [Dager, *Vengeance Is Ours*, pgs. 43-44.]

According to Dager, the basic dominionist model is as follows:

- The world is plunged into a time of political and spiritual crisis, one which threatens the world with chaos and the church with destruction.
- The Lord brings revival to the church.
- This revival results in the end of the church's divisions and the rule of the "apostles and prophets."
- The "Gospel of the Kingdom" is preached to the whole earth.
- This leads to the conversion of Israel, the conquest of the world, and the judgment of those who refuse to convert.
- The Lord returns.

Jewel van der Merwe of *Discernment Magazine*, elaborates; she writes that the "New Charismatics" are actively pushing a belief system which prophesies that -

" ... (1) the greatest revival the church has ever known [is about to occur]; (2) the greatest baptism of the Spirit the church has ever experienced [will shortly happen]; (3) the greatest army [**Joel's Army**] distinguished by invincibility, immortality and divinity [will be raised up]; (4) the greatest purging ... in the history of the church [will shortly begin]; (5) the greatest ministry - the Prize of all Ages [is about to break forth]; and (6) the greatest miracles, super-natural signs and wonders far exceeding that of the Apostles and Prophets of old [will shortly take place]." [Jewel van der Merwe, "**Joel's Army**," (Holly, Michigan: *Discernment Newsletter Publications*, pg. 1.)

In one way or another Franklin Hall, William Branham, George Hawtin, Percy G. Hunt, Herrick Holt, George Warnock, Bill Britton, Kathryn Kuhlman, Oral Roberts, Ern Baxter, Don Basham, Bob Mumford, Charles Simpson, Derek Prince, D. James Kennedy, William Banks, Marilyn Hickey, Demos Shakarian, Ralph Martin, Steve Clark, Kevin Ranaghan, etc. have all been involved in "Dominionism" and "Latter Rain." [Dager, *Vengeance Is Ours*, pgs. 49-50.]



=



Joel's Army

equals

Hitler Youth

The dominionist model, however, is at total variance with the older pre-millennial model. The pre-millennial model pictures:

- The world is plunged into a time of spiritual and political crisis.
- The church is apostatized.
- The apostatized church unites with the anti-Christ and seizes control of the world.
- A great tribulation breaks out against those Christians who refuse to become a part of the apostatized church, resulting in their persecution and finally their destruction - after which the anti-Christ, who had at first appeared as the champion of Israel (and the church), turns on Israel (and the "apostate" church) to destroy her (them).

- The rapture occurs for those Christians who "remain," (i.e., those who have not been killed off) and Christ returns to bring judgment on those who had destroyed Israel and persecuted those Christians who had refused to be apostatized.

POST-MILLENNIALISM & DICHOTOMY **vs. PRE-MILLENNIALISM & TRICHOTOMY**

Finally, we come to one last very important matter. I very much suspect that it is not without cause that pre-millennialism and trichotomy go together just as post-millennialism and dichotomy go together. I don't believe that it is a matter of simple happen-chance that historically, whenever pre-millennialism has predominated in the church, trichotomy has also prevailed; and whenever post-millennialism has predominated, dichotomy has likewise flourished. There is a connection between pre-millennialism and trichotomy; and there is a connection between post-millennialism and dichotomy.

Post-millennialism is the effort by Christians (as a corporate body - i.e., the church) to do a work for Christ, specifically to bring in the kingdom of Christ. The arrogance and aggrandizement of self which is implicit in such thinking is overwhelming; this kind of thinking could never take place in the human mind which is fixed upon Christ. It doesn't emanate from a spirit which is "beholding and reflecting" Christ, but from a soul which at best has only a nodding acquaintance with the Lord. Those who truly behold God in their spirit would never countenance the kind of arrogance which could say, "I will do a work for God." This kind of thinking is born of "the pride of life" which is altogether a thing of this world (i.e., it's worldliness). The Bible says,

"For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world." (1 John 2:16)

Those who have truly touched the Lord would never be so arrogant and pretentious. Moses saw God, and he hid his face in fear:

"And when the LORD saw that he turned aside to see, God called unto him out of the midst of the bush, and said, Moses, Moses. And he said, Here am I.

"And he said, Draw not nigh hither: put off thy shoes from off thy feet, for the place whereon thou standest is holy ground.

"Moreover he said, I am the God of thy father, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. **And Moses hid his face; for he was afraid to look upon God.** (Ex. 3:4-6)

Where is there any "pride of life" here?

Isaiah too saw the Lord, and he recognized immediately how small and insignificant he really was:

"In the year that king Uzziah died I saw also the Lord sitting upon a throne, high and lifted up, and his train filled the temple ...

"Then said I, **Woe is me! for I am undone**; because I am a man of unclean lips, and I dwell in the midst of a people of unclean lips: for mine eyes have seen the King, the LORD of hosts. (Is. 6:1, 5)

Where is there any pride here? Where is there any thought of "doing a work for the Lord?" - unless the Lord did the work through him.

A SHORT REMINDER

Trichotomy is the belief that man is a three-part being: (1) body, (2) soul and (3) spirit.

Dichotomy is the belief that man is a 2-part being: (1) body and (2) soul – the spirit being just another word for soul.

Pre-Millennialism is – at least for our purposes here - the belief that **ONLY at Christ's Second Coming can the Kingdom be established.**

Post-Millennialism is – at least for our purposes here - the belief that the church will bring in the kingdom and present it to Christ at His Second Coming.

And John the Apostle also saw the Lord, and even he - the one who had leaned on Jesus' breast at the "Last Supper" - fell on his face "as if dead:"

"I was in the Spirit on the Lord's day, and I heard behind me a loud voice like the sound of a trumpet,

"And I turned to see the voice that was speaking with me.

"And when I saw Him, **I fell at His feet as a dead man ...**" (Rev. 1:10, 11, 17)

OUR GOD IS AN AWESOME GOD

Yes, the Almighty is our loving Father, but He also is an awesome God! There is no room for impertinence and shallow familiarity with the Lord such as Bennie Hinn so arrogantly exhibits in his preaching - even with those who enjoy a loving relationship with Him (which is certainly not the case with Hinn). He is not called "Lord" (i.e., master, sovereign) for nothing! Job, God's "friend," had to learn this lesson the hard way! - who are we, then, to tell God that we will do a work for Him? - the titanic arrogance of it all! Those who say such things only reveal that they have no real relationship with God at all - that their presumed relationship with God is nothing more than an empty pretense.

"Then the LORD answered Job out of the whirlwind, and said,
"Who is this that darkeneth counsel by words without knowledge?
"Gird up now thy loins like a man; for I will demand of thee, and answer thou me.

"Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? declare, if thou hast understanding.

"Who hath laid the measures thereof, if thou knowest? or who hath stretched the line upon it?

"Hast thou commanded the morning since thy days; and caused the dayspring to know his place;

"Have the gates of death been opened unto thee? or hast thou seen the doors of the shadow of death?

"Hast thou perceived the breadth of the earth? declare if thou knowest it all.

"Hast thou entered into the treasures of the snow? or hast thou seen the treasures of the hail,

"Doth the eagle mount up at thy command, and make her nest on high?

"Shall he that contendeth with the Almighty instruct him? he that reproveth God, let him answer it.

"Then Job answered the LORD, and said,

"Behold, I am vile; what shall I answer thee? I will lay mine hand upon my mouth.

"Then answered the LORD unto Job out of the whirlwind, and said,

"Gird up thy loins now like a man: I will demand of thee, and declare thou unto me.

"Wilt thou also disannul my judgment? wilt thou condemn me, that thou mayest be righteous ...?

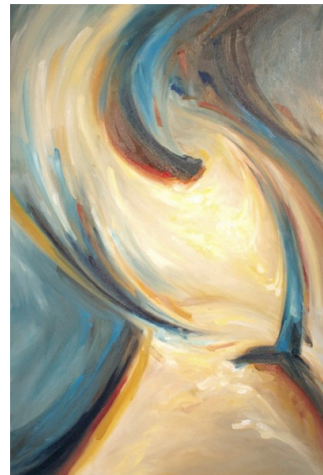
"Deck thyself now with majesty and excellency; and array thyself with glory and beauty (if you can).

"(Can you) cast abroad the rage of thy wrath: and behold every one that is proud, and abase him.

"(Can you) look on every one that is proud, and bring him low; and tread down the wicked in their place.

"Hide them in the dust together; and bind their faces in secret.

"(If you can do these things) then will I also confess unto thee that thine own right hand can save thee.
(Job 38, 39, and 40)



"Then the LORD answered Job out of the whirlwind, and said, Who is this that darkeneth counsel by words without knowledge."

THE POST-MILLENNIAL "MINDSET"

Post-Millennialists, nonetheless, say that they are going to conquer the world for Christ - and in saying this, they reveal that they have never really known God at all. Indeed, it's not without cause that someday they

may very well hear those dreadful words, "I never knew you" (i.e., "I never had an intimate relationship with you"):

"Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works?

"And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity. (Matt. 7:22-23)

[And one must bear in mind here, that these people are not "out-right" sinners, but people who evidently thought they were "doing a work for God."]

Their relationship with the Lord is all of self (soul) and nothing of the spirit. Because they know nothing of the spirit - nothing about "beholding and reflecting" the Lord - it's altogether natural for them to have a dichotomous view of man. How could it be otherwise? **[We urge you to review Chapter I again.]**

TO POST-MILLENNIALISTS, THE CHURCH IS MORE IMPORTANT THAN CHRIST

Post-millennialism (and, *ipso facto*, dichotomy) emphasizes "doing" over "beholding;" "works" over "reflecting" - and, more than that, it emphasizes the church over Christ in a most perverted fashion. In post-millennialism, it's the church that is going to bring in the kingdom, not Christ. Christ is seen as merely an observer in heaven while Christians on earth do all the work.

And more than that, in the post-millennial scheme of things, the individual is de-emphasized, and "corporate unity" is emphasized - but it is the mechanical "unity" of a human corporation rather than the kind of unity that flows out of the individual as a natural consequence of "beholding and reflecting" Christ in one's spirit; it's the unity that is brought about by outward control - a control which flows from church officers (elders, pastors, "apostles," "prophets," etc). It's the kind of unity that is brought about by "outward conformity," not the inner leading of Christ in our spirits.

UNITY IN THE POST-MILLENNIAL SCHEME OF THINGS IS DEPENDENT ON HIERARCHY



The unity that the post-Millennialists posit is based on a military-type of discipline

The unity that post-millennialism brings is dependent on hierarchy - the orderly arrangement of church officers in a kind of giant pyramid which emphasizes rank and position. How high up one is in this pyramid determines how "close" one is to God. One is required to "submit" to those who are "above," and to "rule over" those who are "below" - and one's spirituality is measured by one's submission to authority (i.e., to one's submission to control).

The order which post-millennialism promotes is based on a military-like discipline, a discipline which is enforced by an outward chain of command. The thought that all men have equal access to Christ through the spirit (trichotomy) is anathema to post-millennialism - it strikes at the military-like order which post-millennialism

promotes. The belief that each individual Christian has a spirit and can be led individually by that spirit without resort to "outward authority" is a threat to post-millennialism's pyramid-like structure and scheme of things. For post-millennialists to admit that man is a trichotomous being and *ipso facto* not dependent on hierarchy to guide and direct him is tantamount to destroying the necessity for post-millennialism's pyra-

mid. The thought that each individual Christian can "know" God in his spirit independent of those "above" him in the hierarchy is an abomination and sacrilege to post-millennialists.

THE TRICHOTOMOUS VIEW OF MAN IS IN OPPOSITION TO HIERARCHY

But Jesus promoted no such hierarchical scheme of things. Jesus taught the exact opposite. He said,

"Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them.

"But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister (i.e., servant);

"And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant (i.e., slave):

"Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto (i.e., served), but to minister (i.e., serve), and to give his life a ransom for many." (Matt. 20:25-28)

Instead of teaching man to be dependent on an outward hierarchy, Jesus said,

"... ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie [i.e., the same anointing (which is truth and no lie) teaches all of you the same things]." (I John 2:27)

And exactly what is this anointing? Jesus said that it is -

"... the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you." (John 14:26)

And again, Jesus said,

"But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me ..." (John 15:26)

So important did Jesus believe the "Comforter's" ministry to be to the individual Christian - a ministry which stands totally outside any form of hierarchy - that Jesus said,

"... It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you." (John 16:5-7)

THE IMPORTANCE OF OUR INDIVIDUAL WALK WITH CHRIST

Trichotomy emphasizes the importance of the individual believer's walk with Christ - it's not that our "corporate" walk with other believers isn't important, but that the starting point for all our relationships with other believers, including our relationship with others in the church, is our individual walk with Christ. Trichotomy teaches that all believers - regardless of intellect and regardless of their station in life or their position in the church - have equal access to God through the Holy Spirit which indwells their human spirit, just as all the branches in the vine have equal access to the nourishment which the vine alone provides; Jesus said,

"I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing." (John 15:5)

And John the Apostle said,

"And now, little children, abide in him ..." (I John 2:27-28)

The secret is abiding in Him! - that's where everything begins. It's not intellect that counts, nor seminary training, nor worldly success, nor your "station" in the church or in life that counts - but abiding in Him and abiding in His Word. If a Christian does these things, everything else will follow, including a vibrant loving relationship with others as well as a fulfilling life in the church.

THE INDIVIDUAL & THE CHURCH

Yes, the church is important. Indeed, the Bible says that the church is the "Bride of Christ" (Rev. 21:9); **but we must always bear in mind that the church flows out of the Lord, not the Lord out of the church. The Lord comes first, then the church.**

Out of our individual relationship with the Lord flows the life of the church. If our individual walk with the Lord is wrong, then our life in the church will be wrong, and all the seminars, and all the books, and all the sermons aren't going to help; but when the individual believer "beholds and reflects" the glory of the Lord, then the church also will reflect and mirror the Lord's splendor - and not until. Put another way, the health of the human body depends on the health of the individual cells of the body, not *visa versa*. When all the cells of the body are healthy, then the whole body will be healthy - and not the other way around.

Some people speak of the church as if it somehow had its own identity apart from its individual members; but the church has no life of its own. It has life only because we - as individual members - have life. The church has no life apart from the individual members which compose it. The church reflects the glory of the Lord only insofar as its individual members are "beholding and reflecting" the glory of the Lord. Paul put it this way:

"And He came and preached peace to you who were far away, and peace to those who were near;
"For through Him we (as individual members) ... have our access in one Spirit [i.e., the Holy Spirit] to the Father.
"So then you [as individual members] are no longer strangers and aliens, but you are fellow citizens with the saints, and are of God's household,
"Having been built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Christ Jesus Himself being the corner stone,
"In whom the whole building [i.e., the church as a corporate body of believers], being fitted together is growing into a holy temple in the Lord ..." (Eph. 2:17-21 - NASB)

According to Paul, the order is this: first there are the individual members, who as individual members are touching and communing in their individual spirits with the one and only God-given Holy Spirit (i.e., the Comforter), and its through each individual member's touch with the one and only Spirit of God that we are quite effortlessly brought into oneness and then built together into a holy Temple (habitation) unto the Lord.

We urge you to see the following article, "[Today's Church: Making Zombies out of Christians.](#)"

CHAPTER VIII

TRIBULATION & JUDGMENT



"... tribulation brings about perseverance, and perseverance proven character, and proven character hope: and hope does not disappoint because the love of God has been poured out within our hearts through the Holy Spirit who was given to us ..." (Romans 5:3-5)

PART 1: TRIBULATION REVEALS WHAT IS ALREADY FORMED

INTRODUCTION

We have by now learned that we - as Christians, i.e., as the church of God - are going to go through the Tribulation – and that God is perfectly able to sustain us in that Tribulation as we behold and reflect Him in our spirits. We now turn to deal with the following matters:

- God's purpose for us in the Tribulation.
- The Two Witnesses

Before we begin, however, there is something very important that we should note regarding the matter of tribulation: tribulation reveals what is already formed in us; it does not add anything new to us.

TRIBULATION REVEALS WHAT IS ALREADY FORMED IN US; IT DOES NOT ADD ANYTHING NEW TO US

Oswald Chambers once wrote, "We are in danger of forgetting that we cannot do what God does, and that God will not do what we can do. We cannot save ourselves nor sanctify ourselves, God does that; but God will not give us good habits, He will not give us character, He will not make us walk aright. We have to do all that ourselves, we have to work out (i.e., develop) the salvation God has worked in (us) ..."

What Chambers was saying is that if we fail to take advantage of those opportunities now to "develop our salvation" [i.e., to bring it to maturity, to develop Christian character in ourselves, to have Christ's life actually worked out in us (Phil. 2:12)] then we will fail when a real crisis (test) finally comes.

Many of us, nonetheless, continue to think that if God gives the call, we will somehow or other rise to the occasion. We imagine that we will be OK; sadly, however, the crisis (test) will only reveal what has already been developed in our lives as Christian character - **it will not add anything new into us**. If we have not risen to the occasion before in the little things of life - we will surely fail when the real test comes. All that a crisis (test) does is reveal what we are already made of. If we have yielded to temptation and weakness before in the little things, we will yield to temptation and weakness in the big things. If we are not in God's will in the things that are nearest to us, when the crisis (test) comes, instead of being revealed as ready, we will be revealed as unready. **A crisis reveals character that has already been formed - it does not in itself create new character.**

The Bible says that someday our Christian character is going to be put to the test - that the time will come in all of our lives that pretense will have to yield to reality; when what we are really made out of will be

REMINDER

Remember how we develop "good habits," good character," etc. – it is by beholding and reflecting Christ in our spirit; specifically, the Word says: "But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass [mirror] the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord." (2 Corinthians 3:18).

If we are not in the process of "developing good habits and good character" it is because we have not been "beholding Christ in our spirit."

We must also bear in mind that the term "from glory to glory" implies that the process of transformation that is occurring in us takes time; it does not happen overnight. Again, please review Chapter I.

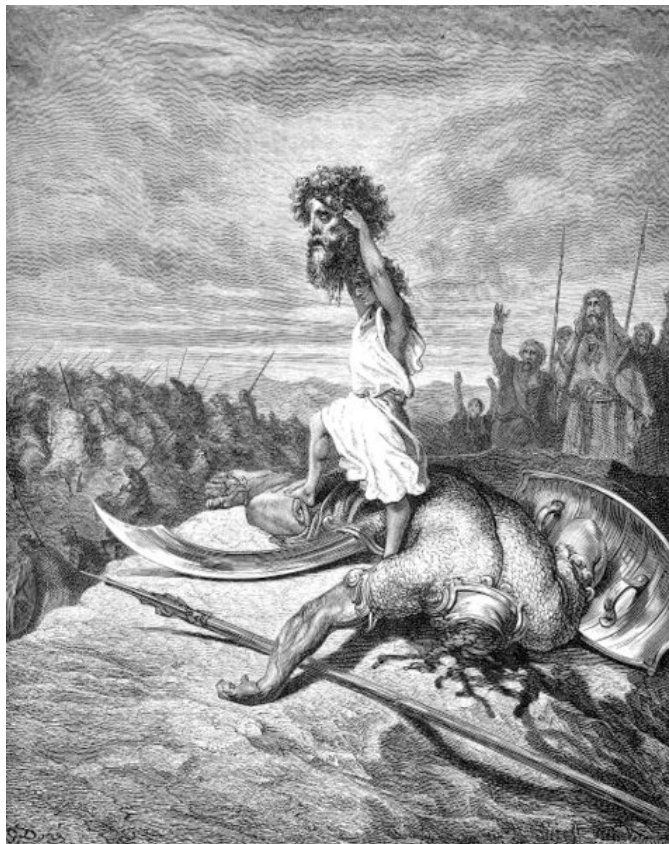
dragged out into the open for all to see, and we will be revealed for what we really are. If we have not "practiced the presence of God" in our lives, if we have not learned to yield ourselves to the leading of the Holy Spirit, if we have not taken the time to study the Word of God and know for sure what it really is all about, if we have not been living a sanctified life in the circumstances that we are presently in, if we have not been instant in prayer in the little things, then the crisis (test) will reveal all that!

If you say now, "I have no time for prayer now, I have no time now to practice the presence of Christ, it's so impractical to yield to Christ in this or that business decision now - but when the time comes, I will do it," our answer to you, sadly, is "**No you won't!**"

Many people think of David as a man of faith, and that when he went out to face Goliath, he relied on that faith to get him through - and that certainly is true. But what so many Christians fail to see is that the faith David had was not a blind faith - it was a faith that had been well developed.

His faith was a developed faith - and it was in the strength of that developed faith that he went out to face Goliath. David had developed his faith years before as a youth tending his father's sheep on the back side of the desert - out of the way where no one saw. He had tested it against a lion and a bear - and he had prevailed. When he finally met Goliath, then, he was simply walking in the way he had been moving all of his life. The path of faith he relied on when he faced Goliath was a well worn path - he knew it well. He was ready for Goliath. It was not blind faith that saw him through, it was developed faith. The story is recounted in First Samuel. The Bible says,

"And David spake to the men that stood by him, saying ... Who is this uncircumcised Philistine, that he should defy the armies of the living God? And when the words were heard which David spake, they rehearsed them before Saul: and he sent for him. And David said unto Saul, **Thy servant kept his father's sheep, and there came a lion, and a bear, and took a lamb out of the flock: And I went out after him, and smote him, and delivered it out of his mouth: and when he arose against me, I caught him by his beard, and smote him, and slew him. Thy servant slew both the lion and the bear: and this uncircumcised Philistine shall be as one of them, seeing he hath defied the armies of the living God. David said moreover, The LORD that delivered me out of the paw of the lion, and out of the paw of the bear, he will deliver me out of the hand of this Philistine.** And he took his staff in his hand, and chose him five smooth stones out of the brook, and put them in a shepherd's bag which he had, even in a scrip; and his sling was in his hand: and he drew near to the Philistine. And David put his hand in his bag, and took thence a stone, and slang it, and smote the Philistine in his forehead, that the stone sunk into his forehead; and he fell upon his face to the earth. (1 Sam. 17:26-51)



Let us, therefore, develop our faith now, while there is yet time - for soon our test will come, and our faith will be revealed for what it really is - either to honor or to dishonor:

**For there is nothing hid, which shall
not be manifested; neither is any
thing kept secret, but that it
should come abroad. (Mark 4:22)**

PART 2: JUDGMENT

INTRODUCTION

The word, "Judgment," conjures up fantasies of old, bent, black robed figures glowering down with solemn, pitiless faces from lofty heights; cavernous halls with high ceilings and polished marble floors; echoing footsteps and hushed whisperings. It is a word around which swirls vague feelings of sorrow and distress, dread and foreboding, alarm and fright. And always, there is about the word a gloomy and oppressive pallor; a dull, aching sense of impending doom.



The Scriptures anticipate a day of coming judgment - one that will make men's hearts stop beating in fear and their blood run cold with terror. The Bible refers to it over 150 times in both the Old and New Testaments. In the Old Testament, the Psalmist writes:

"... for He cometh [this Judge, who flies on the wings of the wind with fire in His eyes and darkness under His feet; whose pavilion round about Him is dark waters and thick clouds (Psalm 18:8-12)], for He cometh to judge the earth: He shall judge the world with [pure] righteousness, and the people with [absolute] truth." (Psalm 96:13)

And in the New Testament, Paul exclaims:

"... He hath appointed a day in which He will judge the world..." (Acts 17:31).

In the vernacular, or common language of the people, this day of horror has been referred to as Judgment Day - and perhaps even more to the point, as Doomsday. Its anticipation has always struck fear in the hearts of men and women. Indeed, so great has been man's dread of Judgment Day that in the year 999 a paralyzing terror gripped all of Europe in anticipation of the turn of the Millennium. It was commonly believed by prince and peasant alike that Judgment Day was New Years Day, 1000 A.D. The ordinary cares of life were given up. The land was left untilled. Houses and



buildings of every type were allowed to fall into disrepair. Throngs of common people slept in the porches and in the shadows of holy buildings and churches. Kings and emperors begged to be admitted to monasteries. A wild and uncontrollable dread and sense of foreboding seized the entire continent.

And make no mistakes about it, that same terror is still alive - lurking just beneath our Twenty-First Century veneer of sophistication and science. It comes to us when we are alone - at night; it's in our music, our movies, our art. It is a phantom that defies the scientist's efforts to dislodge it, and the psychologist's attempts to explain it away.

JUDGMENT: THE ACT OF DECLARING SOMETHING'S WORTH

But beyond our fears, beyond our foreboding, what does the word "judgment" really mean? Judgment is the act of **DECLARING** the worth of something, of **ANNOUNCING** its value. We do it every day, in countless ways. When we shop, we make judgments as to which foods are best for us, which coats are warmer for the winter, what car is best suited for our needs, where we should live, the house we should live in - all these decisions are or will be products of a judgment we have made or will make. And all these judgments (which have been manifested or **DECLARED** in our purchases) were preceded by some form or process of **TESTING**.

True, the testing may have only occurred in our minds at a very rudimentary level, but it occurred nonetheless. The judgments or decisions (which is another word for judgment) that were made as to which products to purchase were the results of that testing. **A JUDGMENT IS ALWAYS PRECEDED BY SOME FORM OF TESTING.**

TRIBULATION

This brings us to the matter of the Tribulation. The word, "Tribulation," means test. It is derived from the Latin word, *Tribulum*, which means to press and subject to stress as in a test. But the word means more - it means to **SEVERELY** test, to press to the point of **ANGUISH** - much as a test pilot tests an experimental plane and presses it to its very limits of toleration.

The Roman word, *Tribune*, is also derived from the Latin word *Tribulum*. A Tribune in ancient Rome was a magistrate or judge appointed to hear civil and criminal proceedings. It is the word from which our modern English word, "Tribunal," is derived - which means a seat of judgment. In all these instances, the word *Tribulum* (from which, once again, the English word "Tribulation" is derived) had a legal sense attached to it. It meant - in the sense that is appropriate here - pressure and stress applied to an object in order to test it. This is the exact sense that the translators of the King James version of the Bible were trying to convey when they translated the Greek word, *Thlipsis*, as Tribulation in Revelation 7:14. As with the Latin word, *Tribulum*, the Greek word, *Thlipsis*, means pressure and stress applied to an object for the purpose of testing. It is this sense, then, of the word, "Tribulation," which the translators of the King James version of the Bible wished to convey to the readers - **A TIME OF TESTING!!** This is substantiated by Revelation 3:10 when Jesus referred to the Tribulation as "the hour of testing."



The word, "Tribulation," means test. It is derived from the Latin word *Tribune*. A Tribune in ancient Rome was a magistrate or judge appointed to hear civil and criminal proceedings. It is the word from which our modern English word, "Tribunal," is derived - which means a seat of judgment. This is the exact sense that the translators of the King James version of the Bible were trying to convey when they translated the Greek word, *Thlipsis*, as Tribulation in Revelation 7:14. As with the Latin word, *Tribulum*, the Greek word, *Thlipsis*, means pressure and stress applied to an object for the purpose of testing.

WITNESSES

It goes without saying that in any test the presence of witnesses is paramount. They are required to **OBSERVE** and **RECORD** the results of the test.

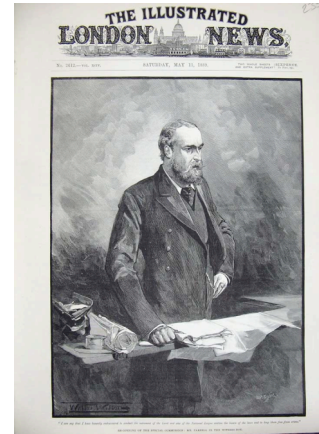
These observations and recordings, carefully compiled and documented, are then used as the basis of later **JUDGMENTS** (or decisions).

In a criminal case in a court of law, the judgment of the judge is preceded by a *test* of the evidence which has been compiled against the accused. It is on the basis of this test that the judge will make his decision as to the guilt or innocence of the accused.

The process is known as a *trial* - which really means *test*. Once again, throughout the entire proceeding, **WITNESSES** are called forth to give evidence as to the guilt or innocence of the accused.

These witnesses are people who saw or who can give **FIRSTHAND** accounts (or **TESTIMONY**) as to the guilt or innocence of the accused.

Hear-say or second and third-hand evidence (gossip) is not admissible as evidence. The witnesses can introduce into evidence only that which they have knowledge of on a **FIRSTHAND** basis; the evidence they are giving must be evidence that they saw **IN PERSON**.



A witness before the court in London, 1889.

PART 3: THE CHURCH IN THE TRIBULATION

INTRODUCTION

This brings us to the matter of why the Church is to be a part of this process: the answer is twofold. The paramount reason is that the church is to be subpoenaed as a "witness" against this world and its present world-ruler or *Kosmokrator*.

There is, however, a second reason - one which is almost as important as the first, and one which is absolutely vital to the accomplishment of the first - for if the church is to testify against the world and the things of this world, it is necessary that it be shown to be not a part of the world - *that it be once and for all separated from the world*. And because of this separation (or "manifestation"), just and seeking men everywhere will be drawn to Christianity and the Lord Jesus Christ, producing even in such a time, the "Great Harvest of the Lamb. *This is what all creation is waiting for*. Paul writes:

"For [even the whole] creation ... waits expectantly and longs earnestly for God's sons [the

ONE'S SALVATION IS NOT IN QUESTION HERE

Oh, you're surprised that the Church will be a part of this process? Well, be assured, dear Christian, your salvation is secure - it is not in question! Nothing can pluck you out of the Father's hand. Paul writes: "Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? Shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? For I am convinced that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor things present, nor things to come, nor powers, nor height, nor depth, nor any other created thing, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord." (Romans 8:35,38-39)

Church] to be made known - waits for the **REVEALING**, the **DISCLOSURE** of their sonship."
(Romans 8:19, Zondervan, the *Amplified Bible*)

The King James version translates it in this way:

"For the earnest expectation of the ... [creation] waiteth for the **MANIFESTATION** of the sons of God." (Romans 8:19)

And the NASB version translates it this way:

"For the *anxious longing* of the creation waits eagerly for the **REVEALING** of the sons of God."
(Romans 8:19)

In this Paul is saying that the whole universe is waiting for something to happen insofar as the Church is concerned. It is waiting for the church to be "**REVEALED**," "**DISCLOSED**," "**MANIFESTED**."

These are interesting words that Paul has chosen to use with regard to the Church. In a back-handed way, what Paul is really saying is that the Church has been hidden and obscured in this present dispensation (age).

What? But hasn't the Church always been with us? Can't we see it all about us? In the hundreds and thousands of church buildings that seem sometimes to all but surround us? In the proliferation of a now almost countless number of Christian TV and radio stations? In the new manifestation of Christian political power in such organizations as the Christian Coalition, the Traditional Values Coalition, *Christian Voice*, etc.

But do all these church buildings, all this Christian activity, all these people claiming to be Christian and **born-again** really represent the Church? If they do, then God help us. Was the Thirty Years War - which made the streets of Europe run red with blood four hundred years ago - really a Christian activity? What about the Inquisition? What about Jim Jones and the Jonestown Suicides? What about all this?

Andrew Miller, the well-known and godly Church historian, wrote in the last century:

"We must always bear in mind when reading what is called a history of the Church, that from the days of the apostles until now, there have been **TWO DISTINCT** and widely different classes of persons in the professing Church: the merely nominal, and the real - the true, and the false. This was predicted: 'For I know this', says the apostle, '*that after my departure [death] shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock. Also of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them*'. (Acts 20) His second Epistle [letter] to Timothy is also full of warnings ... as to the various forms of evil which were then but too plainly manifest ...



Andrew Miller

"... Some historians have not taken into account this sad mixture of evil vessels with the good - of true Christians and false. They have not themselves been spiritual-minded men. Hence they have rather made it their chief object to record the many unchristian and wicked ways of mere professors [those who said they were Christians, but were not]. They have dwelt at great length, and with great minuteness, on the heresies that have troubled the Church - on the abuses that have disgraced it. Much rather would we endeavor to trace, all down through the long dark pages of history, the **SILVER LINE OF GOD'S GRACE IN TRUE CHRISTIANS**; though at times the alloy so predominates that the pure ore is scarcely perceptible.

"[But] God has never left us without witness. He has had His loved and cherished, though **HIDDEN** ones, in all ages and in all places. No eye but His could see the seven thousand in Israel who had not bowed their knees to the image of Baal, in the days of Ahab and Jezebel. And tens of thousands, we

doubt not, even from the darkest days of Christianity, will be found at last in the "Glorious Church," which Christ will present to Himself, on the long-looked-for day of His nuptial glory ..."

THE PARABLE OF THE WHEAT AND THE TARES: A PARABLE OF THE TRIBULATION

Jesus himself, speaking in a prophetic parable concerning this condition of the Church, said:

"The kingdom of heaven [the Church] may be compared to a man who sowed good seed in his field.
"But while men were sleeping, his enemy came and sowed tares also among the wheat, and went away.
"And the slaves of the landowner came and said to him, Sir, did you not sow good seed in your field?
How then does it have tares?
"And he said to them, An enemy has done this! And the slaves said to him, Do you want us, then, to go and gather them up?
"But he said, No; lest while you are gathering up the tares, you may root up the wheat with them.
"Allow both to grow together until the harvest; and in the time of the harvest I will say to the reapers, First gather up the tares and bind them in bundles to burn them up; but gather the wheat into my barn. "Then He left the multitudes, and went into the house. And His disciples came to Him, saying, Explain to us the parable of the tares of the field.
"And He answered and said, The one who sows the good seed is the Son of Man and the field is the world; and as for the good seed, these are the sons of the kingdom; and the tares are the sons of the evil one;
"And the enemy who sowed them is the devil, and the harvest is the end of the age; and the reapers are angels.
"Therefore just as the tares are gathered up and burned with fire, so shall it be at the end of the age. "And will cast them into the furnace of fire; in that place there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.
"Then **THE RIGHTEOUS WILL SHINE FORTH AS THE SUN** in the kingdom of their Father. He who has ears, let him hear." (Matthew 13:24-30; 36-43)



THE RIGHTEOUS WILL SHINE FORTH AS THE SUN in the kingdom of their Father.

Now in connection with the parable above, it is interesting to note how the harvest was carried out in the ancient world and how the wheat [the good seed] was separated from the tares and the chaff [the bad seed]. **BOTH WERE HARVESTED TOGETHER!** Then through a process of winnowing, the wheat was separated from the tares and the chaff. The process of winnowing was accomplished in this manner: first, the harvest was crushed and spread out on a large floor; then workers took shovels and threw the harvest into the air by the shovel-full. The tares and chaff, being lighter than the kernels of wheat, were blown away by the wind, usually into another bin, while the kernels of wheat, being heavier, fell again to the threshing floor. In this way the wheat was separated from the tares and the chaff. The chaff and tares, being good for nothing, were then gathered together and burned, while the wheat was gathered together, bundled and stored in the barn.



Separating the wheat from the chaff (or tares).

Now it is important to note in this process, that the wheat itself is not being tested at all. Wheat is wheat!! Tares are tares!! There

is nothing in this process which is meant to test the quality of the wheat. Neither is there anything in this process that the wheat is supposed to do. The wheat is required to do nothing. Works are not involved!! The wheat needs to do only one thing - be what it is inherently - wheat. The process is a **SEPARATING PROCESS**. It is not a process of works. The purpose of the entire process is quite simple: to separate, and by separating to **MANIFEST** or **DISCLOSE**, or **REVEAL** (Romans 8:19) the wheat from the tares and the chaff.

- **We urge you to see our exhaustive and detailed series on the Tribulation: "The Tribulation" – Part 1, Part 2, Part 3, Part 4, Part 5, Part 6, Part 7 and Part 8.**

PART 4: THE TRIBULATION AS A WINNOWING OF GOD

"Though the fig tree may not blossom, Nor fruit be on the vines;
Though the labor of the olive may fail, And the fields yield no food;
Though the flock be cut off from the fold, And there be no heard in the stalls - **"YET I WILL REJOICE IN THE LORD, I WILL JOY IN THE GOD OF MY SALVATION."**

(Habakkuk 3:17-18)

INTRODUCTION

What we call today the Church is surely a mixture of *wheat* and *tares* - good seed and *bad seed*.

In a day when it has become so popular - even fashionable - to be referred to as "born-again" that political figures [**whom the Bible calls the basest or lowest of people** (Daniel 4:17)] refer to themselves as "born-again" to get votes, there certainly can be no doubt concerning this matter.

Yes, there is a winnowing coming! John the Baptist, speaking prophetically, said of it:

"I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance, but He who is coming after me [i.e., in the "end of days"] is mightier than I ...

"His winnowing fan is in His hand, and He will thoroughly purge His threshing floor, and gather His wheat into the barn; but He will burn up the chaff [tares] with unquenchable fire." (Matthew 3:11-12)

And how will He accomplish this winnowing? By the Tribulation! The Tribulation is to be the great winnowing of God spoken of by John the Baptist! And what will this winnowing accomplish? A great separation between those who truly love Christ and those who merely claim to love Him, but whose hearts are far away. This is the **EXACT** context in which John uttered his prophecy:

"Then Jerusalem [i.e., the entire Jewish religious community], all Judea, and all the region around the Jordan went out to him [John]

"And were baptized by him in the Jordan, confessing their sins.

"But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming to his baptism, he said to them, "Brood of vipers! Who has warned you to flee from the wrath to come?" (Matthew 3:5-7)

John the Baptist was a forerunner, a precursor to Jesus. His work was a work of separation - to separate the hypocrite from the believer, the wheat from the chaff, the Pharisees and the Sadducees from those in Israel



Habakkuk

who genuinely longed for the Messiah. So also with Jesus in the work of the Tribulation - to which John specifically pointed in this prophecy.

The work of tribulation is first and foremost a **SEPARATING** work. Specifically, it separates those who merely profess Christianity from those who truly believe. This is important. The work of tribulation - in the first instance - is a work directed not at separating the atheist from the believer, or the idolater from those who worship the one true God (idolaters and atheists are people who obviously and openly are not Christians), or any other such thing; but rather it is a work **SPECIFICALLY** directed at separating those who claim to be Christian (out of convention or advantage) from those who truly are. And this is precisely the work of tribulation in the Parable of the Sower. Concerning those who accept Christianity and profess it superficially for material advantage, Jesus had this to say:

"But he who received the seed [Gospel] on stony places, this is he who hears the word and immediately receives it with joy;

"Yet he has no root in himself, but endures only for a while. For when **TRIBULATION** or **PERSECUTION** arises because of the word, immediately he stumbles [other translations say 'wither away'].\" (Matthew 13:20-21)

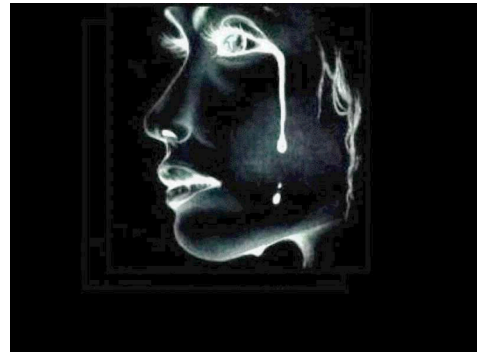
TRIBULATION: A WORK OF TRANSFORMATION IN THE BELIEVER'S HEART

Yes, tribulation **SEPARATES**, but there is another more sublime work of tribulation; and this work of tribulation is not a separating work, but a purifying work directed not at the hypocrite, but at the believer. This work elevates, ennobles, glorifies, and transforms the believer. Paul says:

"... but we also **EXULT** in our tribulations, knowing that tribulation brings about perseverance; and perseverance, proven character; and proven character, hope; and hope does not disappoint, because the love of God has been poured out within our hearts through the Holy Spirit who was given to us.\" (Romans 5:3-5)

Indeed, tribulation is the gate through which all true believers must pass into the kingdom of heaven; transformation is impossible without it. The Bible says:

"And when they had preached the gospel to that city and made many disciples, they returned to Lystra, Iconium, and Antioch, strengthening the souls of the disciples, exhorting them to continue in the faith, and saying, 'We must through many tribulations enter the kingdom of God'.\" (Acts 14:21-22)



Tribulation brings about perseverance; And perseverance, proven character; and proven character, hope

And again, the Bible - speaking of those saints who through the transforming power of the Holy Spirit (during the Great Tribulation) have been translated to the very throne of God - says:

"After these things I looked, and behold, a great multitude which no one could number, of all nations, tribes, peoples, and tongues, standing before the throne and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, with palm branches in their hands ...

"Then one of the elders answered, saying to me, Who are these arrayed in white robes, and where did they come from?

"And I said to him, Sir, you know. So he said to me, **THESE ARE THE ONES WHO COME OUT OF THE GREAT TRIBULATION**, and washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.\" (Revelation 7:9,13-14)

TRIBULATION: GOD'S WAY OF MANIFESTING HIS GLORY IN THE SAINTS

The Bible says:

"There was a man in the land of Uz, whose name was Job, and that man was **BLAMELESS, UPRIGHT**, fearing God, and turning away from evil. "Now there was a day when the sons of God [angels] came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan also came among them. "And the Lord said to Satan, 'From where do you come?' Then Satan answered the Lord and said, 'From roaming about on the earth and walking around on it'. "And the Lord said to Satan, 'Have you considered My servant Job? For there is no one like him on the earth, a **BLAMELESS, UPRIGHT** man, fearing God and turning away from evil'. "Then Satan answered the Lord, 'Does Job fear God for nothing? [Why shouldn't he respect you since you take care of him so well?] "Hast Thou not made a hedge about him [haven't you put a wall around him to protect him from me?] and his house [his family] and all that he has, on every side? Thou hast blessed the work of his hands, and his possessions have increased in the land. "But put forth Thy hand now and touch all that he has; he will surely curse Thee to Thy face'. " [but take away the wall and let me at him, and he will hate you] "The Lord said to Satan, '**BEHOLD, ALL THAT HE HAS IS IN YOUR POWER ...**'" (Job 1:1, 6-12)



There was a man in the land of Uz, whose name was Job, and that man was **BLAMELESS, UPRIGHT**, fearing God, and turning away from evil.

Why does God allow his servants to suffer? Why does God allow Satan access to them? Why does God allow tribulation to enter their lives? Many in today's Church, of course, deny that God does - but this is obviously not what the Scriptures say. But these same people would retort that God only allows suffering when there is sin - and, apparently, this is what Eliphaz, Bildad, and Zophar, Job's friends, said about Job during his sufferings: that Job was suffering because there was "hidden sin" in Job's life, and that this was the only reason that God would allow such suffering in one of his servants.

But God was greatly angered by such thinking:

"And it came about after the Lord had spoken these words to Job, that the Lord said to Eliphaz the Temanite, 'My wrath is kindled against you and against your two friends, because you have not spoken of Me what is right as My servant Job has. "'Now therefore, take for yourselves seven bulls and seven rams, and go to My servant Job, and offer up a burnt offering for yourselves, and My servant Job will pray for you. For I will accept him so that I may not do with you according to your folly, because you have not spoken of Me what is right, as My servant Job has'." (Job 42:7-8)

GOD'S PURPOSE IN TRIBULATION: TO MANIFEST & DISPLAY HIS OWN GLORY IN THE SAINTS

GOD WAS GLORIFIED IN JOB!! Satan had said that Job loved God only because of the "things" God bestowed upon him. What a terrible thing to say. It is the curse of wealth. How does a rich man ever know that he is truly loved? The sad truth is, he doesn't so long as he retains his wealth. But should he lose it, then he will find out. Great crowds of people followed Jesus so long as he fed them and healed them of their diseases. But when tribulation arose because of the Word He spoke, the crowds disappeared. Oh, to be loved because of who you are, and not just because of the "things" you have! This is the love that God desires from those who follow Him. It is the love that Ruth gave to Naomi, and this even after Naomi had

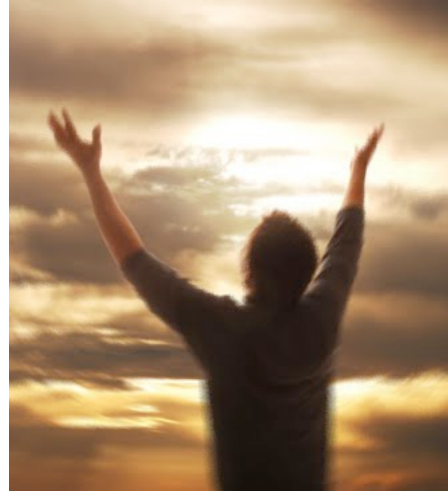
asked Ruth to depart from her because she [Naomi] had nothing further to give Ruth - she no longer possessed any "things" with which to "purchase" Ruth's love:

"But Ruth said, 'Do not urge me to leave you or turn back from following you; for where you go, I will go, and where you lodge, I will lodge. Your people shall be my people, and your God, my God. 'Where you die, I will die, and there I will be buried. Thus may the Lord do to me, and worse, if anything but death parts you and me'." (Ruth 1:16-17)

The Lord is looking for such to follow Him - those who will follow after Him long after the "things" are gone, the crowds have left, the popularity faded; when the clothes are tattered and torn, there is no food on the table, and persecution rages all around. These are the disciples of Jesus - with such people one can repose trust and friendship, true love is here to be found!

These are the disciples who can say with the prophet Habakkuk:

"Though the fig tree may not blossom, Nor fruit be on the vines; Though the labor of the olive may fail, And the fields yield no **food; Though the flock be cut off from the fold, And there be no heard in the stalls - "YET I WILL REJOICE IN THE LORD, I WILL JOY IN THE GOD OF MY SALVATION."** (Habakkuk 3:17-18)



YET I WILL REJOICE IN THE LORD, I WILL JOY IN THE GOD OF MY SALVATION.

It is in this kind of love that the **TRUE** Church will be "revealed," "disclosed," "manifested" (Romans 8:19)! It is this kind of love which will expose the hypocrites for what they really are. It is this kind of love which will separate the wheat from the tares. And it is only in tribulation that this love is truly revealed in all of its splendor and peerless beauty. In this, God's glory can find rest; in this the presence of God securely dwells.

PART 5: THE WORLD

"Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? **whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world [Gk. *Kosmos*] is the enemy of God."**

James 4:4



Ye adulterers and adulteresses

INTRODUCTION

We have been discussing God's purpose in the Tribulation - and to a large extent we have discussed this matter in relation to the church; but it is not the church that constitutes the actual focal point of the Tribulation, but the world. It is not the church that is being "tried" [remember here, that's what the word "tribulation" (or *Tribulum*) means] and "judged," it is the world. And so we now turn our attention to this matter.

The word "world" (Gk., *kosmos*) is used in three ways in the New Testament:

- First, it means the **MATERIAL WORLD** (Acts 17:14; Matt. 13:35; John 1:10; Mark 16:15).
- Second, it means **THE INHABITANTS OF THE WORLD** as a whole (John 1:10; 3:16; 12:19; 17:21) - **THE WHOLE RACE OF MAN ALIENATED FROM GOD AND HOSTILE TO THE CAUSE OF CHRIST** (Heb. 11:38; John 14:17; 14:27; 15:18).
- Third, it means the whole circle of **WORLDLY** goods, endowments, riches, advantages, pleasures, which though hollow and fleeting, stir our desires and seduce us from God, so that they are obstacles to the cause of Christ (I John 3:17; Matt. 16:26; I Cor 2:12; 3:19, 7:31; Titus 2:12; II Peter 1:4; 2:20; I John 2:15-17; James 1:27).



The beautiful people and the beautiful things of this life.

The Bible calls the world (as described above) - and this is very, very serious - the,

- "**ENEMY of God.**"
- And -
- It equates the world with "**DARKNESS.**"

THE WORLD: THE ENEMY OF GOD

The Bible tells us that the world is the enemy of God; specifically, it says:

"Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? **WHOSOEVER THEREFORE WILL BE A FRIEND OF THE WORLD IS THE ENEMY OF GOD.**" (James 4:4)

As we just suggested, that's serious, that's very serious - and very frightening! Are you a friend of this world? Is the world a friend of yours? If so, **GOD IS YOUR ENEMY!** - and that's not a good thing. Jesus said:

"I say unto you my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do.

"But I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear: Fear him, which after he hath killed hath power to cast into hell; yea, I say unto you, Fear him." (Luke 12:4-5)

NOTE: Only God has this power.

THE WORLD IS EQUATED WITH DARKNESS

The Bible also equates the world with **DARKNESS**. Specifically, the Bible says:

"And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and **MEN LOVED DARKNESS** [i.e., the world] rather than light, because their deeds were evil." (John 3:19)

And that's not all! The Bible goes on to say -

"For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the **DARKNESS OF THIS WORLD**, against spiritual wickedness in high places." (Eph. 6:12)

And -

"I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me should not **ABIDE IN DARKNESS** [i.e., should not abide in the world]." (John 12:46)

And again -

"Then spake Jesus unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me **SHALL NOT WALK IN DARKNESS** [i.e., should not have his "living" and "being" in darkness], but shall have the light of life." (John 8:12)

And, finally, John writes,

"In him was life; and the life was the light of men. And the light shineth in darkness; and **THE DARKNESS** [i.e., the world] **COMPREHENDED IT NOT.**" (John 1:4-5)

THE GREAT KOSMOKRATER

Moreover, the word *kosmos* implies that behind the world there is a mind - the "**PRINCE OF THIS WORLD**" - which gives order and arrangement to it. He is the **KOSMOKRATER** or world-ruler - a word which, however, appears only once, and is used in the plural of his lieutenants: "the **WORLD RULERS OF THIS DARKNESS.**" (Eph. 6:12) The Bible says:

"The **WHOLE** world [*kosmos*] lieth in the evil one [i.e., the **WHOLE** world is under the control of Satan]." (John 5:19)

The world [*kosmos*] is Satan's grand creation, and he has directed all of his strength and ingenuity into causing it to flourish. To what end? To capture man's allegiance and draw him to himself. Satan has one object - to establish his own dominion in human hearts worldwide!



The great Kosmokrator

THE WORLD ENCOMPASSES BOTH THE "GOOD" AND THE "BAD;" THE MATERIAL AND THE SPIRITUAL

Now we cannot stress this fact enough: Satan controls the **WHOLE** world (*kosmos*). Not just part of the world, but the **WHOLE** world.

That's why the Scriptures say that to be "*a friend of the world is to be the enemy of Christ.*" This includes both the "good" and the "bad" of this world; both the "ugly" and the "beautiful" - and it is for this reason that I rather suspect that most Christians have a difficult time differentiating between what is "of the world" and what is "of God." They are unable to grasp the fact that **BOTH** the "good" and the "bad" of this world are of Satan. Christians confuse "worldliness" with "carnality" (i.e., the "bad" of this world - e.g., lust, lewdness, eroticism, sensuality, etc. - and even such mundane things as watching TV, going to the movies, listening to "rock and roll" music, etc.) - and, as a result, they naively think that if they avoid carnality everything will be okay.

They fail to recognize that the "world" (Gk. *kosmos*) which the Bible has in mind is much more than that; that it encompasses **ALL** that is of this life and of this present world; everything; both the **good** and the bad, the **beautiful** and the ugly, the **sweet** and the bitter - i.e., all those goods, endowments, riches,

advantages, pleasures, etc. which, though hollow and fleeting, stir our desires **and make us feel "at home" and "comfortable" in (with) this life.**

Moreover, the Bible's use of the word *kosmos* indicates that it has more than just the material world in view; that it's view of the "world" encompasses abstract things as well which have spiritual and moral value (e.g., I Cor 2:12, "*the spirit of the world*;" 3:19, "*the wisdom of this world*;" 7:31, "*the fashion of this world*;" Titus 2:12, "*worldly lusts*;" 2 Peter 1:14, "*the corruption that is in the world*;" 2:20, "*the defilements of the world*;" I John 2:16, 17, "*all that is in the world, the lust ... the vainglory ... passeth away*;" etc.).

There are no exceptions - both the "good" and the bad," the "spiritual" and the "material" are included, and it is, therefore, futile for those who think that asceticism is a way out; a special means or path to holiness and purity, and that if they somehow or other avoid the material things of this life, they will escape the lusts thereof. Nothing could be further from the truth. Asceticism is just another road to corruption - and a very uncomfortable one at that.

Why? Because when Adam sinned, he brought **ALL** the world - again, the "good" and the "bad," the "material" as well as the "abstract" - under the curse of sin. As a result, and regardless of the differing guises in which the world may from time to time present itself (and no matter how it tries to hide its real character), it is **IMPLACABLY** hostile to God. The Bible is very clear on this matter: I Corinthians 1:21 says that the world "*knows not God*" - and more than that, John 14:17 says that it is not even capable of receiving (i.e., competent or able to comprehend) "the Spirit of Christ." Indeed, John 15:18 says that the world "**HATES**" Christ. John puts it this way:

"If any man loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him." (John 2:15)

MY KINGDOM IS NOT OF THIS WORLD

And so at last we begin to understand the unbreachable chasm that separates the "Kingdom of God" from the "Kingdom of this World." There can be no truce between these two kingdoms; no possibility for a "negotiated settlement" (i.e., peace) between them, or - put another way - the "world" (on the one hand) and Christ (on the other hand). One is either "**of** Christ," or "**of** the world." There is no middle ground, no "moderate" position. (John 8:23)

Hence, Jesus says,

"My kingdom is not of this world." (John 18:36)

In other words, no one who has his "living" or "being" in the world can be made a "living" stone in Christ's building (i.e., His church). I repeat: the "Kingdom of God" has nothing to do with the "Kingdom of this World."

PILGRIMS AND STRANGERS

The Bible - in describing the people of God - says:

"For they look for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God." (Heb 11:10)

In this great passage of Scripture (Hebrews, chapter 11), Paul describes in unmistakable terms the attitude towards the world which all those who wish to serve God must have if they are to please Him; there's no ambiguity here; no equivocation; no avoidance; no attempt at evasion. Paul declares that all those who wish to serve God must consider the world as alien territory, and they themselves as only "sojourners" in it - people who are merely transiting through it on their way to another land



Pilgrims and Strangers

- a heavenly country whose "builder and maker is God" (Heb. 11:10); and that while here on earth, there is a necessity laid upon them to continually remind themselves of their "alien status" by -

"... confessing (both in word and in the way they live) that they are strangers (foreigners) and pilgrims (travelers, wanderers, wayfarers) on the earth ..." (Heb. 11:13)

The Bible says that they must not only accept this fact, they must "embrace" it; they must be "persuaded" (convinced) by it, and by doing so to demonstrate that they are actively -

"... seeking another country ... a better country, that is, an *heavenly* (one)." (Heb. 11:14) "... wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for He hath prepared for them (a heavenly) city." (Heb. 11:16)

WE ARE NOT ONLY ALIENS TO THE WORLD, WE ARE DEAD TO THE WORLD

And there is more: not only are we to consider ourselves as aliens to this world, we are also to consider ourselves as **DEAD** to the world. There is no way that the world can have any effect on a dead man. If you are dead to the world, you are safe from the world. No Christian can serve God and still be "alive" to this world. The "**THINGS**" of this world will always keep him back. We must be able to say with the Apostle Paul:

"I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me." (Galatians 2:20)



That's what **BAPTISM** is all about. When you chose to be baptized, you made a pledge that you would conduct your life as if you were **DEAD** to the world, but alive unto Christ. If Christ says, "Go," you will go; if Christ says, "Come," you will come. You will be as James and John when Christ called them:

Dead to the world.

"And when he [i.e., Christ] had gone a little further thence, he saw James the *son* of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the ship mending their nets.

"And straightway he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him." (Mark 1:19-20)

Neither John nor James hesitated. They didn't ask Christ, What about our father? What about our fishing business? They just went! Or like Matthew sitting at the receipt of customs:

"And as Jesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man, named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom: and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him." (Matthew 9:9)

Matthew **IMMEDIATELY** left his "receipt of customs" and followed Jesus.

"BE IT UNTO ME ACCORDING TO THY WORD"

We must have that attitude that Mary, the mother of Jesus, had when she said to the angel,

"Behold the handmaid of the Lord; be it unto me according to thy word. And the angel departed from her." (Luke 1:38)

She didn't protest to the angel that by obeying him people would question her virginity; that they would, no doubt, call her a prostitute when they discerned that she was pregnant - seeing that she was not married; that she was running the very grave risk of being stoned to death. She simply obeyed.

Are you able to do this? Are you able to say with Mary, "*Be it unto me according to thy word.*" If you are still "alive to the world," you will **NEVER** be able to do it - no matter how hard you try.

WE ARE BAPTIZED INTO CHRIST'S DEATH

The Bible says:

"Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his **DEATH**?

"Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

"For if we have been planted [buried] together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also *in the likeness* of his resurrection." (Romans 6:3-5)

Clearly, James and John and Matthew and Mary had set their minds on the "things above," not on the "things of this world." That's what **ALL** of Christ's servants **MUST** do if they are to get anywhere with Christ. The Bible says:

"Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth.

"FOR YE ARE DEAD [to the world], and your life is hid with Christ in God.

"When Christ, *who is* our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory." (Col. 3:2-4)

Jesus said:

"Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and *of* the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God." (John 3:5)

The two [that is to say, baptism (being born of water) and being "born again" of the Spirit] are equated in the Scriptures. You can't have one without the other. If you are truly "born again" you will consider yourself **DEAD** to the world. If you are not **DEAD** to the world, then your salvation stands in jeopardy.

OUR HEAVENLY CITIZENSHIP

The Bible says that as Christians we have been -

"... delivered ... from the power of darkness, and ... **TRANSLATED** ... into the kingdom of God's dear Son ..." (Col. 1:13)

What a wonderful and precious thing - and so, with countless others of like mind, we can sing:

"This world is not our home,
we're just a passing through,
Our treasures are laid up
somewhere beyond the blue,
The angels beckon us
from heaven's open door,



Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his **DEATH**? Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death ...

*And we can't feel at home
in this world anymore.
"Oh Lord you know,
we have no friend like you,
If heaven's not our home,
then, Lord, what will we do,
The angels beckon us
from heaven's open door,
And we can't feel at home
in this world anymore."*

Now that is very important! - to be able to sing with the saints of God, "*This world is not my home, I'm just a passing through ...*" And to be able to say that "*we have been delivered ... from the power of darkness, and ... **TRANSLATED** ... into the kingdom of God's dear Son ...*" (Col. 1:13)

THE WORLD IS GOING TO BE "TRIED" AND "JUDGED"

Dear brothers and sisters: the world is going to be "tried" and "judged," and you don't want to be around when that happens. The Bible says,

"He hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness ..." (Acts 17:31)

God help you if on that day you are still "**ALIVE**" unto the world.

PART 6: THE TWO WITNESSES

INTRODUCTION



We have learned that the word "Tribulation" means **TEST**; that the world is going to be "tested" or put "on trial" and that to this end witnesses are going to be called against the accused, i.e., the **WORLD**.

A witness is someone who attests to a fact, who gives evidence. Moreover, the testimony which is given must be based on a **FIRSTHAND** account - it cannot be based on what someone else said (hear-say).

In a legal sense, a witness is a person called upon to **OBSERVE** a legal transaction in order to testify concerning it, especially if it is later called into question; he is required to be present at the transaction, **HE MUST OBSERVE IT PERSONALLY**.

In criminal cases, a witness is someone who can give first-hand evidence as to the guilt or innocence of the accused.

GOD'S LAW DEMANDS THE PRESENCE OF TWO WITNESSES

There is, however, a strict demand that God places on the use of witnesses – specifically, there must be **TWO** witnesses regarding the matter at hand; the Bible says:



"A single witness shall not rise up against a man on account of any iniquity or any sin which he has committed; on the evidence of two or three witnesses a matter shall be confirmed." (Deut. 19:15)

"On the evidence of two witnesses or three witnesses, he who is to die shall be put to death; he shall not be put to death on the evidence of one witness." (Deut. 17:6)

"[Jesus said] even in your law it has been written, that the testimony of two men is true." (John 8:17)

"... but no person shall be put to death on the testimony of one witness." (Numbers 35:30)

Throughout the Scriptures, and permeating all of God's dealings with man, God has adhered to an iron-clad principle that He Himself laid down: **THAT NO MATTER BEFORE THE LAW SHALL BE ESTABLISHED WITHOUT THE TESTIMONY OF TWO WITNESSES**. This principle is central to all of God's dealings with man. There were two tables of testimony (the law) in the Ark of the Covenant; two cherubim that covered the Ark; two witnesses were necessary for a fair trial; the disciples were named in pairs and sent out two by two - not that they might keep each other company (as some naively suppose), but that the testimony of the one could be substantiated by the testimony of the other according to the Law; **AND FINALLY, TWO WITNESSES SHALL TESTIFY DURING THE TRIBULATION** (the Seventieth Week).

THE PROPHETIC SCRIPTURES: A MYSTERY

The prophetic Scriptures have been written as parables, a puzzle. Their meaning has been shrouded in a mystery, a seemingly impenetrable haze.

Why? - to protect them from those against whom their message is directed: from governments, peoples, and organizations; and most especially, to protect them from the false religious leaders of today's apostate church, who - if they truly knew what had been written - would destroy the Scriptures if they could. As it is written:

"Therefore I [Jesus] speak to them in parables; because while seeing they do not see, and while hearing they do not hear nor do they understand.

"And in their case the prophecy of Isaiah is being fulfilled, which says, '*You will keep on hearing, but will not understand; And you will keep on seeing, but will not perceive ...*' " (Matthew 13: 13-14)



Dick Cheney



C. Peter Wagner

THE PROPHETIC SCRIPTURES WRITTEN AS A PUZZLE

Why? - to protect them from those against whom their message is directed: from governments, peoples, and organizations; and most especially, to protect them from the false religious leaders of today's apostate church, who - if they truly knew what had been written - would destroy the Scriptures if they could.

But parables are surely clever devices, for while their purpose is to obscure truth from some, at the same time their purpose is to reveal truth to others. To some the prophetic Scriptures will always remain an enigma, while to those called according to His purpose, they are a cipher which, with study (II Tim. 2:15), can be unraveled:

"And the disciples came and said to Him, 'Why do You speak to them in parables'? And He answered and said to them, 'To you it has been granted to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it has not been granted'." (Matthew 13:10-11)



The prophetic Scriptures have been written as parables, a puzzle. Their meaning has been shrouded in a mystery, a seemingly impenetrable haze.

THE MYSTERY OF THE TWO WITNESSES

With all this in mind, let's look now at the mystery of the Two Witnesses. And we will begin by looking at the reference to them in Revelation 11:

"Then I was given a reed like a measuring rod. And the angel stood, saying, Rise and measure the temple of God, the altar, and those who worship there.

"But leave out the court which is outside the temple, and do not measure it, for it has been given to the Gentiles. And they will tread the holy city under foot for forty-two months. [3-1/2 years]

"And I will give power to my **TWO WITNESSES** and they will prophesy one thousand two hundred and sixty days [3-1/2 years], clothed in sackcloth.

"These are the **TWO OLIVE TREES** and the **TWO LAMPSTANDS** standing before the God of the earth.



These are the TWO OLIVE TREES and the TWO LAMPSTANDS standing before the God of the earth.

The Scripture continues:

"And if anyone wants to harm them, fire proceeds from their mouth and devours their enemies. And if anyone wants to harm them, he must be killed in this manner.
"These have power to shut heaven, so that no rain falls in the days of their prophecy; and they have power over waters to turn them to blood, and to strike the earth with all plagues, as often as they desire'.
"Now when they finish their testimony, the beast that ascends out of the bottomless pit will make war against them, overcome them, and kill them.
"And their dead bodies will lie in the street of the great city which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.
"Then those from the peoples, tribes, tongues, and nations will see their dead bodies three and a half days, and not allow their dead bodies to be put into graves.
"And those who dwell on the earth will rejoice over them, make merry, and send gifts to one another, because these two prophets tormented those who dwell on the earth.
"Now after the three and a half days the breath of life from God entered them, and they stood on their feet, and great fear fell on those who saw them.
"And they heard a loud voice from heaven saying to them, 'Come up here'. And they ascended to heaven in a cloud, and their enemies saw them.
"In the same hour there was a great earthquake seven thousand men were killed, and the rest were afraid and gave glory to the God of Heaven.
"The second woe is past. Behold, the third woe is coming quickly.
"Then the seventh angel sounded: and there were loud voices in heaven, saying, 'The kingdoms of this world have become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ, and He shall reign forever and ever!'
"And the twenty-four elders who are before God on their thrones fell on their faces and worshipped God, saying:
"We give You thanks, O Lord God Almighty, The One who is and who was and who is to come, Because You have taken Your great power and reigned.
"The nations were angry, and Your wrath has come, And the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that You should reward Your servants the prophets and the saints, and those who fear Your name, small and great, And should destroy those who destroy the earth'.
"Then the temple of God was opened in heaven, and the ark of His covenant was seen in His temple. And there were lightnings, noises, thunderings, an earthquake, and great hail." (Revelation 11)

UNRAVELING THE MYSTERY OF THE TWO WITNESSES

We have already seen that the Tribulation is a test - a trial; mankind and the nations of the earth are to be judged. Witnesses are to be called (subpoenaed) to observe, record, and give evidence as to the test results so there will be no question at a later date as to the veracity of the test. The question naturally arises, then, who are these witnesses upon whom so much rests? It's a puzzle. Certain Christians have attempted to answer the puzzle by contending that these two witnesses are Moses and Elijah (some say Moses and Enoch or Elijah and Enoch) who shall come back to earth and testify in the city of Jerusalem for 3-1/2 years, breathing fire from their mouths like human torches. But such an interpretation borders on the absurd and is unreasonable, and the Scriptures are neither absurd nor unreasonable. Moreover, such an interpretation makes a mockery of the evidence which is presented in the chapter. It's a mystery, a puzzle, a cipher - a **PARABLE** - the purpose of which is to obscure the meaning from those against whom it is directed, so that:



"... You will keep on hearing, but will not understand; And you will keep on seeing, but will not perceive ..." (Matthew 13:14)

With all this in mind, let's look now at the mystery of the Two Witnesses.

THE OMNIPRESENCE OF THE TWO WITNESSES

The Scripture indicates that these Two Witnesses have power over the whole earth and their presence extends evidently to every continent and land (Rev. 11:6). Now is such a thing possible for two single individuals? Not even the angels have such power. Only God - and He alone - is omnipresent, that is to say, capable of being everywhere at once. Even Christ, though Himself God, confined Himself to the limitations of humanity and restricted His presence during His earthly ministry to just one location at one given time,



THE TWO WITNESSES: everywhere at one time!

just as you or I are so restricted (and the angels for that matter also). Indeed, those living in Rome, Spain, Gaul (France), Britain, Germany, etc., never heard of Christ or knew of His presence during His time here on earth. Only later, through the ministry of the Holy Spirit in acting through the agency of the apostles and disciples (the Church), did these lands and peoples hear of Jesus Christ. Could two single human beings (or angels, for that matter) extend their presence beyond the limits that even Christ imposed upon Himself during His own earthly sojourn? Could their human (or angelic) presence be translated from the finite to the infinite? If the answer is no - which it obviously must be - how then can we account for the apparent omnipresence of the Two Witnesses?

And more, what does one **REASONABLY** do with that portion of the Scripture cited above which says that when the Two Witnesses desire to injure anyone, "fire goeth forth out of their mouth." Can anyone reasonably suppose that literal fire will issue forth from their mouths? If this is so, then one should apply such reasoning equally across the board and make the same supposition with regard to the references in Scripture which state that a sword will issue forth from Christ's mouth (Rev. 1:16). Such reasoning on the face of it is absurd, and - as we have already indicated - the Scriptures are neither unreasonable nor absurd. If such statements were made in any other piece of literature, they would, on the face of it, be judged allegorical. The Bible must be read in the same fashion! The Bible is speaking in parables.

You answer, "Well, God can do anything!" Yes, He can. But more often than not, He works within the limitations of His own Law. You say again, "God has, on occasion, set His Law aside in order to intervene directly in the affairs of man, such as when He made the sun to stand still for Moses." Yes, that's true, again - though one is still forced to admit that it borders on the ridiculous to picture two human beings (Elijah and Moses) walking about the streets of Jerusalem breathing fire out of their mouths like human torches. But **NEVER** has He shared His divine essence with any of His creation - and that's exactly what He would have to do in order to grant the quality of omnipresence to these Two Witnesses.

THE WAR BETWEEN THE TWO WITNESSES AND THE ANTICHRIST

Moreover, Revelation 11:7 states that:

"... the beast that ascends out of the bottomless pit [Antichrist] will make war against them [the Two Witnesses], overcome them, and kill them ..." (Revelation 11:7).

Once again, certain Christians have attempted to interpret this verse as meaning that the Antichrist will seize the Two Witnesses in the city of Jerusalem (where they will be preaching) and murder them. But is this an adequate explanation? It hardly seems so.

Let's examine this verse in greater detail, for we know from the context that Antichrist does something to them, but exactly what, we are not yet sure. The verse says that he makes war with them. The interpretation we have just examined has watered the word war down in latitude to murder. Now, while both war and murder are heinous in themselves, their scope is vastly different! The word war implies killing on a huge scale, while the word murder implies killing on a much more limited scale.



War between the Two Witnesses and the Antichrist

The Greek word for murder is *phoneuo* and means killing in the same sense that the word murder means in the English language, usually the criminal killing of a single isolated individual (or, rarely, individuals, plural). But that is specifically **NOT** the **GREEK** word that is used here. So, whatever it is that Antichrist does to the Two Witnesses, it is much more than this.

Let's continue our examination by looking at the actual Greek word for war. There are two words for war in the Greek language - *mache* and *polemos*. The word *mache* means battle, while the word *polemos* means war. Their meaning is the same, but, once again, their scope is vastly different. A battle is a single isolated engagement between two opposing armies which - though it can be terribly intense in and of itself - is still limited in time and space, while *polemos* is a whole **SERIES** of battles fought over a much longer period of time and over a much greater stretch of territory. While the scope of killing implied by *mache* is obviously much greater than what is implied by the word *phoneuo*, the scope of slaughter implied by *polemos* is that much greater still than that which is implied by *mache*. These distinctions are observed by Trench [*New Testament Synonyms*], Thayer [*Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament*], and Vincent [*Word Studies in the New Testament*].

POLEMOS IS THE WORD USED IN REVELATION 11:7. Even if the word *mache* had been the one used in connection with the Two Witnesses, the use of that word in connection with two single human beings would have been rendered unintelligible. But to use the word *polemos* in reference to the murder of two single individuals in the city of Jerusalem is akin to using a nuclear bomb to kill a gnat. It renders it impossible - it's sheer idiocy.

THE TWO WITNESSES & THE "GREAT CITY" OF REVELATION 11

But let's continue. How should we understand the passage:

"And their dead bodies [the dead bodies of the Two Witnesses] will lie in the street of the great city which spiritually [which in this sense is better translated as "allegorically" (NEB)] is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.

"Then those from the peoples, tribes, tongues, and nations will see their dead bodies ..." (Revelation 11:8-9a)



Once again, there are certain Christians who interpret this passage as meaning that Moses and Elijah will be killed in the city of Jerusalem, and that through the medium of television all the peoples of the world will see their dead bodies in the city and will rejoice over their murder. But is this an adequate explanation? No, it does not appear to be so; it breaks down at several points. And more than that, in this specific instance, the passage is clearly called **ALLEGORICAL**.

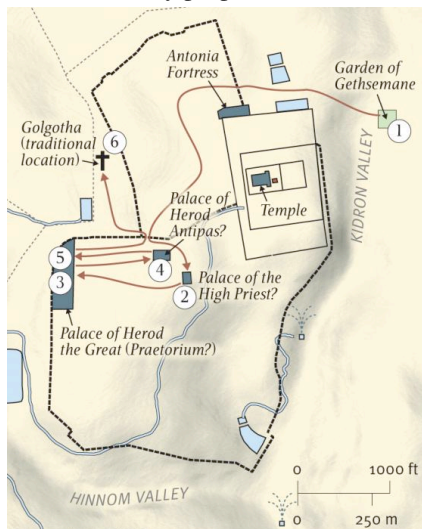
Let's look at the evidence. The above interpretation says that the Two Witnesses will be murdered in the city of Jerusalem. **But the name of Jerusalem is not mentioned.** The reference given is simply to "... that great city" which, allegorically, is called "Sodom and Egypt."

That Great City: Babylon the Great

But never once - in all of Scripture - is Jerusalem referred to as "great," let alone as "Sodom and Egypt." *The King James* and the *New King James* version of the Bible mistranslated the words in Revelation 21:10 as that "great city, New Jerusalem." But the *Revised*, *Emphasized* and the *New American Standard Bible* correctly render the same phrase as that "holy city..." The word "great" does not appear in the older Greek manuscripts, in reference to Jerusalem, only the word Holy.

Thus, while Jerusalem is referred to as the "Chosen City" (II Chron. 6:6), the "City of Peace" [which is its meaning], the "Holy City" (Neh. 11:1, Rev. 21:10), the "Throne of the Lord" (Jer. 3:17), the "City of Truth" (Zech. 8:3), the "City of the Great King" (Matt. 5:35), and the "City of the Living God" (Heb. 12:22), it is never referred to as a "great city." Indeed, Psalm 122:3 says that Jerusalem is a small, compact city - a city limited in space and area. Jerusalem has never derived its prominence because it was one of the great cities of the earth - a Babylon, a Ninevah, a Rome, a Paris, a London, or a New York; rather, it is because Jerusalem is a "holy city" that its fame is known throughout the earth. Why then would God here (in Revelation 11:8) refer to "Holy Jerusalem" as "great?"

But you say, "the passage refers to the city where Jesus was crucified - and clearly He was crucified in Jerusalem!" **But Jesus was NOT crucified in the city of Jerusalem at all.** The Scripture is quite clear about this! All the Gospel accounts are extraordinarily careful to point out the fact that Jesus was crucified **OUTSIDE** the city walls at a place called Calvary or Golgotha, a place close to Jerusalem, but definitely **OUTSIDE** the city proper! [Please see Davis, *Dictionary of the Bible*, Baker, pg. 110.]



GOLGATHA: OUTSIDE THE CITY WALLS

After the Passover meal Judas led a contingent of soldiers to Gethsemane to arrest Jesus (1). From there Jesus was led to Annas (location unknown), who sent him to his son-in-law Caiaphas, the high priest (2). The Jewish leaders then appealed to the Roman governor Pilate to have Jesus put to death (3). Luke records that Pilate sent Jesus to Herod Antipas (4), who questioned Jesus but returned him to Pilate without rendering any judgment (5). Pilate then sent Jesus to be crucified at **Golgotha (6)**. **VERY OBVIOUSLY, GOLGATHA LAY OUTSIDE THE CITY WALLS OF JERUSALEM** which are shown in this picture as a dotted line.

This is substantiated by Hebrews 13:11-12:

"For the bodies of those animals whose blood is brought into the holy place by the high priest as an offering for sin, **ARE BURNED OUTSIDE THE CAMP.**

"Therefore Jesus also, that He might sanctify the people through His own blood **suffered [was crucified] outside the gate [Jerusalem].**" (Hebrews 13:11-12)

The reference, then to "that great city which **ALLEGORICALLY** (NEB) is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified ..." could not possibly be to Jerusalem. This is no small point, and neither is the Scripture playing games with us here. It's a puzzle! A cipher! A parable!

THE BREAKDOWN OF THE COMMON INTERPRETATIONS OF THE TWO WITNESSES

It seems then that on every point the interpretation which makes the Two Witnesses merely two single human beings (or even angles) breaks down and collapses into ruin when examined closely. Then, who are these Two Witnesses?

PART 7: PARABLES & CIPHERS

PARABLES ARE CIPHERS

Who, then, are these Two Witnesses? Now, before we begin our inquiry, there are certain rules with which we must agree. Parables are puzzles - ciphers. They must be decoded. But in decoding a cipher, we must stay within the bounds of Scripture and reason. Parables are never unreasonable. They do not demand illogical conclusions such as the perception of the Two Witnesses as human torches breathing fire from their mouths. With this in mind, let's start.



	A	B	C	D	E	F	G	H	I	J	K	L	M	N	O	P	Q	R	S	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z
A	A	B	C	D	E	F	G	H	I	J	K	L	M	N	O	P	Q	R	S	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z
B	B	C	D	E	F	G	H	I	J	K	L	M	N	O	P	Q	R	S	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z	
C	C	D	E	F	G	H	I	J	K	L	M	N	O	P	Q	R	S	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z		
D	D	E	F	G	H	I	J	K	L	M	N	O	P	Q	R	S	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z			
E	E	F	G	H	I	J	K	L	M	N	O	P	Q	R	S	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z				
F	F	G	H	I	J	K	L	M	N	O	P	Q	R	S	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z					
G	G	H	I	J	K	L	M	N	O	P	Q	R	S	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z						
H	H	I	J	K	L	M	N	O	P	Q	R	S	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z							
I	I	J	K	L	M	N	O	P	Q	R	S	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z								
J	J	K	L	M	N	O	P	Q	R	S	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z									
K	K	L	M	N	O	P	Q	R	S	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z										
L	L	M	N	O	P	Q	R	S	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z											
M	M	N	O	P	Q	R	S	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z												
N	N	O	P	Q	R	S	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z													
O	O	P	Q	R	S	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z														
P	P	Q	R	S	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z															
Q	Q	R	S	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z																
R	R	S	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z																	
S	S	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z																		
T	T	U	V	W	X	Y	Z																			
U	U	V	W	X	Y	Z																				
V	V	W	X	Y	Z																					
W	W	X	Y	Z																						
X	X	Y	Z																							
Y	Y	Z																								
Z	Z																									

DECODING CIPHERS – THE ENIGMA MACHINE

Parables are puzzles - ciphers. They must be decoded. But in decoding a cipher, we must stay within the bounds of Scripture and reason. Parables are never unreasonable. They do not demand illogical conclusions such as the perception of the Two Witnesses as human torches breathing fire from their mouths.

Let's begin our examination by inquiring into the apparent omnipresence of the Two Witnesses during the Tribulation. They appear to be everywhere at once. Yet we know that it's not possible for any creature to possess the divine quality of omnipresence - so we seem to have reached an impasse. This means then that

the Two Witnesses could not possibly be two single human beings; neither could they be angels, for even the angels do not possess omnipresence. It's a puzzle, it's a cipher.

THE TWO WITNESSES AS CORPORATE PERSONS

But again, the answer is not all that difficult. Anyone with even a modicum of knowledge concerning the Bible knows that the Bible has a lot to say about another kind of being, another kind of entity; God calls these entities by name and refers to them as "beloved." They are two in number and they are **CORPORATE** beings:

- Israel
- and
- the Church!

Now what is a corporate being? A corporate being is a body or group of people united together in a common cause. The everyday business corporation is an example of a corporate being - for instance, General Motors. General Motors is composed of thousands of single human beings united together to build automobiles. All the members of General Motors work as a team, and they all work under one authority. Furthermore, General Motors (like all **CORPORATIONS**) is not limited in time and space as is a single human being; it is, in a very real sense, **OMNIPRESENT**! Moreover - unlike a single human being whose activities can be carried on only in one place and at one time - its activities are **GLOBAL**. It exists simultaneously in Detroit, New York, and San Francisco; in Europe, Asia, Africa and Latin America. It makes automobiles on one continent and sells them on another, and it does all this simultaneously from city to city, nation to nation, continent to continent. Its members come and go, live and die, but General Motors just continues on. Moreover, the laws of the United States treat General Motors as if it were a citizen like any other citizen. It is a "Corporate **PERSON**." It even possesses all the protection afforded to you and me as citizens by the Constitution. It can sue and be sued at a court of law; it can buy and own property; it can sell property. And all this is as true in any other country as it is here in the United States.



Corporate Persons

Business corporations derive their existence from man - specifically from the nations in which they are chartered. Indeed, nations themselves are another type of corporate being - though much broader in scope. The number and variety of corporations, **CORPORATE BEINGS** or **CORPORATE PERSONS**, are staggering. There are nations, from Uganda to China, and from France to Italy; there are business corporations from General Motors to IBM, and from Nissan to Standard Oil; there are farm trusts, charity trusts, hospitals, and so on, and so on. It's almost endless.

ISRAEL AND THE CHURCH - GOD'S CORPORATE PERSONS

And in all these instances, these **CORPORATE PERSONS** are the creations of man - **EXCEPT FOR TWO: ISRAEL AND THE CHURCH**! Israel and the Church stand alone! For they, and they alone,

derive their existence from God! For what business corporation, or for that matter, nation, can say with Israel:

"Look down from heaven, and see from Your habitation, holy and glorious. ...
"Doubtless You are our Father, ... You, O Lord, are our Father; Our Redeemer from
Everlasting is Your name." (Isaiah 63:15-16)

And again, to what other nation or corporate person did God ever say:

"... For I am a Father to Israel, ... "Hear the word of the Lord, O nations, and declare it
in the isles afar off, and say,
"He who scattered Israel will gather him, and keep him as a shepherd does his flock.
"For the Lord has redeemed Jacob [Israel], and ransomed him from the hand of one
stronger than he." (Jeremiah 31:9-11)



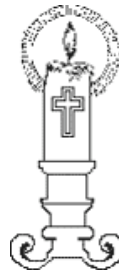
Israel

And to what corporation of man did Christ ever say [as He does to the Church] that it is,

"... His body, the fullness of Him who fills all in all." (Ephesians 1:23)

And again,

"... Christ ... loved the church and gave Himself up for her;
"that He might sanctify her, having cleansed her by the washing of water with the
word,
"that He might present to Himself the church in all her glory, having no spot or
wrinkle or any such thing; but that she should be holy and blameless.
"... for no one ever hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, just as Christ
also does the church ..." (Ephesians 5:25-27, 29)



The
Church

ISRAEL AND THE CHURCH AS GOD'S WITNESSES

Moreover, these divine corporate beings are referred to **SPECIFICALLY** as God's witnesses. To Israel, God says:

"But now, thus says the Lord, who created you, O Jacob, and he who formed you, O Israel: "Fear not,
for I have redeemed you; I have called you by your name; You are Mine.
"Let all the nations be gathered together, and let the people be assembled ... Let them bring out their
witnesses ...
"["But] **YOU ARE MY WITNESSES**", says the Lord, 'And My servant whom I have chosen' ..." (Isaiah 43:1,9-10)

And to the Church, He says:

"... and you shall be My witnesses both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and even to the
remotest part of the earth." (Acts 1:8)

ISRAEL AND THE CHURCH AS THE TWO WITNESSES OF REVELATION 11

Finally, let's examine the two objects to which the Two Witnesses are compared:

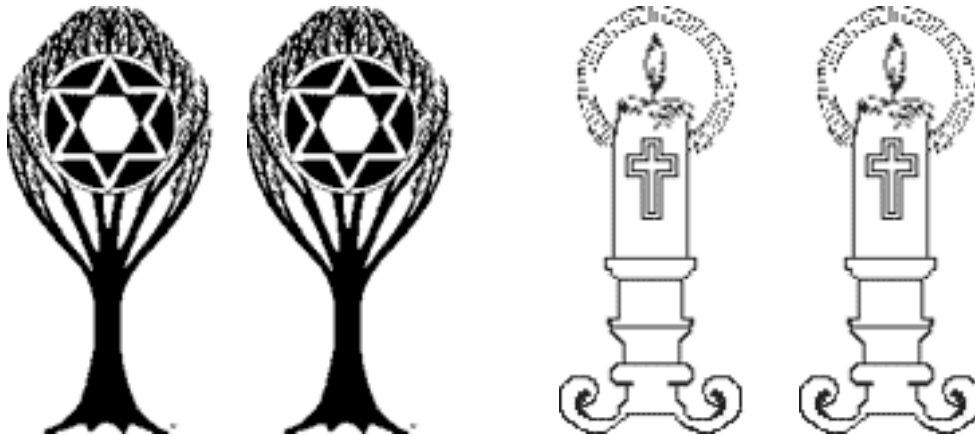
- (1) The **OLIVE TREE**.
- (2) The **LAMPSTAND** [Candlestick].

These are code words. Ciphers. But ciphers for what? Again, it's really not all that difficult.

Almost all biblical scholars agree that the term "Olive Tree" is a Scriptural reference, not to a single individual such as Moses or Elijah, but to a whole people and nation - a **CORPORATE** being or person - Israel (Romans 11).

The same is true with the term, "Lampstand." It is common knowledge in the church that the term "Lampstand" is a Biblical reference to the Church. In fact, in the book of Revelation, the seven Churches (Revelation 1-3) are all represented by a lampstand.

Finally, the Scriptures, as if to emphasize further the corporate nature of the Two Witnesses, represent each single witness with two objects, not one. Why? Why should not the one witness be represented by just one lampstand, and the other witness by just one olive tree? The reason, again, is simple. The number "two" in this case signifies **PLURALITY** and indicates that the Scripture has in mind here two **CORPORATE** or **PLURAL** beings rather than single individuals.



ISRAEL

THE CHURCH

These are the TWO OLIVE TREES and the TWO LAMPSTANDS standing before the God of the earth.

THE MYSTERY UNVEILED

If we once see the Two Witnesses as **CORPORATE PERSONS** - **ISRAEL** and the **CHURCH** - than the entire puzzle falls into place. The cipher is solved.

While it was ridiculous to speak of the Beast (Antichrist) making war (*polemos*) against two individual saints, such is not the case if these Two Witnesses are Israel and the Church - for both Israel (including those Jews in the Dispersion) and the church (especially the latter) are world-wide in their reach, touching in their presence every continent and every nation.

And while it bordered on the absurd to speak of fire coming out of the mouths of two single individuals, like dragons in a fairy tale or human torches at the circus, one can with J.P. Lange (in his *Commentaries on the Holy Scriptures*), apprehend that fire now as the fire of judgment:

"When they [the Two Witnesses] desire to injure anyone, fire goeth out of their mouth. This can of course only be spiritual fire; just as the sword issuing forth from the mouth of the Lord. Nevertheless, it is the fire of judgment; it devoureth their enemies."

It is like the fire of judgment that devoured Ananias and Sapphira, his wife:

"But Peter said, 'Ananias, why has Satan filled your heart to lie to the Holy Spirit' ... "And as he heard these words, Ananias fell down and ... [died]; and great fear came upon all who heard of it." (Acts 5:3, 5)

Moreover, the difficulty which we encountered with regard to the references to the great city which "**allegorically**" is called "Sodom and Egypt" is cleared up. While Jerusalem is **NEVER** referred to as "great" in the Holy Scriptures, there is such a city to which this adjective is appended over and over again:

"... mystery, '**BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH**'."

Lange writes:

"While Jerusalem cannot be supposed to be this city ... another collective city, Babylon, might easily correspond."

The term "great city" must then have reference not to "holy Jerusalem," but "Babylon the Great," for within Babylon are both the beauty of Egypt and the wretchedness of Sodom. Both Egypt and Sodom constitute the "make-up" of Babylon; Egypt with its treasure, civilization, art, education, etc; and Sodom with its sin - both are a part of Babylon the Great. It is here, in the streets of Babylon in its empire-wide sense, that the Two Witnesses shall lie; and it is here in the streets of Babylon - where false and apostate religion has always thrived - that the Lord of Glory was crucified.



BABYLON

This is where the Lord was crucified

Jesus was **NOT** crucified in the city of Jerusalem at all. The Scripture is quite clear about this! All the Gospel accounts are extraordinarily careful to point out the fact that Jesus was crucified **OUTSIDE** the city walls at a place called Calvary or Golgotha, a place close to Jerusalem, but definitely **OUTSIDE** the city proper!

JERUSALEM

Not here

The existence side-by-side of Sodom and Egypt has always been the hallmark of Babylon the Great - i.e., the world - and most especially Western Civilization. Violence, corruption, and bloodshed coupled with luxury, a refined culture, and a love of art and music: this is the "coupling" of Sodom and Egypt spoken of in chapter eleven of the book of Revelation. The immorality and sensuous intellectuality of Athens is an example. A parallel is also easily discernible in the descriptions of ancient Rome given by Tacitus, Juvenal

and others in the time of the Caesars. For then the whole society was utterly corrupted, the temples were merely mad excuses for houses of prostitution, and that in the name of their religions; the streets were filled with violence, and the sport of the day consisted of the gleeful slaughter of thousands in the Coliseum for the amusement of the citizens of Rome. And yet, in the midst of this vice, immorality, gluttony, and cruelty there prevailed in the company of magnificent splendor a high appreciation of music, sculpture, and art, generally, as well as a refined taste for literature and especially poetry.

Nor were the times of Leo the Tenth (Pope 1513-1521) much different, or of Paris during the Jacobins, Berlin in the 1920s, and New York and San Francisco even today. Lange continues:

"It is most significantly said: their corpses lie in the streets of the great city ... The great city itself is called Sodom and Egypt ... There, adds the Seer [prophet], their Lord was crucified. The crucifixion of Christ was itself the result of a coalition of ... [Sodom and Egypt] ... Their corpses lie there ...[for] three days and a half. And precisely this fact is a cause of delight to those who dwell on the Earth ... They rejoice over the apparent destruction of the Two Witnesses; they hold feasts and contemplate further festivities; mutual greetings, in the way of presents or compliments, are exchanged ... The reason for all this is as follows: these two prophets tormented them that dwell upon the earth."

There is nothing so tormenting to the minds of unrighteous men than to be confronted with pure and unsullied righteousness in the midst of their own vile, hateful, and loathsome wickedness. Why? Because - deep down in their hidden parts, in the deeper recesses of their souls - they know right from wrong! They can hide it, sublimate it, bury it, and put it out of sight in the frenzy of their lusts. But when confronted with it in others, it is torture!

"... because that which is known about God is evident within them; for God made it evident to them.

"Professing to be wise, they became fools ...

"Therefore God gave them over in the lusts of their hearts to impurity, that their bodies might be dishonored among them [in sexual sin].

"For they exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshipped and served the creature rather than the Creator ...

"... being filled with all unrighteousness, wickedness, greed, evil [fornication] ...

"... although they know the ordinances of God, that those who practice such things are worthy of death, they not only do the same, but also give hearty approval to those who practice them." (Romans 1:19, 22, 24, 25, 29, 32)

They cannot abide righteousness in others; they cannot stand to be in the presence of righteous men. And they will do one of two things when confronted with such a situation: they will first of all seek to subvert them - to bring them down to their level. And, oh, the joy and happiness, the pleasure and delight when they are successful. The laughter! The slap on the back! The assurances that, "it wasn't all that bad, now, was it? You're still alive, aren't you? Lightning didn't strike you? And wasn't it fun!"

But when unsuccessful, oh, the hatred! the hostility! Murder and slaughter enter the heart, and death is the only answer of the unrighteous to the righteous who refuses to be subverted. This was the answer of the Roman state to Peter and Paul, to Ignatius and Polycarp; it was the answer of the Apostate Catholic Church to Huss and Jerome; it was the answer of the Nazi state to Bonhoffer. And so it will be the answer of Babylon the Great to the Two Witnesses.

THE TWO WITNESSES OF DANIEL 12

In addition to the references to the "Two Witnesses" in Revelation 11, there are additional references to them in the Scriptures; one is found in Daniel 12 and it substantiates Revelation 11. It reads as follows:

"... and there will be a time of anguish for God's people greater than any previous suffering in their history [i.e., the Tribulation] ...

"And those who are wise - the people of God [Israel and the church] - shall shine as brightly as the sun's brilliance [because of the purging effects of persecution and tribulation], and those who turn many to righteousness will glitter like stars forever [because of their righteousness and testimony].

"Then I, Daniel, looked and saw **TWO MEN** [lit. persons, the Two Witnesses] on each bank of the river. And one of them [one of the Two Witnesses] asked the man in linen robes [Christ] who was standing now above the river [hovering over it]. 'How long will it be before the terrors end?' [i.e., the terrors of the last half of the Tribulation].

"He [i.e., Christ] replied, with both hands lifted to heaven ... that they will not end until three and a half years [i.e., the last half of the tribulation; other translations read "time, times, and half a time"] after the power of God's people [Israel and the church] has been crushed.

"I heard what he said, but I didn't understand what he meant, so I said, 'Sir, how will this come out'?

"But He said, 'Go now, Daniel, for what I have said is not to be understood until the time of the end [i.e., until the latter days].

"Many shall be purified by great trials and persecutions. But the wicked shall continue in their wickedness, and none of them will understand. Only those who are willing to learn will know what it means'." (Daniel 12:6-10)



"Then I Daniel, looked and saw TWO MEN [lit. persons, the Two Witnesses] on each bank of the river. And one of them [one of the Two Witnesses] asked the man in linen robes [Christ] who was standing now above the river [hovering over it], 'How long will it be before the terrors end'? [i.e., the terrors of the last half of the Tribulation]. He [i.e., Christ] replied, with both hands lifted to heaven ... that they will not end until three and a half years [i.e., the last half of the tribulation; other translations read "time, times, and half a time"] after the power of God's people [Israel and the church] has been crushed."

THE TWO WITNESSES AND THE 144,000

Finally, coded - but very specific - references to the "Two Witnesses" are made insofar as the "marking out" or "sealing" of the "saints of God" during the last half of the Seventieth Week.

Immediately after the Abomination of Desolation - and just prior to the blowing of the seven trumpets (which signifies the beginning of the second half of the Tribulation and the supernatural events which pertain to it) - the "saints of God" are sealed. Why? - to protect them from the supernatural events of this period.

The sealing of God's servants directly concerns the passages of Scripture which deal with the so-called "144,000." There is perhaps no other group of verses around which so much misunderstanding and confusion swirl than those verses which deal with the 144,000 of Revelation 7:1-8 and Revelation 14:1-7. It is a sad commentary on all of us in the Christian community that so much "elitism" has resulted from false interpretations concerning the message of these passages of Scripture. It is of the utmost importance, therefore, that once again we recognize that these Scriptures - like the Scriptures which dealt with the Two Witnesses, etc. - have been written in code, their message hidden in a parable or a cipher.

THE 144,000 OF REVELATION SEVEN AND REVELATION FOURTEEN

The first important fact that we should note with regard to these passages is that the 144,000 of Revelation 7 are different from the 144,000 of Revelation 14. **WE ARE DEALING WITH TWO DIFFERENT GROUPS.** In comparing the 144,000 of Revelation 14 with the 144,000 of Revelation 7, Kelly writes that the group in Revelation 14 is:

"... a remnant, not merely sealed as the servants of God [like a similar band out of the twelve tribes of Israel in chapter vii (7)], but brought into association with the Lamb in Zion, that is, with **GOD'S ROYAL PURPOSE IN GRACE ...**"

In commenting on Kelley, Pentecost writes:

"It is ... held that those in chapter 7 are on earth and these [in chapter 14] in heaven, making Mt. Zion the heavenly city, New Jerusalem. Those in chapter fourteen are said to be identified with the Lamb and those in chapter seven are not. Those in chapter seven are "sealed" but those in chapter fourteen have "the Father's name written in their foreheads."

One group is heavenly, the other earthly; one group "... follows the Lamb whithersoever he goeth," the second group is numbered exclusively from the twelve tribes of Israel. Thus, there can be no doubt as to their identity: the 144,000 of Revelation 7 being Israel, and the 144,000 of Revelation 14 being the Church.

////////////////////////////////////

ISRAEL

144,000 OF REVELATION 7

ON THE EARTH



THE CHURCH

144,000 OF REVELATION 14

IN THE HEAVENS



////////////////////////////////////

CHAPTER IX

THE COARSE AND CHARACTER OF THE "LAST DAYS"



PART 1: THE FIRST SIXTY-NINE WEEKS OF DANIEL

INTRODUCTION

The *Apocalypse* or the Revelation can be divided into four distinct parts as follows:

1. Part one (chapters 1-3): introduction and the letters to the Seven Churches.
2. Part two (chapters 4-5): the disclosure of God's glory and authority.
3. Part three (chapters 6-19): the prophecy itself.
 - a. The Seven Seals* (chapter 6): the first half of the Seventieth Week.
 - b. The Seven Trumpets* (chapter 8): the second half of the Seventieth Week.
 - c. The Seven Vials* (chapters 15-16): the wrath of God.

*** It is important to note that these events are enfolded in each other; that is to say, the Seven Vials proceed out from the Seventh Trumpet; and the Seven Trumpets proceed out from the Seventh Seal. The remaining or intervening**

chapters (chapters 7, 9-14, and 17-19) fill in the details glossed-over by the chapters cited above, i.e., chapters 6, 8, and 15-16. [\[Click here to see chart #1\]](#)

4. Part four (chapters 20-22): the conclusion, which itself consists of three parts:
 - a. The Judgment (chapter 20).
 - b. The Millennium (chapter 20).
 - c. Eternity and New Jerusalem (chapters 21-22).

THE SEVENTY WEEKS

Having outlined the *Apocalypse*, it is now necessary to apprehend - at least to some degree - the time elements at play in the "Last Days." To do so, however, it is essential to go back to the prophecy of Daniel where the chronology of God's program with regard to **BOTH** Israel and the Church is sketched-out.

REVEALING GOD'S GLORY AND AUTHORITY IN BOTH ISRAEL AND THE CHURCH

To reiterate quickly what we have already said, God has a program for both the heavens and the earth, the purpose of which is to ultimately manifest His glory and authority in both spheres. Lewis Sperry Chafer, founder and first president of Dallas Theological Seminary, writes:

"... throughout the ages God is pursuing two distinct purposes: one related to the earth with earthly people and earthly objectives [Israel] ... while the other is related to heaven with heavenly people and heavenly objectives [the Church]..."

At the heart of God's program, then, is the aim of establishing His authority in:

1. The earth through Israel and
2. The heavens through the Church.

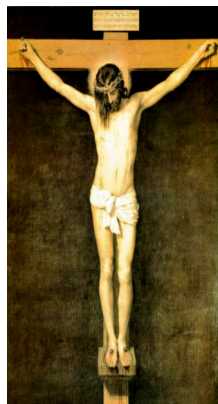
To accomplish this purpose, God has labored over a space of some 4,000 years, beginning first with Israel, and ending finally with the Church. In each time frame, God dealt primarily with only one entity: first Israel, and then the Church. For the first 2,000 years, from Abraham to Christ, God labored with Israel, building it up and shaping it as a corporate entity; then He seemingly put Israel on the Shelf, and concentrated on the Church [from Pentecost to the present].



----- 2,000 years -----

----- ISRAEL -----

ABRAHAM



----- 2,000 years -----

----- CHURCH -----

CHRIST



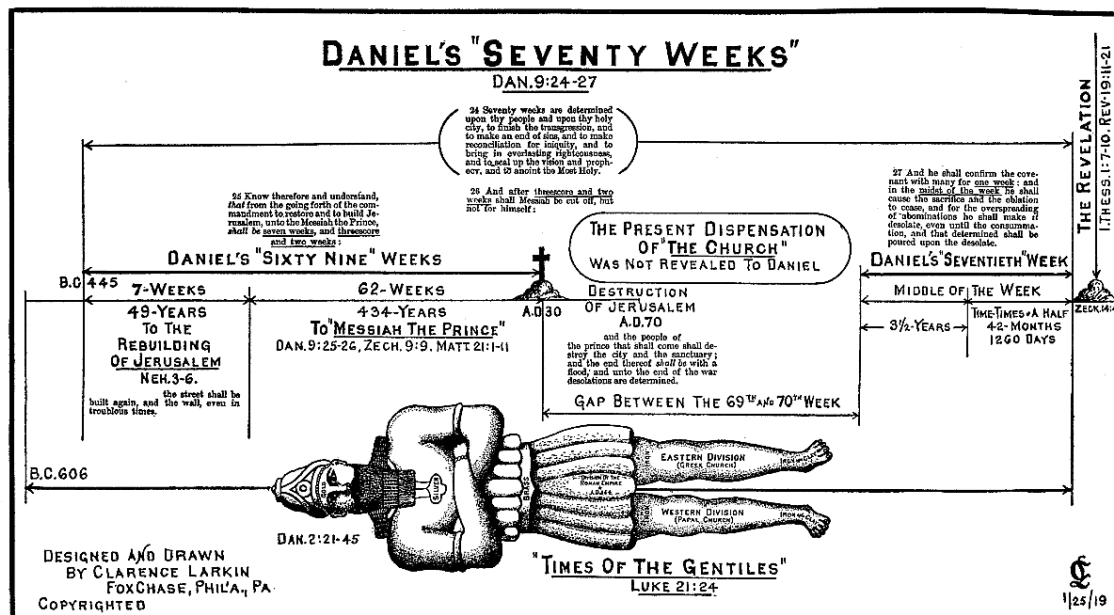
PRESENT

THE VISION OF THE SEVENTY WEEKS

The vision of the Seventy Weeks essentially outlines this course of events, defining the date when, in the providence of God, Israel was to be set aside temporarily while God began His good work with the Church, and fixing the one event which would bring to a close God's labor with the Church and the time wherein God would, like some great master-craftsman, finish His work, put down His tools, and - for the first time - raise them **BOTH** up together.

The vision of the Seventy Weeks is contained in the Book of Daniel, chapter nine. Daniel had a vision of Seventy Weeks that was determined on his people to finish their transgressions, make an end of their sins and bring in everlasting righteousness.

The expression, Seventy Weeks, should really be read seventy sevens. Whether these sevens are days, weeks, or years is to be determined by the context in which they are used. The period of the Seventy Weeks is essentially divided into two parts by the prophet: the first sixty-nine weeks [or sevens (which itself is also divided into two parts - from the decree of the king to the restoration of Jerusalem (seven weeks); and from the restoration (verse 25b-27a) to Messiah, (sixty-two weeks)] and then the final Seventieth Week.



THE FIRST SIXTY-NINE WEEKS

Daniel had been studying the prophecy of Jeremiah and had learned from it that the seventy years of the Babylonian captivity were drawing to a close (the captivity had begun in B.C. 606, and sixty-eight years had elapsed since then). This discovery thrilled Daniel and he set his face towards God and poured out his soul in one of the most wonderful prayers recorded in the Scriptures. His prayer was interrupted by the appearance of the angel Gabriel, who had been sent at the commencement of the prayer to give Daniel understanding in the matter. Daniel was told that sixty-nine weeks (sevens) would pass from the going forth of the commandment to "restore and build Jerusalem unto Messiah the Prince" (Christ).

The date of the commandment is given in Nehemiah 2:1 as the month of Nisan in the twentieth year of Artaxerxes, the king, which was the fourteenth day of March, B.C. 445. The day when Jesus rode in triumphal entry into Jerusalem as Messiah the Prince was Palm Sunday, April 6, A.D. 32. But the time between March 14, B.C. 445 and April 6, A.D. 32 is much more than sixty-nine literal weeks. What explanation is there to this?

We are confronted with a cipher, a puzzle.

It is clear to every careful student of the Word of God that there is a "time element" in the Scriptures. We come across such expressions of time as hours, days, weeks, months, years (all of which are used in cipher-like contexts), and finally, such exotic expressions as "time, times, and the dividing of time." To be intelligible and to avoid confusion, they must all be interpreted on the same scale. What is that scale? It is given in Numbers 14:34:

"After the number of the days, each day for a year, shall ye bear your iniquities, even forty years."

The Lord's scale, then, is that a day stands for a year.

Also, we must not forget that there are years of different lengths. The Lunar Year has 354 days. The Calendar Year has 360 days. The Solar Year has 365 days. The Julian Year has 365-1/4 days. Which of these years shall we use in our calculations?

The key is once again found in the Word of God. In Genesis 8:3 (in the account of the Flood), we find that the five months from the 17th day of the second month until the 17th day of the seventh month was reckoned as 150 days, or thirty days to a month or 360 days to a year. So a "Prophetic Year" is 360 days.

No more careful study has been made of the problem of the Seventy Weeks of Daniel than that by Sir Robert Anderson in the *Coming Prince*. Anderson reckons the chronology of the Sixty-Nine weeks thus:

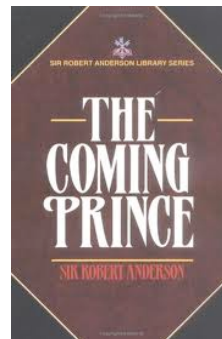
"From the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto Messiah the Prince shall be seven weeks and threescore and two weeks." An era therefore of sixty-nine "weeks," or 483 prophetic years reckoned from the 14th of March, B.C. 445, should close with some event to satisfy the words, 'unto the Messiah the Prince'. No student of the gospel narrative can fail to see that the Lord's last visit to Jerusalem was not only in fact, but in the purpose of it, the crisis of His ministry ... now the twofold testimony of His words and His works had been fully rendered, and His entry into the Holy City was to proclaim His Messiahship and to receive His Doom ...

"And the date of it can be ascertained. In accordance with the Jewish custom, the Lord went up to Jerusalem upon the 8th Nisan, 'six days before the Passover'. But as the 14th, on which the Paschal Supper was eaten, fell that year upon Thursday, the 8th was the preceding Friday. He must have spent the Sabbath, therefore, at Bethany; and on the evening of the 9th, after the Sabbath had ended, the Supper took place in Martha's house. Upon the following day, the 10th Nisan, He entered Jerusalem as recorded in the Gospels. The Julian date of that 10th Nisan was Sunday the 6th April, A.D. 32.

"What then was the length of the period intervening between the issuing of the decree to rebuild Jerusalem and the public advent of 'Messiah the Prince' - between the 14th March, B.C. 445, and the 6th April, A.D. 32? **THE INTERVAL CONTAINED EXACTLY AND TO THE VERY DAY 173,880 DAYS, OR SEVEN TIMES SIXTY-NINE PROPHETIC YEARS OF 360 DAYS**, the first sixty-nine weeks of Gabriel's prophecy."



Sir Robert Anderson



Coming Prince

Anderson arrives at his figures as follows:

"The 1st Nisan in the twentieth year of Artaxerxes [the edict to rebuild Jerusalem] was 14 March, B.C. 445. The 10th Nisan in Passion Week [Christ's entry into Jerusalem] was 6th April, A.D. 32. The intervening period was 476 years and 24 days [the days being reckoned inclusively, as required by the language of the prophecy, and in accordance with the Jewish practice].

476 x 36 =	173,740 days
Add [14 March to 6th	
April, both inclusive	24 days
Add for leap years	116 days
	<hr/>
	173,880 days

What do we come up with then? Sixty-nine weeks of prophetic years of 360 days [or 69 x 7 x 360] =173,880 days."

Thus, as Pentecost suggests,

"... Anderson shows us that the sixty-nine weeks began with the decree to rebuild Jerusalem and terminated at the triumphal entry into Jerusalem on the Sunday of the week of the Lord's death. The corrected reading of Luke 19:42, spoken as our Lord came into Jerusalem on that day is most significant: 'if thou also hadst known, even on this day, the things which belong to thy [Jerusalem's] peace; but now they are hid from thine eyes'. The accuracy of Daniel's prophecy is observed in that he states 'after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off' (Dan. 9:26)."

NOW THINK LONG AND HARD ABOUT HOW EXTRAORDINARY THIS ALL IS - THE CIPHER IS EXACT RIGHT TO THE VERY DAY FROM THE DECREE TO REBUILD JERUSALEM TO CHRIST'S TRIUMPHAL ENTRY INTO JERUSALEM. HOW PRECISE THE PROPHETIC SCRIPTURES ARE!!

THE INTERVAL BETWEEN THE SIXTY-NINTH WEEK AND THE SEVENTIETH WEEK

Then the Scriptures indicate that there was to be a break in God's program with Israel which would occur between the Sixty-Ninth and the Seventieth Weeks, and that this break would continue to a war yet distant in the future. why? So that God could "build-up" the Church. The span of time would be ended by a war through which Israel would once again be restored back into the mainstream of God's purpose. The Seventieth Week itself would commence with a "covenant that is made with many for one week," or for seven years.

PART 2: THE PROPHECY OF THE SEVENTIETH WEEK

INTRODUCTION

The Seventieth Week, which will be of a seven year duration, can be divided into two periods, each of a three and a half year duration [1,260 days, 42 months, "time (1 year), times (2 years) and half a time (one half year)"], the first half being known commonly as the "Beginning of Sorrows" (Matt. 24:8), and the second half as the "Great Tribulation" (Rev. 7:14). [[Click here to see chart#2.](#)]

THE THREE SIGNPOSTS OF THE SEVENTIETH WEEK

Thus, we have a course of events which spans a period of seven years and which is marked off into two distinct periods by three well defined events. These events are as follows:

- (1) The beginning: **THE TREATY WITH DEATH AND HELL** through which Anti-Christ, as "King of Babylon," will guarantee Israel's security in a defense pact against Gog; this treaty will provoke the events of the Gog/Magog War and the first half of the Seventieth Week.
- (2) The middle: the **ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION**.
- (3) The End: the **BATTLE OF ARMAGEDDON**.

[\[Click here to see chart#3.\]](#)

THE SEVEN SEALS, THE SEVEN TRUMPETS, AND THE SEVEN VIALS

The character of the first half of the Seventieth Week will be defined by the Seven Seals; that of the second half by the Seven Trumpets; and the end (the Judgment, which will actually occur immediately **AFTER** the Seventieth Week) by the Seven Vials. Throughout the length of this entire period, two themes or "currents of action" are carefully interwoven or interlaced into the course of events - one earthly and the other heavenly, one physical and the other spiritual.

THE COURSE AND CHARACTER OF THE SEVENTIETH WEEK

The entire course and character of the Seventieth Week are outlined in Matthew chapter twenty-four:

THE EVENTS OF THE SEVENTIETH WEEK

INTRODUCTION

"And as he [Christ] sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?"

"And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you

THE SEVEN SEALS

**1st half of 70th Week
i.e., the Tribulation)**

**The "Beginning
Or Sorrows"**

1,260 days, 42 months,
"time, times and half a time"

"For many shall come in my name, saying, I am the Christ:
and shall deceive many.

"AND YE SHALL HEAR OF WARS AND RUMOURS OF WARS: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet.

"FOR NATION SHALL RISE AGAINST NATION, AND KINGDOM AGAINST KINGDOM: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places.

"ALL THESE THINGS ARE THE BEGINNING OF SORROWS.

"Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake.

"And then shall many [who have merely professed to be Christians] be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

"And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.

"And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.

"But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

"And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations, and then shall the end come.

THE ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION

Mid Point

"WHEN YE THEREFORE SHALL SEE THE ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION SPOKEN OF BY DANIEL THE PROPHET STAND IN THE HOLY PLACE (WHOSO READETH, LET HIM UNDERSTAND)

"Then let them ... flee ...

THE SEVEN TRUMPETS

2nd half of the 70th Week

The "Great Tribulation"

1,260 days, 42 months,

"time, times and half a time"

"For then shall be **GREAT TRIBULATION** [the second half of the Seventieth Week] such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be [again].

THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST

**End of the
Tribulation**

**Resurrection &
Rapture of the Saints**

"Immediately after the tribulation of those days [the second half of the Seventieth Week] shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken:

"And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory,

"And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet [the trumpet spoken of in I Thess. 4:16-17: 'For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with ... the **TRUMP** of God and the dead in Christ shall rise first: then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air"], and they shall gather his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other (Matt. 24:3-16, 21, 29-31).

THE SEVEN VIALS

The Wrath of God

PART 3: THE SEVEN SEALS



The union of the church and the state - oh what a sinister and evil potion this is, when religion and politics are mixed together. No more lethal and noxious poison exists.

INTRODUCTION

The Seven Seals relate specifically to the Antichrist and result from his terrible rule and wars of conquest, beginning first with the Gog/Magog War, and extending from there over the entire length of the first half of the Seventieth Week. They are as follows:

- **The First Seal** [The White Horse of the Apocalypse]: Antichrist going forth to conquer.



- **The Second Seal** [The Red Horse of the Apocalypse]: war and bloodshed which inevitably follow in the wake of conquest. 
- **The Third Seal** [The Black Horse of the Apocalypse]: famine which always follows in the path of war. And in the hand of this terrible personage is a pair of balances; and there is a saying that issues forth from this horseman: "A measure of wheat for a penny [literally - *denarius*, a Greek coin which represented a **WHOLE DAY'S** wages], and three measures of barley for a penny; and see thou hurt not the oil and the wine." The meaning of this is that the condition of man during this era will be reduced to such that he will have to labor a whole day simply to buy a loaf of bread or three measures of barley. But the second part of the saying ["... and see thou hurt not the oil and the wine ..."] means that the famine in these days will not extend to what might be called a "global elite of worthies" who have evidently allied themselves to the anti-Christ's policy of conquest - only the rich in the ancient world could afford oil and wine. 
- **The Fourth Seal** [The Pale Horse of the Apocalypse]: pestilence and death which follow famine and war. 
- **The Fifth Seal** [The Persecutions of the Tribulation]: oppression directed against the saints of God [by both **CIVIL** and **RELIGIOUS** authorities] because of their testimony during the course of the first half of the Tribulation: "Take heed to yourselves: For they shall deliver you up to councils [the **CIVIL** authority]; and in the synagogues [churches - the **RELIGIOUS** authority] ye shall be beaten: and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for my sake for a testimony against them." (Mark 13:9) 
- **The Sixth Seal** [Casting out from Heaven of Satan & his angels (cf. Revelation 12:7-9)]: this seal has particular reference to the Abomination of Desolation and indicates [though indirectly] that the effect of these seals does not simply end with the close of the first half of the Seventieth Week, but continues on through to the end of the tribulation - that is to say, pestilence, death, martyrdom, etc. will continue to be felt; it's just that the effects of the Seven Trumpets will be added now to the effect of the Seven Seals. 
- **The Seventh Seal** [The Seven Trumpets]. 

THE THEMES OF THE SEVEN SEALS

Thus, a picture of the first half of the Seventieth Week begins to emerge. The paramount theme is one of incessant war, confusion, and chaos - at least in those parts of the world and within those circles which resist the cajolery and blandishments of Babylon and the Antichrist; world conquest is their sole object, and where flattery fails, brute force takes over. It is a time of titanic struggle and enormous striving; an era of great triumph on the one hand, and futile resistance on the other; a period of incredible victory on the one side and crushing defeat on the other.

THE WINNOWING OF THE CHURCH: THE PERSECUTION OF THE SEVENTIETH WEEK

And now, in the midst of all this, the process of winnowing begins - the separation of the wheat from the tares, the good seed from the bad seed, the real Christians from those who had merely professed Christianity for advantage or gain.

"Now the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the son; and children shall rise up against their parents, and shall cause them to be put to death. And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved." (Mark 13:12-13)

Persecution, if it is anything, is certainly a sifting process. Throughout the Western World, and most especially in the United States, Christianity has enjoyed undisturbed peace for generations. With many who call themselves Christian - even "born again" - Christianity is not now the faith of ardent conviction, such as that which exists in the hearts of those believers who now so cruelly suffer for their faith in other parts of the world; rather the faith of the Western World, and most especially the United States, is one of rote truth, dead doctrine, and shallow emotion instilled into the mind by means of what today passes as "charismatic Christianity" - an evangelical Christianity with which a D.L. Moody, a Hudson Taylor, or a C.T. Studd would utterly not be familiar.

A persecution, breaking out today with great violence, after so many years of tranquillity, could not fail to winnow the Church. The atmosphere of Christianity in America has been corrupted. A secular spirit has crept in - one which even grasps after, of all things, naked and profane political power. Its leaders can be numbered among the most prominent in American Christendom; the sad truth is that many of these men are received with open arms by unbelievers into the highest recesses of worldly political power. It is against these kinds of leaders that Savanarola, the great fourteenth century Italian reformer railed when he charged:

"The Church had once her golden priests, and wooden chalices, but now the chalices are made of gold and the priests are made of wood."

Paraphrased and put in a modern context, it would read:

"The Church had once her golden pastors in small wooden buildings, but now the buildings are made of gold and the pastors are small little men made of wood."

Pember prophetically saw the condition of today's Church when he wrote more than 100 years ago:

"... [evangelicals] do indeed frequent their churches ... in crowds: they excite a feeling ... by grand buildings ... by beautiful music ... and strong political conviction. But if they clothe themselves with the semblance of devotion in their worship, they altogether lose this outward distinction in the world, and bewilder those who are honestly asking what they shall do to be saved by plunging into gaieties, frivolities, pursuits, and the business of this life, as if they were to remain among them forever ... The powers of the World to Come have lost their hold upon them, they are even as other men: so many points have been yielded, amusements permitted, and vices condoned, that it is almost impossible to distinguish them from nonprofessors unless they recite their creed [i.e., (in today's context) claim to be "born-again"] ... And although many are ready to confess that the Christian must take up his cross, yet being thoroughly satisfied that in these modern times the unwearied zeal of Christ and His apostles would be quite out of place, they can by no means find a cross to bear. If, however, God in His anger smite them with sickness, bereavement, disappointment, or loss, they talk of their trials, and comfort themselves with the thought that they are imitating the Lord by enduring troubles which they cannot in any way avoid."



SAVANAROLA

"The Church had once her golden priests, and wooden chalices, but now the chalices are made of gold and the priests are made of wood."

THE UNION OF THE CHURCH AND THE STATE: A POISONOUS MIXTURE

Indeed, it is an evil specter that has noiselessly glided into the Church while it slumbered and slept, seducing the saints into an unlawful alliance with the state - the sphere of Satan's authority and power. The Church is flattered by the attention of the state; it embraces it. Worldly advantage has no doubt been

gained; but alas, it has been gained at the cost of the honor and glory of the Church's heavenly Lord and Savior.

The testimony of her heavenly character is lost when the Church embraces worldly political power and her place of separation from the world is surrendered. She falsifies the Word of the Lord which says of His disciples,

"They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world." (John 17:16).

True, in appearance, Christianity in the last few years has gained a victory in the United States with its false alliance with partisan party politics. The Church is rich and increased with wealth, politicians curry its favor; but this is the glory of the world, not of a crucified Christ. It is the world that has gained the victory,



not true Christianity. And the natural consequence of this unlawful union of the Church with the state is that its doors are thrown open to unbelievers - unbelievers who will inevitably seek to use it to suppress the truth of the Gospel and the real saints of God. **AND THIS IS EXACTLY WHAT THE SCRIPTURES PREDICT WITH REGARD TO THE PERSECUTION OF THE FIRST HALF OF THE SEVENTIETH WEEK.** It will in large part be a persecution directed against the saints of God by the professing Church - and not necessarily just the liberal and Catholic churches, but even that portion of the evangelical Church which today has so heartily embraced secular political power.

TODAY'S CHURCH

The Church is rich and increased with wealth, politicians curry its favor; but this is the glory of the world, not of a crucified Christ. It is the world that has gained the victory, not true Christianity.

It is a deadly potion that the Church has mixed for itself, mixing patriotism to corrupt Gentile power (i.e., the United States) with the Word of God. It is spiritual fornication, the fornication of Babylon the Great. It is precisely this kind of thinking which has slaughtered the saints of God up through the centuries: the blood of the

saints is involved here. God help those who drink of this potion! They are drinking damnation to themselves.

"... they will lay their hands on you and will persecute you, delivering you to the synagogues [churches] and prison ..." (Luke 21:12).

Oh, what a sinister and evil potion this is, when religion and politics are mixed together; no more lethal and noxious poison exists. Few, if any, of our readers, outside of Northern Ireland, the Balkans, the Caucasus, or Iran, could possibly imagine its malice and deadly danger. With a toss of our heads, we are tempted instead to consign all such imagination to another age, to see such things as the result of superstition and nothing else. But in the frenzy of war and chaos - such as will characterize the Seventieth Week - such things have a way of reappearing. The things that we thought were dead and buried, we will find are not so dead after all - as those in the Balkans have found out to their horror.

THE NEW INQUISITION

We face a new Inquisition! An inquisition that will be forced upon us in the name of "God and Country," and not simply by strangers; but by those who we had deemed friends and neighbors, and by those - God help them - that we had thought of as our brothers and sisters in Christ.

"But you will be delivered up even by parents and brothers and relatives and friends, and they will put some of you to death ..." (Luke 21:16).

But what does this exactly mean? In the Inquisition of old, when a man was even slightly suspected of harboring thoughts contrary to the religious authorities of his day, "familiar" (or spies) of the Inquisition were employed to watch him, with the view of discovering the least excuse for handing him over to the tribunal. Had he said something against the impious union of the Church and the state? Did he hold an opinion of any sort contrary to that of the established religious authorities? Had he said something against the state itself? - which, when state and Church are united, means, of course, betrayal of God. Was he holding religious meetings in his home without permission or meeting in a church not approved by the state? - which again - when Church and state are united - could mean not just religious treason, but state treason as well. Any of these things were enough to create suspicion. He was now marked and denounced by the "familiar."

At midnight a knock is heard. The suspected man is ordered to accompany the "messengers." His wife and family know what that means; their distress is great. They must now take a last farewell of the beloved husband and father. Not a word of entreaty or of remonstrance dare be breathed. Thus, suddenly and unexpectedly did this frightful force pounce upon its victims. Wives gave up their husbands, husbands their wives, parents their children, etc. An impenetrable secrecy surrounded all the proceedings of this institution. And the workings of imagination only lent further to its fearfulness. Neither rank, nor age, nor sex, afforded any defense against its watchful vigilance and pitiless severity.



THE LAST FAREWELL

At midnight a knock is heard. The suspected man is ordered to accompany the "messengers." His wife and family know what that means; their distress is great. They must now take a last farewell of the beloved husband and father. Not a word of entreaty or of remonstrance dare be breathed. Thus, suddenly and unexpectedly did this frightful force pounce upon its victims. Wives gave up their husbands, husbands their wives, parents their children, etc.

THE TESTIMONY OF THE CHURCH IN THE MIDST OF PERSECUTION

Such severity has a way of winnowing the Church - you can believe that! But, then, oh how the Church will shine! The dross washed away! The gold revealed at last!

"And they that be wise, shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever." (Daniel 12:3)

And again -

"It will lead to an opportunity for your testimony.

"So make up your minds not to prepare beforehand to defend yourselves;

"For I will give you utterance and wisdom which none of your opponents will be able to resist or refute." (Luke 21:13-15)

PART 4: THE ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION

BACKGROUND

The "Abomination of Desolation!" The term itself is enough to make one feel very uncomfortable. It conveys a sense of uneasy anxiousness. There is an aura of grim restlessness about the phrase and all that it portends; a sense of apprehension and uncertainty; a premonition of impending doom. But how? Why? It all seems so ambiguous and ethereal.

But this much we can say with certainty: the evil impact of this event will be directed against the "Temple of God," and will plainly divide the first half of the Seventieth Week from the second half. Indeed, it will be the special cause of all the supernatural activity of this period - the Great Tribulation. Specifically, II Thessalonians 2 indicates that the act of desecration will be the entering of Satan into the "Temple of God," wherein he will sit down (or inhabit the Temple), declaring himself to be God:



"Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition;

"Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; **so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God.**" (2 Thess. 2:3-4)

The Abomination of Desolation will be the special cause of all the supernatural activity of this period - the Great Tribulation.

That such an event will clearly take place, and that it will be directed against the "Temple of God," there can be no doubt. However, a number of things mitigate against the thought that this act of desecration will be directed merely against a rebuilt Temple in Jerusalem - though there can be little doubt that after Israel regains total control over Jerusalem (and the Temple Mount) following the Gog / Magog War, they will probably attempt to rebuild the Temple and reinstitute Temple Worship together with animal sacrifice as depicted in the book of Leviticus, etc. - and that, therefore, there is reason to believe that the Abomination of Desolation will be played out against this backdrop. But there are much greater reasons to believe that the desecration of the Temple will reach out far beyond the desecration of a rebuilt Jewish sanctuary.

First, from a scriptural standpoint, the whole tenor surrounding the Biblical term, "Abomination of Desolation," suggests something much more than the mere desecration of a temple made of stone and mud. If this is all that is meant, then Antiochus Epiphanes [the Greek (not Syrian) king of Seleucia], who desecrated the old Jewish Temple in Jerusalem in 173 B.C. (by sacrificing a pig), did as much, if not more, than anything the Antichrist could do. Also, surely Titus desecrated the Temple in 70 A.D. when he took Jerusalem and burned the Temple to the ground. One would think that these acts, which parallel in most every respect the act of desecration most evangelicals believe the Antichrist will commit, would bring on the same retribution that God will pour out on Antichrist. Yet both Antiochus and Titus died quietly in their sleep - Antiochus in Tadmor in 165 B.C., and Titus in Rome towards the close of the First Century A.D.

Second, how could the stopping of animal sacrifices in a rebuilt Jewish Temple constitute an abomination to God? After all, the old animal sacrifices merely pointed to the sacrifice of Christ. After Christ was sacrificed on the cross for the sins of the world, the old animal sacrifices became meaningless - and this was indicated by the rending of the veil in the temple after Christ's death on the cross:

"And Jesus cried with a loud voice, and gave up the ghost.

"And the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom."
(Mark 15:37-38)

THE GRAMMATICAL MEANING

Then to what does the term "Abomination of Desolation" really have reference? It must surely mean more than the mere desecration of a temple made with human hands.

The word "abomination" means something extremely disgusting or hateful - something worthy of or causing loathing. The adjective "desolate" means abandoned, devoid of habitation, deserted, forsaken, lonely, showing the effects of abandonment. The verb "to desolate" means to make desolate, to lay waste, to forsake. The word "desolation" means the action of desolating, the condition of being desolate - a barren wasteland implying grief, sadness, and loneliness. Thus, it could be fairly stated that from a grammatical standpoint, the term "Abomination of Desolation," taken in conjunction with the "Temple of God," means the "loathsome and hateful action which causes the abandonment by God of the "Temple of God," making it void of His habitation and (in conjunction with II Thess. 2) possessed by Satan.

SCRIPTURAL BACKGROUND

In its scriptural context, what then is the meaning of the term "Abomination of Desolation?" The scriptural link that some Biblical scholars make between a rebuilt Jewish Temple in Jerusalem and the "Abomination of Desolation" is highly tenuous and largely the result of certain evangelicals (very strict dispensationalists) who contend that the Old Testament - and even, as astonishing as it might seem, certain books of the New Testament - were written specifically to the Jews and do not concern Christians *at all*. Hence, according to this kind of teaching, since the "Abomination of Desolation" mentioned in Daniel 9:26-27 is made in the Old Testament, the passage must have reference only to the Jewish Temple, since the Old Testament is a Jewish book.

Of course, the "Abomination of Desolation" is mentioned in several books of the New Testament - in all the Gospels except John, II Thessalonians, etc. - which would make these books, we suppose, Jewish books, at least according to this kind of thinking; but such thinking is so ridiculous, that it hardly bears refutation - nonetheless, this is the precise origin of the kind of thinking which connects the "Abomination of Desolation" simply with a Jewish Temple.

ANIMAL SACRIFICE AND THE REBUILT TEMPLE

Israel's blindness with regard to Christ is not destined to be fully removed until the second advent [i.e., at the end of the Tribulation Period]:

"And I will pour out on the house of David and on the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the Spirit of grace and of supplication, so that they will look on Me whom they have pierced; and they will mourn for Him, as one mourns for an only son, and they will weep bitterly over Him, like the bitter weeping over a first-born.

"In that day there will be great mourning in Jerusalem, like the mourning of Hadadrimmon in the plain of Megiddo.

"And the land will mourn, every family by itself; the family of the house of David by itself, and their wives by themselves; the family of the house of Nathan by itself, and their wives by themselves;

"The family of the house of Levi by itself, and their wives by themselves; the family of the Shimeites by itself, and their wives by themselves;

"All the families that remain, every family by itself, and their wives by themselves.

"In that day a fountain will be opened for the house of David and for the inhabitants of Jerusalem, for sin and for impurity. (Zech. 12:14-19)

Thus, if Israel's blindness is not to be removed until the end of the Tribulation Period, then animal sacrifices would of necessity have to be a part of any renewed Temple service that the Jews would initiate in a rebuilt Temple after the Gog / Magog War. Why? - because the Jews as yet would not recognize the sacrifice of Christ as the "Lamb of God which taketh away the sins of the world," and **sacrifice was at the very heart of all Temple service.** Indeed, it could fairly be said that without sacrifice, the Temple would be reduced to the status of a synagogue, a grand and imposing one, no doubt, but a synagogue nevertheless, even if it were built on the site of the old Temple itself. To believe that interfering in this now meaningless temple service - a temple service rendered meaningless by Christ's sacrifice on the cross - could in any way constitute the **Abomination of Desolation is absurd.**

Moreover, there is a great difference to be remarked on between the glory which will flow out from the Millennial Temple as opposed to any glory which will attend a rebuilt Temple in Jerusalem prior to the Millennium - again, the fact of the matter is God is forever through with "temples made with hands." **[And in this connection, it should be noted that the Millennial Temple which is described in the Book of Ezekiel will evidently not be made by human hands - the context seems to indicate that it will be solely a work of God.]**



The Shekinah as it appeared over the Tabernacle in the Wilderness.

Christ which no rebuilt Jewish Temple ever could. There will be no need for animal sacrifice in this Temple either, for the sacrifice of Christ will be fully honored, Christ Himself being the High Priest - and there will be no human High Priest in the Millennial Temple. Finally, a stream of healing water will flow forth from the Temple for the healing of the nations. Can anyone reasonably assume that such a stream will flow forth from a rebuilt Jewish Temple destined to be desecrated by the Antichrist?

Certainly, no rebuilt Jewish Temple in Jerusalem could match such a description.

It seems, then, that we are once again faced with a dilemma - a desecration directed against a Temple which doesn't seem to exist; unless, of course, we've been looking in the wrong place.

Let's admit that such might indeed be the case and reconsider the whole question in the light of the New Testament, if only because it's impossible to get anywhere by just examining the issue exclusively in light of the Old Testament. The fact of the matter is that while Daniel 9:26-27 does make mention of an event known as the "Abomination of Desolation," we can get no real clue from these verses as to what the term really means. It is not until the New Testament that a firm connection is made between the "Abomination of Desolation" and the "Temple of God." Interestingly enough, it is made by Jesus Himself in an entirely "New Testament setting" just prior to His crucifixion (cf. Matt. 24 and II Thess. 2:3-4). The context in which the connection is made occurs when Jesus had finished telling the Pharisees that He would tear down the Temple and in three days raise it up again. The Pharisees thought that Jesus was referring to the old Jewish Temple; but of course, He was not. He was making reference to His own body:

"Jesus answered and said to them, 'Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up'.

"The Jews therefore said, 'It took forty-six years to build this temple, and will You raise it up in three days'?"

"But he was speaking of the temple of His body." (John 2:19-21)

Thus, when the connection between the "Abomination of Desolation" and the "Temple of God" is first made, it is made essentially at the same time when Jesus described the "Temple of God" as man, and not as a temple made of stone and mud. The old Jewish Temple (and we speak here not of the Millennial Temple)

NOTE

Please see Ezekiel 40:1-46:24 for a full description of the Millennial Temple. Please also consult Dwight Pentecost, *Things To Come*, pg. 512-531. The main purpose of the Millennial Temple will be to commemorate and honor the sacrifice of Christ. There will be no animal sacrifices in the Millennial Temple.

was forever put away after the crucifixion of Christ; whatever glory was left the old temple departed from it (which was signified by the rending of the veil in the old temple) and instead was deposited forever in man on the day of Pentecost.

Paul himself reminds us of this when he tells us that God no long dwells within the cold, dead stones of temples made with hands, when he says:

"Or do you not know that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit who is in you, whom you have from God ..." (I Cor. 6:19)

Isaiah also prophesied that the true house of God would be a house of prayer for all nations (Isa. 56:7; Mk. 11:17) and in fulfillment of that prophecy, believers of every nation are today, as living stones, being built up into a spiritual house (I Peter 2:5), "an habitation of God through the Spirit." (Eph. 2:22)

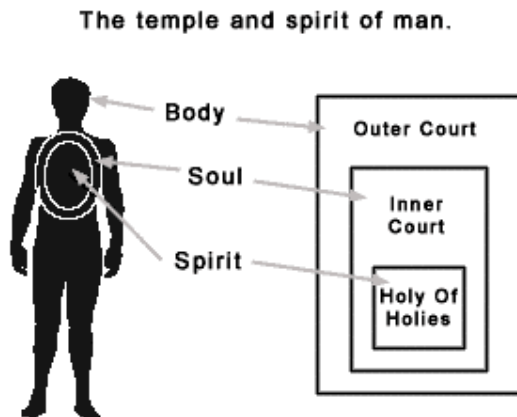
Finally, it is of interest to note in this respect that when Paul referred to believers as the temple (I Cor. 3:16, 17; 6:19; II Cor. 6:16; Eph. 2:20-22), he used the Greek word *NAOS*. But when he referred to the physical temple in Jerusalem (Acts 22:17; 24:12, 18; 25:8; I Cor. 9:13), he used the Greek word *Hieron*. *NAOS* is the word Paul used for temple in II Thessalonians 2:4 when he spoke of the "Temple of God" in connection with the "Abomination of Desolation:"

"... so that he [Satan] as God sitteth [dwells] in the temple[*NAOS*] of God, showing himself that he is God." (II Thess. 2:4)

Therefore, it is obvious that Paul did not mean that Antichrist was simply going to sit down [dwell or make his home] in a physical temple made of stone and mud [*Hieron*].

THE OLD JEWISH TEMPLE AND MAN

As we suggested in Chapter I, like the old Jewish Temple, man is a three part entity - body, soul, and spirit, each corresponding to the three parts of the Jewish Temple - the Outer Court (the body), the Inner Court (the soul), and the Holiest of All [the spirit].



[Please see G.H. Pember, *Earth's Earliest Ages*, chapter 4, "The Creation of Man," for a thorough but concise treatment of this subject.] It was in the Holiest of All in the old Jewish Temple that the glory of God (the *Shechinah*) dwelt. No one was ever permitted access to this part of the Temple except the High Priest, and that but once a year on the day of Atonement, when he entered it to sprinkle the blood of the sacrifice on the "Mercy Seat" for the sins of the people. The Holiest of All was the dwelling place of God; it was reserved for Him alone.

So also with man. The spirit of man is the dwelling place of God. It is our spirit that the Holy Spirit enters and inhabits when we receive Jesus at the time of our *new birth*. The old Jewish Temple was but a type of this present reality - a symbolical representation of God's true dwelling - man. And while the entire old Temple symbolized the dwelling place of God, it was, nevertheless, in the Holy of Holies where God actually dwelt, with the Holy Place (the Inner Court) and the Outer Court standing for those spheres of divine activity which were in accordance with His divine presence. Thus answering truly to this typology, God's Spirit dwells in our spirit, which is the reality in our time of the Holy of Holies.

Moreover, by asserting that man is today the "Temple of God," we are not *spiritualizing* the Word of God at all, for such is the clear testimony of the Word of God. Jesus said:

"... if a man loves me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode [home, lit. - Temple or Tabernacle] with him." (John 14:23)

Furthermore, in Ephesians 2:19-22, Paul speaks of regenerated man as the building or "Temple of God:"

"... in whom all the building, fitly framed together, groweth into an **HOLY TEMPLE** in the Lord; in whom ye also are builded together for an **HABITATION** of God through the Spirit." (Ephesians 2:21-22)

THE ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION IN LIGHT OF THE NEW TESTAMENT

If we once grasp the fact that the true "Temple of God" is man and not a temple made of mud and stone, then the difficulties which we encountered above dissolve. And, in all of this we can begin to see that the "Abomination of Desolation" is a crime much more heinous than we had at first thought - *and one that portends a threat against man far greater than has ever been previously imagined - a threat against his very humanity?*

Man is a human being precisely and only because he is a three part being - because he possesses in addition to his body and soul, a spirit. It is man's possession of a spirit which sets him apart from the beasts, not his mind. Through his spirit, man was meant to commune or have fellowship with God; the beasts were never meant to have such fellowship; and, thus, do not possess a spirit, only a body and a soul. The "Abomination of Desolation" is an attack against man's very humanity, and in this connection, it should be noted that after the occurrence of this evil act, the Antichrist is no longer referred to as a man, but as a **BEAST!!** - no more a human being, but a beast possessing no longer any possibility of ever again touching God, his spirit forever deadened and given over to another, **HIS HUMANITY FOREVER LOST.**

How? It is not all that difficult to ascertain. While Satan has corrupted man's body (making it "flesh"), and through it, he has contaminated man's mind (his soul), he has never had access to the spirit of man. Man's spirit, like the Holiest of All in the Old Jewish Temple, was reserved for God and Him alone. It was to be the seat of God, His throne, His ultimate place of habitation and dwelling. Satan has never occupied this part of man. Man's spirit has been wholly protected by the "**RESTRAINING** power" of God. (II Thess. 2:7 - see RV or LB)

Only once - in a very limited and isolated case - has this restraining power ever been lifted. This instance involved Judas, the "Son of Perdition." At the time of the Last Supper, the Scripture says that Satan "entered into Judas:"

"... And when he had dipped the sop, he gave it to Judas Iscariot the son of Simon.

NOTE

THE RESTRAINER & MAN'S SPIRIT

The "Restrainer" of II Thess. 2:7 must be the Holy Spirit. There simply is no other explanation that suffices. The explanations which make of him human government, law, the visible church, etc. simply fall short. Pentecost agrees. He says, "*... it would seem that the only One who could do such a restraining ministry would be the Holy Spirit.*" [Please see *Things To Come*, by J. Dwight Pentecost, pg. 205.] And once it is agreed that the real temple of God is man, and that the "Restrainer" is the Holy Spirit, then it must be that what the "Restrainer" (i.e., the Holy Spirit) is protecting is the spirit of man, the "Holy of Holies" within man. That man is the REAL temple of God is, of course, made abundantly clear by any one of a number of Scriptures. For example, John 14:23 when Jesus says: "*If anyone loves Me, he will keep My word; and My Father will love him, and We will come to him, and make Our abode (i.e., we will tabernacle) with him;* or Ephesians 2:19-22 when Paul says: "*So then you are no longer strangers and aliens, but you are fellow citizens with the saints, and are of God's household, having been built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Christ Jesus Himself being the corner stone, in whom the whole building, being fitted together is growing into a holy temple in the Lord; in whom you also are being built together into a dwelling (i.e., a tabernacle) of God in the Spirit;* or I Cor. 3:16 when Paul says: "*Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?"*

"And after the sop **Satan entered into him.**" (John 13:26-27)

What could this possibly mean? We are aware today that Satan has great influence over man's fallen nature - the works of the flesh and the fiery darts of the wicked one which assault man's mind (soul) attest to man's vulnerability. There could be no reason for Satan to seek further expression of his personality through man's fallen nature (i.e., man's body and soul). With regard to Judas, Satan evidently took **FULL** possession of him. He entered into a part of Judas that he apparently had never before had access - his human spirit. This probably accounts for the name that the Scripture has given to Judas - the "Son of Perdition." The term perdition is derived from the Greek word *apoleia* and means utter and eternal **SPIRITUAL** destruction or loss or damnation [please see note #684 in the *Strong's Greek Concordance*].

Now, we know that when God enters a man's spirit, man receives **ETERNAL LIFE**; so, no doubt, when Satan enters man's spirit, man receives eternal perdition or damnation. In the first act, man becomes a son of God; in the second act, man becomes eternally a "son of Satan" or the demons. It is probably this one sin, this final act of desecration, that Paul refers to as the *unforgivable sin*. Since that which is eternal remains eternal for ever, whether it be for good or whether it be for evil, there certainly could be no turning back from this particular sin.

In the light of all this, we must conclude that the "Abomination of Desolation" is nothing less than the final and **COMPLETE** desecration of man's being, the true "Temple of God" (II Thess. 2:7). As he did with Judas, Satan will enter the Antichrist's spirit, and as with Judas, this accounts for the new title the Antichrist receives - the "Son of Perdition." (Please see II Thess. 2:3-8)

G.H. Pember, writing in 1876, fully grasped this concept when he wrote:

"Now while evil angels and demons are doubtless appointed for the ordinary work of influencing mankind, yet we can easily imagine that, whenever there is any transcendently mighty issue at stake, their great leader, who excels them all in wisdom and power, would himself undertake the more arduous labour. And accordingly, at our Lord's first advent, when the hour of the Prince of Darkness had come, Satan himself entered into Judas, and directed him to his fearful crime (John 13:27). So when the last great masterpiece of the Adversary shall appear, the Antichrist, whose coming, as Paul tells us, is after the working of Satan (II Thess. 2:9), and to whom the Dragon shall give his power, and his throne, and great authority (Rev. 13:2), it is but reasonable to suppose that he will be possessed and energized by the Devil in person. And thus, he will be a **COMPOUND BEING, PARTLY HUMAN, PARTLY SUPER-HUMAN.**"



Pember: *Earth's Earliest Ages*

And what is even more terrible, there is reason to believe that the desecration of man's spirit will not simply be limited to the Antichrist, but that it will spread to all unregenerated men through the agency of the demons and the fallen angels which are let loose upon man after the "Abomination of Desolation" and during the Seven trumpets - at least to all those who receive the "mark of the beast" (Rev. 19:20).

THE SEALING OF THE HOLY SPIRIT CONTRASTED WITH THE MARK OF THE BEAST

Thus, the antithesis of the *regenerating work* of the Holy Spirit is the *desolating work* of Satan. Whereas, in the first case, one becomes the dwelling place of the Holy Spirit and thereby a "son of God," in the second case, one becomes a dwelling place of the agents of Hell, and thereby a "son of perdition." For as the believer is sealed or *marked out* by the Holy Spirit (II Cor. 1:22; Eph. 1:13; 4:30), the antithesis of this is the *mark of the beast*, which effectually seals or marks out those who are ultimately destined for eternal perdition (see Revelation 16:2; 19:20-21; 14:9-11). The antithesis of man being created in the image of God to be indwelt by the Spirit of God (Romans 8) and thus being brought into fellowship and/or relationship

with God and fulfilling God's original design for the spirit of man, is the Satanic union through the "Abomination of Desolation" and the *mark of the beast* whereby man's spirit is *deseccated* and left void of any possibility of fellowship with God. Thus, the "sons of perdition" who have received the *mark of the beast* are contrasted to the "sons" or "children of God" who have been marked out by the Holy Spirit. The *sealing of the Holy Spirit* is the antithesis of the *mark of the beast*.

It is through the terrible impact of the "Abomination of Desolation" that all the events of the second half of the Seventieth Week (the Seven Trumpets) are made possible and through which Satan and his hosts gain direct and unhindered power for the first time over man, and through man, the earth.

PART 5: THE SEVEN TRUMPETS - THE SECOND HALF OF THE SEVENTIETH WEEK

THE SEVEN TRUMPETS

And now a new and much more fearful period is ushered in, a period which will differ from that of the Seven Seals in as much as light differs from darkness - for with the Seven Trumpets, the supernatural events of the Seventieth Week will commence.

THE EXPECTATION OF EXTRATERRESTRIALS

One of the most fascinating discoveries that anyone who has investigated the supernatural eventually makes, is the fact that there exists today - even in well educated circles - a belief that our world is receiving communications from higher intelligences - intelligences which are readying mankind for an extraterrestrial visitation. It is absolutely incredible how the stories concerning UFOs seem to coincide on this point. The emergence of hundreds of UFO cult groups within the last few decades, all preaching a similar message, along with the appearance of such films as *Close Encounters*, *Independence Day*, *The Arrival*, *Fire in the Sky* and films of a similar nature are evidence of a growing belief, or at least interest, in the inevitability of a soon-to-come contact with beings not of this earth - of spiritual beings who are soon to descend on our world in great numbers. For how else can it be explained that so many different groups in so many different parts of the world - entirely unknown to each other - claim to have heard essentially the same message?

We are left to consider seriously the possibility that intelligences of great power beyond our earth have a selfish interest and purpose in preparing our world to accept personages they would like to install as our world rulers.



One of the most fascinating discoveries that anyone who has investigated the supernatural eventually makes, is the fact that there exists today - even in well educated circles - a belief that our world is receiving communications from higher intelligences - intelligences which are readying mankind for an extraterrestrial visitation.

And herein lies the awful meaning behind the Seven Trumpets! This is their terrible secret!

THE PARABLE OF THE SIXTH SEAL AND THE RED DRAGON

The unveiling of this horrible mystery, parable, or cipher actually begins with the Sixth Seal.

"And I looked when He broke the sixth seal, and there was a great earthquake ...
"and the stars of the sky fell to the earth, as a fig tree casts its unripe figs when shaken by a great wind." (Rev. 6:12-13)

Once again, we are confronted with a riddle, a parable, for it cannot possibly be assumed that **LITERAL** stars will fall on the earth - if only because the earth would immediately cease to exist. The key to the riddle must lie in the use of the word, "stars." It is a code word. But what could it possibly mean? Again, the answer is not all that difficult and is rendered somewhat more intelligible when compared to certain other verses in Revelation chapter 12:

"And another sign appeared in heaven: and behold, a great red dragon having seven heads and ten horns, and on his heads were seven diadems [crowns].

"And his tail swept away a THIRD of the STARS of heaven, AND THREW THEM TO THE EARTH. ...

"And there was war in heaven, Michael and his angels waging war with the dragon. And the dragon and his angels waged war,

"And the great dragon was thrown down, the serpent of old who is called the devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was thrown down to the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him.

"And I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying, "Now the salvation, and the power, and the kingdom of our God and the authority of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren has been thrown down, who accuses them before our God day and night.

"For this reason, rejoice, O heavens and you who dwell in them. **[BUT] WOE TO THE EARTH AND THE SEA, BECAUSE THE DEVIL HAS COME DOWN TO YOU, HAVING GREAT WRATH, KNOWING THAT HE HAS ONLY A SHORT TIME.**" (Rev 12:1-13)



"And the great dragon was thrown down, the serpent of old who is called the devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was thrown down to the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him. And I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying, "Now the salvation, and the power, and the kingdom of our God and the authority of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren has been thrown down, who accuses them before our God day and night. For this reason, rejoice, O heavens and you who dwell in them. [BUT] WOE TO THE EARTH AND THE SEA, BECAUSE THE DEVIL HAS COME DOWN TO YOU, HAVING GREAT WRATH, KNOWING THAT HE HAS ONLY A SHORT TIME. (Rev 12:1-13)

What does all this mean? Simply on the face of it, these verses are frightening indeed. The use of the word "stars" in Revelation 12 obviously is made in reference to angelic beings. This is substantiated by Job 38:1-7:

"Then the Lord answered Job [from] out of the whirlwind and said,

"Who is this that darkens counsel by words without knowledge?

"Now gird up your loins like a man, and I will ask you, and you instruct Me!

"Where were you when I laid the foundation of the earth? Tell Me, if you have understanding,

"Who set its measurements, since you (claim to) know? Or who stretched the line on it?

"On where were its bases sunk? Or who laid its cornerstone,

"When the morning **STARS** sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy?" (Job 38:1-7)

A better translation of the term, sons of God, is sons of *Elohim*, and means literally angels of God; and finally, the term "angels of God" is here equated with morning **STARS**. This exact same expression occurs four other times in the Old Testament, and in each instance it means "angels of God." Thus, the verses above lend a certain dreadful credibility to the assertions of the UFO cultists, for it cannot possibly be assumed that the sightings referred to above are of God's angels, but rather of Satan's.

A fuller explanation requires a brief digression into some of the darkest secrets of the Bible - and it is perhaps necessary that we make such a digression at this point.

MAN THE CENTER OF ALL THINGS

We live today in a world dominated by science and technology. Reason and progress - these are the passwords of the Twenty-First Century. Rationalism, positivism, and materialism have become the pillars of our society. Indeed, it is perhaps not too much to say that the vitality of Western Civilization itself rests in its magnificent scientific and technological advances. This progress can be seen everywhere: in our architecture; in our schools; in our vast, new, high-tech industries; in our accomplishments in space, etc. A scientific and skeptical attitude towards the supernatural seemingly predominates. What cannot be seen, touched, and scientifically verified is cast off as superstition and "old wives fables."

Man has become the center of all things in today's science: he has replaced God. The thinking of our Twenty-First Century science is almost totally man-centered: it is egotistical and selfish as the titanic arrogance of men like the late astronomer Carl Sagan so clearly attests. However, despite all of its claims to modernity, this kind of thinking is really not new and was reflected long ago by another people equally renowned for their achievements in the Ancient World - people who today lie wasted in the ruins of their once glorious civilizations - the Greeks. The Greek Sophocles wrote in *Antigone*:

"What a thing is man! Among all wonders, the wonder of the world is man himself ... Man the Contriver! Man the Mastermind."

The thought that there might exist principalities and powers greater than man is not entertained by today's science. The mere mention of the supernatural is often received with a smile of incredulous contempt. And there are not a few professing Christians of the liberal persuasion who manifest a great anxiety to explain away the supernatural and to limit as far as possible its recurrence in the present time, though they do not totally deny its reality. But that Satan can work wonders, they will never allow, and in many cases they seek even to deny his existence.

THE WORLD BEYOND OUR WORLD

But today's science - i.e., rationalism - is merely a flickering candle when compared to another reality - a reality, though obscured and half-hidden, is as true, nonetheless, as is the seen reality of science and technology. And when compared to this other reality, reason and science are but the tip of an iceberg that shows above the water, while submerged down below is the great mass of that which is true and real. Deny as we will the existence of this other reality, we are, nonetheless, reminded of it constantly. At night it comes to us when we are alone. Perhaps we are visited by its presence during the day in a solitary walk on the beach or in the forest. Sometimes it comes to us in day-dreams when at work; but, somehow, it is always there - and we know it! Hollywood knows it, too. Stephen Spielberg and George Lucas know it as well. Our young people know it. Movies such as *Gremlins*, *Ghostbuster*, *The Shinning*, *E.T.*, *Star Wars*, *Amityville Horror*, *The*



Close Encounters of the Third Kind

Exorcist, Independence Day, The Arrival, Fire in the Sky and *The Omen* – to say nothing of the new spate of vampire movies - openly declare the reality of this other world.

And despite all the protestations to the contrary, the so-called secular world is also deeply involved today with the supernatural. Even our institutions of higher learning acknowledge the presence of this other reality. Indeed, the psychology departments of many of our finest colleges and universities have, in recent years, become nothing more than "fronts" for the investigation of para-psychology - that is to say, clairvoyance, astrology, etc. - *and scholastic credit is offered in these subjects*. Our best police departments openly consult and even employ (often quite successfully) psychics in the investigation of crimes.

THE REALITY OF THE KINGDOM OF DARKNESS

Moreover, the simple assertions of the Scriptures should suffice as to the reality of this other world (II Thess. 2:9). And it is indeed an evil and somber empire! Whenever the Scriptures lift the veil, and allow us a momentary glimpse into the Kingdom of Darkness, we behold a malignant and evil community, but one perfect in order and government, and one that thirsts for the subjugation of the human race. If it could, it would doubtlessly annex all of our world to its own dominion. Indeed, the heaven which surrounds our world swarms with evil spirits. And while God has forbidden these spirits to communicate with man and has placed a gulf between them and us, they, nonetheless, break through from time to time - defying God - since they are not at present restrained by force. And this is confirmed by the Scriptures, for we find countless allusions to unlawful dealings between men and these spirits in the Old Testament, while in the New Testament, witchcraft (which is the unlawful relationship between men and the kingdom of Darkness) is treated as one of the works of the flesh. (Gal. 5:20)

THE SPHERE AND ORGANIZATION OF SATAN'S EMPIRE

It is perhaps necessary at this point to describe, as succinctly as possible, the arrangement of this evil empire - for unless we are made at least somewhat aware of its organization, we cannot truly appreciate the magnitude of the events which will transpire during the second half of the Seventieth Week (The Great Tribulation) or comprehend the depths of darkness into which the world will be plunged at this time.

It is commonly believed by many Christians that the abode of Satan and his followers is in the depths of the earth. While this may indeed ultimately be the case, it most certainly is not now. The Bible refers to him as the Prince of this World. Moreover, in doing so, it indicates that this title is not one that was usurped, but one that he holds legitimately and which belongs to him by right, together with great power and dignity - for how else does one explain the fact that the Lord Jesus Himself not only spoke of our great adversary by this title, but plainly recognized his delegated authority in that He did not dispute his right to the disposal of the kingdoms of this world and their glory. (Luke 4:6-8) Moreover, how else can one understand the passage in Jude wherein Michael, the Archangel of God, is seen rendering to Satan the respect due to one superior in rank, even though that authority was then held in the hands of one who had become so wicked:

"Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, durst (dared) not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee." (Jude 1:9)

THE FALLEN ANGELS

Also, Satan is called the Prince of the Power of the Air (Eph. 2:2). The word here translated air would be better rendered Heavens. This would seem to be the same as the heavenly places which the NASB, the NKJV and the KJV version render "high places" (Eph. 6:12) and which, as Paul indicates, swarm with the spiritual hosts of the wicked. As Pember has written:

"What, then, is the nature of the power indicated by these titles of Satan? To understand it we must glance at the general hints



of Scripture concerning spiritual agencies. For, though unseen and little suspected by the rulers of earth, they are also spiritual powers (Eccls. 5:8), all originally appointed by God, whether they be now loyal to Him or not. Rank above rank these watchers stand, each passing on his account to a superior until it reaches the Most high at the apex of the pyramid. So in Zechariah's first vision, those whom the Lord had sent to walk to and fro upon the earth are represented as delivering their report to the Angel of the Lord, who then appeals to the Almighty Himself." (Zech. 1:11-12)

"And hence we read of thrones, dominions, principalities, powers (Col. 1:16), archangels, and angels. Nor can we know much of Scripture without discovering that vast numbers of these invisible beings, who supervise the affairs of men and their world, are in open rebellion against the Almighty; that there are principalities, powers, and world-rulers of darkness, with whom, as Paul tells us, we have to wage a fearful warfare (Eph. 6:12). These all render account to Satan, their Prince, who, in his reports to the Most High, makes use of their intelligence to accuse ourselves and our brethren before God day and night." (Rev. 12:10)

But there is something more which we must see - note carefully the place where Satan accuses us "day and night!" It is not in the depths of the earth, but in the heavens - and even more, before the very throne of God Himself! (Rev. 12:10) This is substantiated in the Book of Job:

"Now there was a day when the sons [angels] of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan also came among them." (Job 1:6) (cf. Job 2:1 and Rev. 12:10)

Satan is not in the depths of the earth, but rather he is continually in heaven before the throne of God "day and night" accusing us before the Father! And not only is our great antagonist in heaven, but also his hosts - one third of the angels of heaven (Rev. 12:4). If it was not for the Son, who also appears continually at the throne as our great high priest (Heb. 8:1) with His own precious blood as an offering for our sin, we would have surely perished as a race long ago. From all this, we can easily comprehend that although Satan is a rebel, he has not as yet been deprived of his titles, his power, and - this is very important - his place in heaven; and this is as true of the angels who joined him in his ancient rebellion as it is of Satan himself. He is still the great "High One on High" (Isa. 24:21) who, as Pember suggests, divides the world into provinces according to nationalities, appointing powerful angels over each kingdom (such as the *Prince of Persia* and the *Prince of Grecia* - see Daniel). And so we at last get some idea as to what Paul meant when he said that our battle was not with "flesh and blood," but it was instead with "principalities," with "powers," with the "world rulers of this darkness," and with "spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places." (Eph. 6:12)

THE DEMONS

And not only this, but man has another class of evil agents with which to contend, and while this second class of Satan's ministers have not the dominion and authority of the "high ones on high," they are, nonetheless, countless in number and their potential for harm almost as great; we speak here, of course, of the demons or "devils" of the New Testament. Their home is not the heavens on high, but the earth here below; and they do not share the attributes and power of the angels, but are instead the disembodied spirits of those who trod the earth in the flesh before the ruin described in the second verse of Genesis, and who, at the time of that great destruction, were **DISEMBODIED** by God, and left still under the power of their great leader in whose sin they shared. [Please see Pember's classic work, *Earth's Earliest Ages* for further study in these matters.]



As a result, these demons suffer a wearisome lack of ease, a wandering unrest, arising from a sense of incompleteness because of their disembodied state. They long to be clothed with flesh again, and so great is their craving that if they can satisfy it in no other way, they will even enter into the filthy bodies of swine (Matt. 8:31). Indeed, it is they, and not the evil angels, who - in their uncontrollable and insatiable desire to be clothed with flesh again - are responsible for the "possessions" described by the Scriptures. They long to "feel" again, if only pain, and this is the reason why many possessed persons inflict pain on themselves, for it is not they, but the demons which have entered them, who are responsible.

THE GULF BETWEEN THE TWO WORLDS

That the human race has not been totally subjected and submerged by these evil dignities on high and by the demons here below is only because of the gulf, perhaps the better word is the secular term "dimension," which God has fixed between them and us. For who could know the viciousness of their sin, the depths of their immorality, the vile power of their hateful lusts. And though they can appear as angles of light, they inhabit the halls of darkness, and their home is the blackness of night forever.

THE DAYS OF NOAH

However, as we intimated above, this dimension has, from time to time, been pierced and broken through. And when this has occurred, the result to man has been one of unparalleled disaster and moral collapse; indeed, it was precisely this that brought on the monstrous magnification of wickedness and sexual depravity in the days of Noah which eventually led to God's judgment in the Flood. This is detailed in some of the darkest, most enigmatic passages of Scripture contained in the Bible - and we do well to note them carefully. Genesis, chapter 6 says:

"Now it came about, when men began to multiply on the face of the land, and daughters were born to them, that the sons of God [lit., "*Elohim*," meaning angels - in this case, wicked angels] saw that the daughters of men were beautiful; and they took wives for themselves [i.e., had sexual intercourse with] whomever they chose ... The *Nephilim* [lit., the fallen ones, meaning the offspring of the sexual union between the daughters of men and the angels of Satan] were on the earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of God [angels] came into the daughters of men [i.e., had sexual intercourse with them], and they bore children to them. Those were the mighty men who were of old [in Greek mythology], men of renown ... Then the Lord saw that the wickedness of man was great on the earth [as a result of man's intercourse with the angels of Satan], and that every intent of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually ... And the Lord was sorry that He had made man on the earth, and He was grieved in His heart. And the Lord said, 'I will blot out man whom ... for I am sorry that I have made them'." (Genesis 6:1-2,4-7)



"Now it came about, when men began to multiply on the face of the land, and daughters were born to them, that the sons of God [lit., "*Elohim*," meaning angels - in this case, wicked angels] saw that the daughters of men were beautiful; and they took wives for themselves [i.e., had sexual intercourse with] whomever they chose."

Pember writes concerning this:

"Now , in speaking of the sin of some of these, Jude (Jude 6) tells us that, despising the position of dignity and responsibility in which God had placed them, they voluntarily left their own home [or, disrobed themselves of the spiritual body proper to them as beings of heaven, and materialized for themselves an earth-body; for the word used here in the only other place in the New Testament means the heavenly body with which the believer longs to be clothed] in the ... [heavens], prompted as it would seem by earthward desires [for the daughters of men], and began to exercise an unlawful influence over the human race [which led eventually to the great increase of wickedness - far beyond what is even known today]. And, perhaps, as a punishment, their [i.e. that special class of Satan's angels which involved themselves in this specific crime] return [to heaven] was prohibited."

Pember goes on to say:

"The children of these unlawful connections before the flood were the renowned heroes of old: the subsequent repetition of the crime doubtless gave rise to the countless legends of the Classics [of

Greek mythology], as well as in the ancient literature of other languages, in which human families are traced to a half-divine origin."

So heinous was their crime in the sight of God (that is, the unlawful sexual union between men and angels), that He destroyed man in the Flood and dashed the angels responsible to the lowest pit - for Peter tells us that after they (the angels) had sinned, God spared them not -

"... but cast them into hell and committed them to pits of darkness, reserved for judgment ..." (II Peter 2:4)

Pember writes concerning this passage:

"... a more literal rendering (of this passage) would be ... 'For if God spared not angels when they sinned, but cast them down to *Tartarus*, and committed them to pits of darkness, to be reserved to judgment' ... *Tartarus* appears to be a place of imprisonment more terrible than Hades ... In the Greek mythology, *Tartarus* was a dark abode of woe, as far beneath Hades as Earth is below Heaven (Homer II. viii. 16) - a description which fairly corresponds to Peter's 'pits of darkness'. Very significant, too, is the fact that it was thought to be the prison of *Cronos* (i.e., *Kronos*) and the rebel Titans [the beings who in Greek mythology were responsible for exactly the same crime as described by Genesis 6]."



FROM LEFT TO RIGHT: Jupiter, King of the Gods, God of the Sky, Thunder and Lightning and Law, Order and Justice; Aphrodite: Goddess of love, beauty and sexuality; Ares: God of Warfare and Manly Virtues; Diana: Goddess of the Hunt, Forests and Hills, the Moon; Athena: Goddess of Wisdom, Warfare, Divine intelligence, and Craft.

"Now it came about, when men began to multiply on the face of the land, and daughters were born to them, that the sons of God [lit., "*Elohim*," meaning angels - in this case, wicked angels] saw that the daughters of men were beautiful; and they took wives for themselves [i.e., had sexual intercourse with] whomever they chose ... The *Nephilim* [lit., the fallen ones, meaning the offspring of the sexual union between the daughters of men and the angels of Satan] were on the earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of God [angels] came into the daughters of men [i.e., had sexual intercourse with them], and they bore children to them. Those were the mighty men who were of old [in Greek mythology], men of renown ..."

THE APPEARANCE OF THE FALLEN ANGELS

The foundations of human society before the Flood were destroyed by the appearance of the fallen angels. The eruption of these beings upon the earth led to the total corruption of the human race - so much so that it was beyond remedy. The fallen angels had burst the bands that had separated them from humanity. The

gulf or dimension that God had placed between men and angels had been bridged, and now these malignant beings poured into the earth like a torrent into an empty lake bed. Violence and bloodshed filled the earth. Slaughter and rampage were everywhere. And if man had been sullied before by the taint of sin, he descended now into a state of abject disgust and abhorrence a thousand times worse than his condition before the poisonous infestation of his world by these malicious beings.

There appears to be but one other occurrence of this sin after the Flood: the assertion is made in Numbers 13:33 in reference to the sons of Anak, who are said to have been *Nephilim* (the word translated "giants" in the KJV in these verses is *Nephilim*). These were the Canaanites who so frightened ten of the twelve spies that Moses sent into Canaan after the Exodus to spy out the land; it seems to account for God's command that the whole race of the Canaanites should be extirpated or annihilated. The thought here is that the Canaanites should be removed much like a doctor would excise or amputate a cancerous leg from a man to preserve the rest of the body from the spread of the malignancy.

THE COMING REAPPEARANCE OF THE FALLEN ANGELS

Now, it has not been without cause that we have taken the time to delve into these Biblical references with regard to the supernatural - for as interesting as all of this is in and of itself, there is here a very somber and earnest reason indeed. And that is this: the gulf that has so long separated man from the fallen angels (and has preserved him from the depths of sin to which his fathers fell before the Flood) will be bridged once again, the bands broken, and the fallen angels - like a flood that has burst its boundaries - will inundate the earth once again as in the days of Noah. This then is the reason for the awful declaration:

"For the coming of the Son of Man will be just like the days of Noah." (Matt. 24:37)

The cause, then, of the unfathomable evil, wickedness, violence, and depraved sexual sin which will so devastatingly characterize the Great Tribulation of the second half of the Seventieth Week will be the shattering of the barrier which God has erected between man and the Kingdom of Darkness. Pember writes:

"... the future ... [fall] of the angels of darkness to earth will be the proximate cause of the **GREAT REBELLION** [i.e. the **GREAT TRIBULATION**] which will call forth the Lord Jesus in flaming fire to take vengeance." (Rev. 12:13)

THE MYSTERY OF THE SEVEN TRUMPETS

With all this in mind, let us now return to the mystery of the Seven Trumpets. Note carefully the salient feature of the first four trumpets. All the plagues have their origin in the heavens! Like a flood, these beings - extraterrestrials, if you wish - pour onto the earth after their expulsion from the heavens. And the result? The plagues of the first four trumpets. The Bible compares their entrance into our atmosphere as follows:

- **The First Trumpet:** hail and fire mingled with blood.
- **The Second Trumpet:** a great mountain burning with fire cast into the sea.
- **The Third Trumpet:** a great burning star from heaven cast onto the earth - and the name of the star is Wormwood.
- **The Fourth Trumpet:** the sun, moon, and stars smitten.

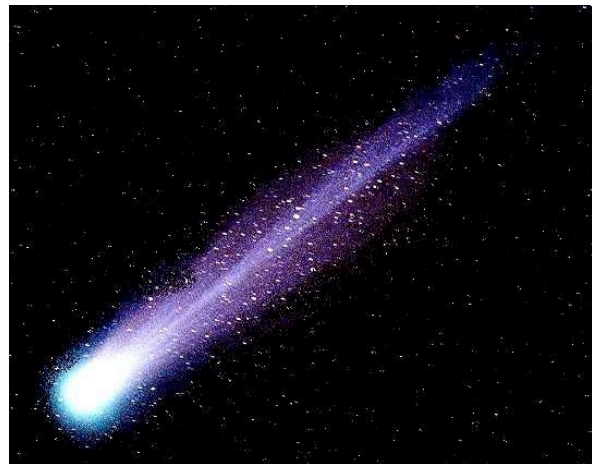


Can anyone reasonably assume that literal stars will be cast onto the earth? No, of course not. The stars are the fallen angels and relate directly to Revelation 12:4, 12:8-9, and 12:12:

"And his [Satan's (i.e., the dragon's)] tail swept away a third of the **STARS** [i.e., angels] of heaven, **AND THREW THEM TO THE EARTH** ... and there was no longer a place found for them [i. e., the Devil and the fallen angels] in heaven. And the great dragon was thrown down [cast out of heaven], the serpent of old who is called the devil and Satan who deceives the whole world; he was thrown down to the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him ... **WOE TO THE EARTH AND THE SEA, BECAUSE THE DEVIL HAS COME DOWN TO YOU, HAVING GREAT WRATH, KNOWING THAT HE HAS ONLY A SHORT TIME.**"

There can be no doubt that the celestial bodies which are here seen crashing onto the earth are fallen angels. This is not only substantiated in the verse itself, but also by the prominence of the fraction: **ONE-THIRD. THIS FRACTION RELATES DIRECTLY TO THE FALLEN ANGELS** - one-third of whom rebelled against God and joined Satan in his insurrection (Rev. 12:4). **[It should be noted here that God evidently set limits to the insurrection, those limits being a third of His dominions and no more.]**

And woe unto those who in their ignorance and *stupidity* had looked to welcome these celestial beings, for " ... the name of the star is called **WORMWOOD** ... " (Rev. 8:11) What does this mean? Wormwood is hemlock, and is an extremely poisonous root. It is bitter and evil tasting, and is used throughout the Scriptures as a curse - especially in reference to **SEXUAL SIN** (Proverbs 5:4) and **SPIRITUAL FORNICATION** (Deut. 29:18, Jer. 9:15, 23:15, Lam. 3:15, 19). Spiritual fornication and sexual sin - these are the sins in which the fallen angels involved themselves and which brought on the Flood (Genesis 6). And the judgment and curse of God against them was great indeed:



"... wandering stars [... (these) angels who did not keep their own domain, but abandoned their proper abode, He has kept in eternal bonds under darkness for the judgment of the great day (Jude 6)], for whom the black darkness has been reserved forever." (Jude 13)

Woe unto those who in their ignorance and *stupidity* had looked to welcome these celestial beings, for " ... the name of the star is called WORMWOOD ... " (Rev. 8:11)

And once again, as in the days before the Flood, they will involve themselves in these same ancient sins - sexual intercourse with the daughters of men (producing Nephilim); and, again as before, they will demand to be worshipped as gods (as they so demanded prior to the Flood and as depicted in the stories of mythology of the Ancient World).



And once again, as in the days before the Flood, they will involve themselves in these same ancient sins - sexual intercourse with the daughters of men [producing Nephilim]; and, again as before, they will demand to be worshipped as gods [as they so demanded prior to the Flood and as depicted in the stories of mythology of the Ancient World].

Again, all this, has special reference to the character of the second half of the Seventieth Week wherein **Satan in the guise of Antichrist will enter the Temple of God, and demand to be worshipped as God:**

"Let no one in any way deceive you, for it will not come unless the apostasy comes first, and the man of lawlessness is revealed, the son of destruction,

"who opposes and exalts himself above every so-called god or object of worship, **so that he takes his seat in the temple of God, displaying himself as being God.**" (II Thess. 2:3-4)

Again we ask, What is the result to man in all of this? It will be the same as before the flood, the sudden and violent increase of immorality, wickedness and human depravity beyond all previous bounds (surpassing evidently even the bounds set by the sin which produced the Flood), producing bloodshed, rampage, savagery and tumult on an unheard of scale! - so much so that:

"... except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved ..." (Matt. 24:22)

THE FIFTH TRUMPET

But wait, there is more, much more:

"And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star from heaven which had fallen to the earth; and the key of the bottomless pit was given to him.

"And he opened the bottomless pit; and smoke went up out of the pit, like the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by the smoke of the pit.

"And out of the smoke came forth locusts upon the earth; and power was given them as the scorpions of the earth have power.

"And they were told that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, nor any green thing, nor any tree, but only the men who do not have the seal of God on their foreheads.

"And they were not permitted to kill anyone, but to torment for five months; and their torment was like the torment of a scorpion when it stings a man.

"And in those days men will seek death and will not find it; and they will long to die and death flees from them.

"And the appearance of the locusts was like horses prepared for battle; and on their heads, as it were, crowns like gold, and their faces were like the faces of men.

"And they had hair like the hair of women, and their teeth were like the teeth of lions.

"And they had breastplates like breastplates of iron; and the sound of their wings was like the sound of chariots, of many horses rushing to battle.

"And they have tails like scorpions, and stings; and in their tails is their power to hurt men for five months.

"They have as king over them, the angel of the abyss; his name in Hebrew is *Abaddon*, and in the Greek he has the name *Apollyon* (i.e., *Apollo*s)." (Revelation 9:1-11)



The Fifth Trumpet

These verses are rendered more intelligible in the *Concordant Literal Translation* of the New Testament:

"And the fifth messenger trumpets. And I perceived a star fallen into earth. And to him [the star or fallen angel] was given the key of the well of **SUBMERGED CHAOS**. And he opens the well of the submerged chaos, and fumes ascend out of the well as the smoke of a large furnace, and the sound and the air are darkened by the fumes of the well. And out of the fumes came out locusts into the earth, and license was granted them as the scorpions of the earth have license. And it was declared to them that they should not be injuring the grass of the earth, not any green thing, nor any tree, except those of mankind who have not the seal of God on their foreheads. And it was granted to them, not that they should be killing them, but that they shall be tormented five months; and their torment is as the torment

of a scorpion, whenever he should be striking a man. And in those days men will be seeking death, **AND UNDER NO CIRCUMSTANCES SHALL BE FINDING IT.** And they will be yearning to die, and death is fleeing from them. And the likeness of the locusts are like horses ready for battle, and on their heads are as it were wreaths like gold, and their faces are as it were human faces. And they had hair as the hair of women, and their teeth are as if they were lions. And they had cuirasses [body armor], as it were cuirasses of iron, and the sound of their wings is as the sound of many chariot horses racing into battle. And they have tails like scorpions, and stings, and their license is to injure mankind five months with their tails. They have a king over them - the messenger of the submerged chaos. His Hebrew name is *Abaddon*, and in Greek he has the name *Apollyon* (i.e., *Apollo*s)."



And out of the fumes came out locusts into the earth, and license was granted them as the scorpions of the earth have license.

Apollyon (*Apollo*s - Rev. 9:11) in Greek mythology was the god of the heavens (the sun). This is precisely the same personage referred to in verse 9:1:

"... and I saw a star [fallen angel] from heaven which had fallen to the earth; and the key of the bottomless pit was given to him."

This is the same star that Revelation 8:9-11 refers to as "Wormwood ..."

"... and a great star fell from heaven burning like a torch, ... and the name of the star is called Wormwood; ... (Rev. 8:9-10)."

It is also that great personage referred to in Revelation 12:9 as "... the great dragon ... that serpent of old called the Devil and Satan ..." -

"And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent called the Devil and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth ... And to him, was given the keys of the bottomless pit, and he was given permission by God to free the hosts of hell [the demons or disembodied spirits]."

They are told not to hurt the grass or the earth in any way. **THIS JUDGMENT IS ON THE SPIRIT OF MAN AND IS THE DIRECT RESULT OF THE ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION;** only those who have been sealed by God are to be spared. Revelation 9:5 says that they are not permitted to kill anyone, but to torment man for five months; and their torment is to be like the sting of a scorpion. In those days men will seek death and not find it - for the torment is spiritual and not physical! The prohibition (or protection) of God has been lifted from man's spirit.



THIS IS SPIRITUAL POSSESSION - TOTAL POSSESSION! Man is possessed totally by the demons - body, soul, AND SPIRIT!!

This is no "common" possession [such as occurs today in instances of demon possession], **THIS IS SPIRITUAL POSSESSION - TOTAL POSSESSION!** Man is possessed totally by the demons - body, soul, **AND SPIRIT!!** They (men) are driven no longer by their own desires, but by the irresistible force of Satan's denizens. There is no longer any choice for them. The hater of humanity is now in total control - body, soul, and spirit. The possession is complete. The domination of man by the hosts of hell is now total.

These citizens of hell are described as horses prepared for battle - their strength cannot be contended. They are bent on the destruction of mankind. On their heads are crowns of gold [a counterfeit of the Holy Spirit], and their faces are like the faces of men [i.e. the men they possess]. They have hair like the hair of women [i.e., their hair is long and unkempt - they have been whipped into a frenzy]. Their breastplates are like iron and the sound of their wings is as the sound of countless war chariots - they are invincible.

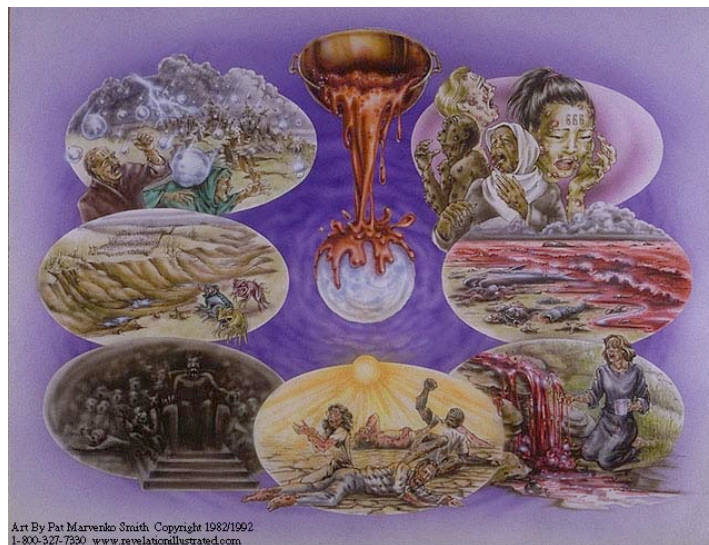
- We urge you to see our articles on the supernatural, “As in the Days of Noah, So Shall the Coming of the Son of Man Be,” The Supernatural, America’s Intelligence Agencies, the Republican Elites, Drugs and Pedophilia” and “Witchcraft and the Paranormal.”

PART 6: THE END OF THE TRIBULATION AND THE WRATH OF GOD

FALSE PERCEPTIONS CONCERNING THE WRATH OF GOD

Now in all of this - i.e., the study of Daniel's Seventieth Week - it is of the utmost importance to grasp this one fundamental fact: the Judgment of God - His wrath - begins **ONLY WITH THE SEVEN VIALS** which occur at the end of the Seventieth Week [and after the Seventh Trump of God - at which time the resurrection and the rapture occur (Matt. 24:29-31; I Thess. 4:16-17)]. The Scriptures are quite specific as to this:

"And I saw another sign in heaven, great and marvelous, seven angels having the seven **LAST** plagues [i.e., the seven vials]; **FOR IN THEM IS FILLED UP THE WRATH OF GOD.** "... And the seven angels came out of the temple, having the seven plagues, clothed in pure and white linen, and having breasts girded with golden ... [belts]. "And one of the four beasts gave unto the seven angels **SEVEN GOLDEN VIALS FULL OF THE WRATH OF GOD**, who liveth for ever and ever. And I heard a great voice out of the temple saying to the seven angels, Go your ways, and pour out the **VIALS OF THE WRATH OF GOD UPON THE EARTH.**" (Revelation 15:1, 6-7; 16:1)



"And I saw another sign in heaven, great and marvelous, seven angels having the seven LAST plagues (i.e., the seven vials); FOR IN THEM IS FILLED UP THE WRATH OF GOD.

The false perception of God's wrath as extending over the entire length of the Seventieth Week leads, naturally enough, to the erroneous conclusion that the church will be raptured **BEFORE** the Tribulation, because the Church is not appointed to wrath. If this was the case, that is, that the wrath of God extended over the entire length of the Seventieth Week; then, no doubt, the Church would have to be raptured, because it has been delivered from all such wrath. But this is not the case! - the wrath of God (which is to be differentiated from the Tribulation of the Saints) is contained only in the Seven Vials, which are to be poured out at the **END** of the Seventieth Week.

THE SEVENTH TRUMPET

At the **Seventh Trumpet**, the following occurs:

- The Resurrection and the Rapture.
- The Temple in Heaven is opened. (Rev. 15:5)
- The seven vials are poured out on the earth (see below).
- Babylon is destroyed (Rev. 16:19).
- The Lord comes to rule and reign. (Rev. 11:15-16)

THE SEVEN VIALS

The **Seven Vials** (Rev. 15:1-16:31) are:

- (1) The plague of boils. (the first vial)
- (2) The sea turned to blood. (the second vial)
- (3) The rivers turned to blood. (the third vial)
- (4) The earth scorched. (the fourth vial)
- (5) The earth covered by darkness. (the fifth vial)
- (6) The Euphrates dried up. (the sixth vial)
- (7) The rain of hail. (the seventh vial)

THE BATTLE OF ARMAGEDDON

In the midst of all this, the Battle of Armageddon will take place – probably sometime after the Sixth Vial is poured out that will prepare the way for the Armies of Antichrist to descend on Jerusalem.

THE GREAT SUPPER

Now the Scriptures mention a mysterious number of days **AFTER** the close of the Tribulation. The Bible says,

"And from the time that the daily sacrifice shall be taken away, and the abomination that maketh desolate set up, there shall be a thousand two hundred and ninety days [30 days after the close of the Tribulation period]. "Blessed is he that waiteth, and cometh to the thousand three hundred and five and thirty days [75 days after the close of the Tribulation period and 45 days beyond the 1,290th day]." (Dan. 12:11-12)

Herein one finds contained the time frame for the "Supper of the Great God" (the thirty day period after the close of the Tribulation era), and the "Judgment of the Nations" (the forty-five days after the end of the "Supper of the Great God").

The "Wrath of God" coupled with the Battle of Armageddon will leave the earth polluted with death; so from the 1,260th day of the last half of the Seventieth Week to the 1,290th day (30 days beyond the close of the Seventieth Week), the Lord will cleanse the earth:

"And I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, Saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, Come and gather yourselves together unto the supper of the Great God; That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great." (Rev. 19:17-18)

THE JUDGMENT OF THE NATIONS

From the 1,290th day to the 1,335th day (or from 30th day beyond the close of the Seventieth Week to 75th day beyond) the nations will be judged:

"But when the Son of Man comes in His glory, and all His angels with Him, then He will sit on His glorious throne.

"And all the nations will be gathered before Him; and He will separate them from one another, as the shepherd separates the sheep from the goats;

"And He will put the sheep on His right, and the goats on the left.

"Then the King shall say to those on His right, Come, you, who are blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom (the Millennial Kingdom) prepared for you from the foundation of the world.

"For I was hungry, and you gave Me something to eat; I was thirsty and you gave Me drink; I was a stranger, and you invited Me in;

"Naked, and you clothed Me; I was sick, and you visited Me; I was in prison, and you came to Me.

"Then the righteous will answer Him, saying, Lord, when did we see You hungry, and feed You, or in prison, and come to You?

"And when did we see You a stranger, and invite You in, or naked, and clothe You? "And did we see You sick, or in prison, and come to You?

"And the King will answer and say to them, Truly I say to you, to the extent that you did it to one of these brothers of Mine, even the least of them, you did it to Me.

"Then He will say to those on His left, Depart from Me, accursed ones, into the eternal fire which has been prepared for the devil and his angels;

"For I was hungry, and you gave Me nothing to eat; I was thirsty and you gave Me nothing to drink; "I was a stranger, and you did not invite Me in; naked and you did not clothe Me; sick, and in prison, and you did not visit Me.

"Then they themselves also will answer, saying, Lord, when did we see You hungry, or thirsty, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not take care of You?



Michelangelo's Judgment of the Nations, in the Sistine Chapel in the Vatican

"Then He will answer them, saying Truly I say to you, to the extent that you did not do it to one of the least of these, you did not do it to Me.

"And these will go away into eternal punishment, but the righteous into eternal live." (Matthew 25:31-46)

Their fate is determined by their actions during the Great Tribulation. If they stood by Christians and Jews during that period (much in the same way that Corrie Ten Boom and her family stood by the Jews during World War II), then they are allowed to enter the Millennium as "blessed of the Father" (Matt. 25:34). This corresponds to Daniel's statement in Dan. 12:12:

"And blessed are those who wait and remain until the 1,335th day."

After the 1,335th day, a new age is ushered in and the 1,000 year reign of Christ begins.

CHAPTER X

THE 144,000 & THE LAST HALF OF THE SEVENTIETH WEEK

THE SEALING OF GOD'S SERVANTS

In Chapter VIII ["Tribulation and Judgment," (Part 7: Parables and Ciphers)] we left off with the "sealing" of the saints of God - and we did so because we had not yet covered the matter of the Abomination of Desolation. An understanding of this matter is necessary if one ever hopes to make any sense of the "sealing" of God's servants. We now continue with this matter where we left off in Part 7 of Chapter VIII. It's necessary here to repeat some of the information we covered at that time:

"Immediately after the Abomination of Desolation - and just prior to the blowing of the seven trumpets (which signifies the beginning of the second half of the Tribulation and the supernatural events which pertain to it) - the "saints of God" are sealed. Why? - to protect them from the supernatural events of this period.

"The sealing of God's servants directly concerns the passages of Scripture which deal with the so-called '144,000'. There is perhaps no other group of verses around which so much misunderstanding and confusion swirl than those verses which deal with the 144,000 of Revelation 7:1-8 and Revelation 14:1-7. It is a sad commentary on all of us in the Christian community that so much 'elitism' has resulted from false interpretations concerning the message of these passages of Scripture. It is of the utmost importance, therefore, that once again we recognize that these Scriptures - like the Scriptures which dealt with the Two Witnesses, etc. - have been written in code, their message hidden in a parable or a cipher.

"The first important fact that we should note with regard to these passages is that the 144,000 of Revelation 7 are different from the 144,000 of Revelation 14. **WE ARE DEALING WITH TWO DIFFERENT GROUPS.** In comparing the 144,000 of Revelation 14 with the 144,000 of Revelation 7, Kelly writes that the group in Revelation 14 is:

'... a remnant, not merely sealed as the servants of God [like a similar band out of the twelve tribes of Israel in chapter vii (7)], but brought into association with the Lamb in Zion, that is, with **GOD'S ROYAL PURPOSE IN GRACE ...**'

"In commenting on Kelley, Pentecost writes:

It is ... held that those in chapter 7 are on earth and these (in chapter 14) in heaven, making Mt. Zion the heavenly city, New Jerusalem. Those in chapter fourteen are said to be identified with the Lamb and those in chapter seven are not. Those in chapter seven are 'sealed' but those in chapter fourteen have "the Father's name written in their foreheads'.

"One group is heavenly, the other earthly, one group '... follows the Lamb whithersoever he goeth', the second group is numbered exclusively from the twelve tribes of Israel. Thus, there can be no doubt as to their identity: the 144,000 of Revelation 7 being Israel, and the 144,000 of Revelation 14 being the Church.

////////////////////////////////////

ISRAEL

144,000 OF REVELATION 7

ON THE EARTH



THE CHURCH

144,000 OF REVELATION 14

IN THE HEAVENS



////////////////////////////////////

ONE GROUP IS SHOWN TO BE SEALED, AND ONE IS NOT

Both groups of 144,000 must be protected or sealed; but look - in actuality only one group is shown to be sealed, the group in Revelation 7. Why? Because the group in Revelation 14 - the Church - has already been sealed. Those in the Church - when they received Christ as their Savior - were "sealed by the Holy Spirit of Promise" at that time and there is no further need to reseat them, as it were, like some half empty bottle of soda:

"In whom ye also trusted after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, **YE WERE SEALED WITH THAT HOLY SPIRIT OF PROMISE**, "Which is the earnest [down payment] of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchase possession, unto the praise of his glory." (Ephesians 1:13-14)

Let's look at both groups of 144,000 in greater detail.

THE 144,000 OF REVELATION SEVEN - ISRAEL

Let's begin by examining the 144,000 of chapter 7. We first come in contact with this group just prior to the events described in the previous chapter, that is to say before the commencement of the supernatural events of the last half of the Seventieth Week - the Great Tribulation. Just prior to the blowing of the seven trumpets (which signify the beginning of the phenomenal events of this period), an angel of God descends from the east having the seal of the living God and it is announced to the fallen angels and the demons that they at last have permission to torment the very spirit of man itself - which now, through the Abomination of Desolation, has been abandoned by the "Restrainer" and given over to the power of Satan - **EXCEPT THOSE WHO HAVE BEEN SEALED BY GOD:**

"And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree; but only those men which have not the **SEAL OF GOD** in their foreheads." (Rev. 9:4)

It is extremely important at this point to ascertain the exact sequence of events which now occurs. In order to do this, a number of verses must be brought together - all specifically related to the events surrounding the Abomination of Desolation: namely Revelation 7:1-8; 9:4-5; and 12:1-17.

Revelation 7:1-8 describes the sealing itself and those who are sealed (i.e., Israel); Revelation 9:4-5 describes why; and Revelation 12:1-7 gives the events surrounding the sealing; these events pertain to the woman "clothed with the sun," in Revelation chapter 12.

THE WOMAN OF REVELATION CHAPTER TWELVE

"And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars:

"And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered And she brought forth a manchild, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne.

"And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days [3 1/2 years].

"... and when the dragon saw that he was cast [out of heaven] unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child.

"And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time [3 1/2 years], from the face of the serpent.



The Woman of Revelation Twelve by William Blake.

"And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood.

"And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth.

"And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus (Revelation 12:12; 5-6; 13-17).

THE IDENTITY OF THE WOMAN

Pentecost writes:

"While there has been general agreement among commentators of all types concerning the identity of the two aforementioned individuals [i.e., the dragon as Satan and the manchild as Christ], there is a great diversity of interpretation concerning the key individual in this passage [i.e., the woman].

"... There have been many false interpretations of the identity of this woman. Some have held that it was Mary.

"However, the only feature to make this possible would be the fact of motherhood, for Mary was never persecuted, never fled into the wilderness, was never cared for 1260 days. Others have held that this woman is the church that is travailing to bring Christ to the nations. This, however, is ... [too] allegorizing ... and must be rejected ... Still others have identified the woman as the leader of some particular sect; but only by the wildest vagaries of the imagination could some present day individual be pressed into the interpretation here.

"... It has [always] been the interpretation of ... Premillennialists [i.e., evangelicals] that the woman in this passage represents the nation Israel.

"... Inasmuch then as the woman represents that which is to display divine government in the earth, and Israel is God's appointed instrument to that end [the Church being the instrument of divine government in the heavens], this woman must be identified as Israel."

Finally, the parallel between Revelation 12 and Micah 5 establishes once and for all the identity of the woman as Israel. Micah 5:2 records the birth of the ruler who shall rule all nations "with a rod of iron." It then records the rejection of this ruler by the nation of Israel and the resulting setting aside of the nation ["therefore will he give them up ... (Mic. 5:3)], which brings to an end the first Sixty-Nine Weeks of Daniel. The nation is then pictured by the prophet as being in **TRAVAIL** (dispersion in, and **PERSECUTION** by the Gentile nations) "... until the time that she [Israel] which travaileth hath brought forth" (Mic. 5:3); that is, until her blindness concerning Christ (her Messiah) is removed (Romans 11:25) and she is once again restored into God's plan and purpose.

Kelly writes:

"... in conjunction with the accomplishment of the purpose of God respecting Israel ... Christ was born (Micah v. 2); then comes His rejection ... the prophecy passes by all that has to do with the church and takes up Christ's birth ... Here it is put figuratively, as Zion travailing till the birth of this great purpose of God as touching Israel ... [and continuing until] God's people will [at last ... resume their ancient place."

Finally, in Romans 9:4-5, Paul writes concerning Israel:

"... of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came ..." (Rom. 9:5).

And insofar as the identification of the "manchild" is concerned, Pentecost writes:

"The quotation from Psalm 2 [Thou art my **SON**; this day have I begotten thee ... Thou shalt break them (the nations) with a **ROD OF IRON** (Psalm 2:7,9)], which all would agree is a Messianic Psalm, identifies the manchild here as none other than Jesus Christ. The fact of the birth, the fact of the destiny of this child, for He is 'to rule all nations with a **ROD OF IRON**', and the fact of the ascension, since He is 'caught up unto God, and to His throne', all cause the identification to point to one person, the Lord Jesus Christ, for of none other could all three statements be made."

Since the "manchild" must be identified as Christ, and since, according to Paul, the one from whom Christ came (was born) according to the flesh is Israel, the woman must be identified as Israel.

THE WOMAN IN THE WILDERNESS

It is then said of the woman that she flees into a place called the "wilderness" where she has a "place prepared for her," and where she will be safe for "a thousand two hundred and threescore days" [31/2 years] (Rev. 12:6). Now, this part is not too difficult to decipher; what is being said here is this: that Israel (which is the same as saying the "144,000" of Revelation 7), immediately after the abomination of Desolation, will escape the perils of the last half of the Seventieth Week by fleeing into the "wilderness." Why? And more, why is this said of the 144,000 of Revelation 7 (Israel), and not of the 144,000 of Revelation 14 (the Church)? Why is Israel so protected and not the Church? A fair question. The reason is this: because the protection that the Scripture has in mind here for both Witnesses (both groups of 144,000) is - as we have said before - **SPIRITUAL** protection, and not necessarily physical protection; but since Israel, by the time of the Abomination of Desolation, has not yet fully recognized her Messiah as Christ (**Please see box, this chapter entitled, "Israel as One of the Two Witnesses"**), their spirits do not as yet - indeed, cannot yet - contain the protecting presence of the Holy Spirit; thus, extraordinary care must be taken in the case of Israel that is not necessary with regard to the Church. Israel must be offered physical protection in addition to spiritual protection, for if they were to die as a result of the turmoil of the second half of the Seventieth Week, they would share the same fate common to all unbelievers who die outside of Christ. Thus, in the case of Israel, physical death means spiritual death, while the same is not true of those who die in Christ (i.e., the Church):



"And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time [31/2 years], from the face of the serpent."

"For whether we live, we live unto the Lord; and whether we die, **WE DIE UNTO THE LORD**: whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lord's." (Romans 14:8)

"For me to live is Christ, **AND TO DIE IS GAIN**." (Phil. 1:21)

THE WILDERNESS

"But when ye shall see the **ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION** spoken of by Daniel the prophet, **STANDING [DWELLING] WHERE IT OUGHT NOT**, (let him that readeth understand), then let them that be in Judea flee to the mountains [**the wilderness**]:

"And let him that is on the house top not go down in the house neither enter therein, to take anything out of the house.

"And let him that is in the field not turn back again for to take up his garment.

"But woe to them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days!

"And pray that your flight be not in the winter.

"For in those days shall be affliction such as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created unto this time, neither shall be [again]." (Mark 13:14-19)

Daniel 11:40-45 states that Antichrist shall invade the Middle East and conquer it, but that three countries will escape his grasp:

"He [Antichrist] shall enter also into the glorious land [Israel] and many countries shall be overthrown: but these shall escape out of his hand, even Edom, and Moab, and the chief of the children of Ammon." (Daniel 11:41)

God shall preserve, quite miraculously, this portion as a refuge for the children of Israel. This is the "wilderness" spoken of in Revelation chapter 12 where the woman (Israel) is to flee immediately after the Abomination of Desolation; it is the same place referred to in Matthew, Mark, and Luke (Matt. 24:1-22; Mark 13:14-20; and Luke 21:7-21). It is that portion of land east of the river Jordan which sweeps in a large arc (with the Dead Sea as the fulcrum) from about 40 miles north east of the Dead Sea southward to about 50 mile due south, southeast of the same sea - a barren, mountainous, and desolate wilderness devoid of any significant vegetation. Mt. Nebo is located in this wilderness where it is reported that Jeremiah hid the ark of the Covenant in order to prevent its capture by the Babylonians. There are scholars today who suggest that it is still there (Numbers 35). Here God will care for His people much in the same fashion that He cared for them when Moses led the people out of Egypt.

THE BLINDNESS OF ISRAEL REMOVED

And the certainty that all of Israel will be saved and brought back as a nation - and not just as scattered individuals - into a place of blessing is vouchsafed for by the Word of God.

Hosea promises:

"For the children of Israel shall abide many days [during the dispersion] without a king, and without a prince, and without a sacrifice ...
"Afterward, shall the children of Israel return, and [through the trials and pressure of the Tribulation] seek [at last] the Lord their God... and shall fear the Lord and his goodness in the **LATTER DAYS.**" (Hosea 3:4-5)

Paul says:

"AND SO ALL ISRAEL SHALL BE SAVED: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion [Zion] the deliverer [Christ], and he shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob [Israel]."

ISRAEL AS ONE OF THE TWO WITNESSES

Israel's blindness with regard to Christ is not destined to be fully removed until the Second Advent [i.e., the Coming of Christ in Glory]:

"And I will pour [out] upon the house of David and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the Spirit of grace [unmerited favor], and of supplications. And they shall look [earnestly] upon me whom they have PIERCED [when Christ appears at the Mount to rescue Israel during the siege of Jerusalem - i.e., Armageddon], and they shall mourn for him [i.e., Christ], as one mourneth for his only son, and [they] shall be in bitterness [deep sorrow] for Him as one who is in bitterness [deep sorrow] for his first-born." [(cf. John 19:37 and Rev. 1:7); Zech. 12:10 RSV.]"

There are those who would object to Israel being a Witness of God while not yet fully saved. But, it must be remembered that the Tribulation is the very process whereby Israel's blindness is to be removed, the Second Coming of Christ being merely the culmination of that process. And even today, ISRAEL'S VERY PRESENCE IN THIS PRESENT EVIL WORLD AFTER 2,000 YEARS OF DISPERSION IS A TESTIMONY TO GOD'S UNMERITED GRACE. Indeed, the entire world finds itself today revolving around a nation of little more than a few million souls - a seeming absurdity by any standard. The Church also will be undergoing a similar transformation, for prior to the Seventieth Week the condition of the Church (and we mean here the so-called born-again Church) is characterized by the Scriptures as being one in which Christ can no longer find a home, a condition where Christ finds Himself outside the gate, knocking to get in (Revelation 3:14-20). [That this passage has specific reference to the "End Times Church," all evangelical scholars would agree - please see *Miller's Church History*.] For the Bible says with regard to us both (both Israel and the Church) that "God hath concluded them all [both groups] in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all. O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! How unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out. (Romans 11:32-33.)"

And Zechariah prophesies:

"And I will pour out on the house of David and on the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the Spirit of grace and of supplication, so that they will look on Me whom they have pierced; and they will mourn for Him, as one mourns for an only son, and they will weep bitterly over Him, like the bitter weeping over a first-born.

"... They will call on My name, And I will answer them; I will say, 'They are My people', And they will say, 'The Lord is my God'." (Zech. 12:10; 13:9b)

THE 144,000 OF REVELATION **FOURTEEN - THE CHURCH**

And now, what about the 144,000 of Revelation chapter fourteen? The Bible says:

"And I looked, and, lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty and four thousand, having his Father's name written in their foreheads.

"And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps:

"And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts, and the elders: and no man could learn the song but the hundred and forty and four thousand, which were redeemed from the earth.

"These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth. These were redeemed from among men, being the first fruits unto God and to the Lamb.

"And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God." (Revelation 14:1-5)

The fact that we are here speaking of the heavenly Mt. Sion (Zion) is confirmed by verse 3 of Revelation 14: "And they sung as it were a new song before the **THRONE**, and before the **FOUR BEASTS**, and the **[TWENTY-FOUR] ELDERS**" - and as there can be no doubt as to the location of these dignities (the heavenly Jerusalem), there can, therefore, be no doubt that we are here speaking of the **HEAVENLY JERUSALEM**; that we are here speaking of the heavenly Jerusalem is further substantiated by Revelation 4:1-6:

"After this I looked, and behold, a door was opened **IN HEAVEN**; and the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me; which said, '**COME UP HITHER**' ... And immediately I was in the spirit: and, behold, a **THRONE** was set in **HEAVEN**... And round about the throne were **FOUR AND TWENTY SEATS** and upon the seats I saw **FOUR AND TWENTY ELDERS** ... And before the **THRONE** there was a sea of glass like unto crystal: and in the midst of the **THRONE**, and round about the throne were **FOUR BEASTS** ..." (Revelation 4:1-2, 4, 6)



"And immediately I was in the spirit: and, behold, a **THRONE** was set in **HEAVEN** ... And round about the throne were **FOUR AND TWENTY SEATS** and upon the seats I saw **FOUR AND TWENTY ELDERS** ..."

All of these things - the throne, the four beasts, and the twenty-four elders - are in heaven; and it is precisely among these things (i.e., the throne, the four beasts, and the twenty-four elders) that the 144,000 are located. Thus, there can be little doubt as to the identification of this 144,000 - it is the Church, for just as the earthly Mt. Zion can only be apprehended as pertaining to Israel, so also the heavenly Mt. Zion must be apprehended as pertaining only to the Church - and the fact that it is the

heavenly Mt. Sion (Zion) [not the earthly Mt. Zion] to which Christians should be looking is confirmed by Hebrews 12:22-24:

"But ye [dear Christian] are come unto **MOUNT SION**, and unto the city of the living God, **THE HEAVENLY JERUSALEM**, and to an innumerable company of angels,
"To the general assembly and **CHURCH OF THE FIRSTBORN, WHICH ARE WRITTEN IN HEAVEN**, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect,
"And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel." (Hebrews 12:22-24)

Finally, the Scripture says of this group that they have: "... his Father's name written in their foreheads." This is a clear reference to Revelation 3:12 which, once again, places this group in the "heavenly" Jerusalem (as opposed to the "earthly" city), and clearly numbers it with the Church:

"To him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name." (Revelation 3:12)

Now we come to a mystery: the Scripture says - "These are they which were not defiled with women." What does this mean? Can it possibly mean that these 144,000 are all men (with no women in their company) and that none of them has ever been married? Of course not!! - if only because such an interpretation would contradict other portions of the Scripture and would render this passage an absurdity.



"To him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God"

First of all, such an interpretation would seem to say that sexual intercourse between husband and wife is to be avoided, or at least frowned upon. But this would contradict one of the clearest warnings of Scripture concerning the End of Days - that evil men would appear commanding men to avoid marriage:

"Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils;
"Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron;
"**FORBIDDING TO MARRY.**" (I Timothy 4:1-3)

Moreover, the Scriptures plainly teach that sexual intercourse between a husband and wife [but, only between a husband and wife] is **HONORABLE** and a pleasure ardently to be desired. Indeed, the Lord devoted an entire book in the Old Testament to a rapturous (and even erotic) description thereof: The Song of Solomon. And the teaching of the New Testament is also quite clear on the subject:

"Marriage [sexual intercourse within the institution of marriage] is honorable in all [in everything], and the bed undefiled [i.e., both husband and wife remain pure before God]." (Hebrews 13:4)

"If thou [a male] marry, thou hast not sinned; and if a virgin [in this case, female] marry, she hath not sinned." (I Corinthians 7:28)

Finally, the above interpretation which insists that the 144,000 of Revelation 14 are all male virgins (and, as ridiculous as it might sound, there are many who insist on this interpretation), flies in the face of the clear teaching of the Scripture concerning the status of the female in the Church and in the Heavens, for the Scriptures manifestly teach that in heaven there will no longer be any distinction (insofar as standing before God is concerned) between the male and female (though such a distinction remains while we are yet on the

earth) - and it must be remembered that the picture we have before us in Revelation 14 is that of the Church **IN HEAVEN**]. Jesus said:

"For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage [there is no distinction before God between the two], but [they] are as the angels of God in heaven." (Matt. 22:30)

And Paul writes:

"For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus [both male and female].

"For as many as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

"There is neither ... male nor female: for ye are all one [in standing] in Christ Jesus." (Galatians 3:26-28)

So then, what does the passage before us really mean? It is rendered more intelligible when read in its entirety. The passage says of this group that they have been "redeemed from the earth;" that "they follow the Lamb [Christ] whithersoever he goeth;" that they have been "bought from among men;" that they are "the first fruits unto God and to the Lamb;" that "in their mouth was found no guile;" and that "they are without fault before the throne of God." Now, what does all this speak of? It speaks of **SPIRITUAL PURITY!!**

Through the affliction and distress of the Tribulation - like gold tried and refined in a burning fire or like a precious stone (a diamond or a ruby) made perfect through **INTENSE** pressure - they have cast off all that bound them to the cares of this life and this present evil world. They have been redeemed from the earth. They no longer belong to it, but rather their citizenship is now of the heavens; so high have they been lifted above the earth, that they cannot even be numbered among men anymore. They have been lifted up to the heavens - even above the angels. Their testimony has been made pure in everything - there no longer is any "guile" or deceit in their witness; no self-serving nor double-dealing in their testimony; no attempt to serve both God and mammon - they follow Christ now wherever He goes, be it into fire, death, torture, whatever. Their love for Jesus no longer permits any separation from Him Who now is the **ABSOLUTE** object of their love and desire. Their love and their service has been made totally **SELFLESS**. They are "undefiled with women" - which means they no longer go whoring after the delights of this world. It no longer has any attraction for them. They have been cleansed from all their whoredoms [see Hosea] and their love is now only for their divine Husband - the Lord Jesus Christ. They have been transformed from their whoredoms into a Bride made perfect and pure, and worthy of His love.

THE MEANING OF THE 144,000

Finally, we must come to grips with the meaning of the number 144,000. Are we to understand that only 144,000 out of all Israel and out of all the Church are to be saved? Or are we perhaps to perceive these two groups of 144,000 as some kind of elite to be honored above their companions in Israel and the Church? The Scripture does not indicate this at all. Israel is one, and the Church is one. They are not to be divided into segments according to some kind of intrinsic value of their several members. Each member's standing is the same, and their standing has nothing to do with any merit of their own, but it is based solely upon the merit of their dear Savior!!

"But the Scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe." (Galatians 3:22)

"For by grace [unmerited favor] are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves [no merit of yours had anything to do with it]: it is the gift of God:

"Not of works [not out of any merit you might have], lest any man should boast." (Ephesians 2:8-9)

The Bible does speak of a "remnant" in both the Church and Israel. But this is the "remnant" that is left after much tribulation - in other words, the true believers. In no instance are we to ever perceive the "remnant" to be some kind of special caste or class in either the Church or Israel - they are merely what is

left over, or what remains (hence, remnant) after the winds of persecution have swept the chaff away (those who were merely playing at Christianity for advantage).

Then to what does the number 144,000 refer? Once again, the Scripture is speaking in a parable, a riddle. The number has a specific meaning, and we can begin to discern that meaning by examining its several parts. It is made up in this way: $12 \times 12 \times 1000 = 144,000$. Now, in Scripture twelve is the number of **CORPORATE TESTIMONY**; for instance, there were twelve Apostles of the Lamb and twelve tribes in Israel; and we have already seen that the number one thousand is the number of magnification. The number 144,000 then, means the **MAGNIFIED, COMPLETED TESTIMONY OF GOD AND THE LAMB** - pure, unmixed, clean, spotless, without blemish, chaste, and holy!! This is now the condition of both Israel and the Church, the Two Witnesses of God.



THE RAPTURE, THE RESURRECTION, AND THE TWO WITNESSES OF REVELATION 11

Now, two last ciphers; two last puzzles. First, the Rapture and Resurrection as they pertain to the Two Witnesses:

"And after the three and a half days the breath of life from God came into them, and they stood on their feet; and great fear fell upon those who were beholding them. And they heard a loud voice from heaven saying to them, 'Come up here'. And they went up into heaven in the cloud and their enemies beheld them." (Revelation 11:11-12)

What is this? Where have we heard such terminology before? The terms "3-1/2 days;" "time, times, and half a time;" "42 months;" "1,260 days" - all these are Biblical code words for either the first half or the second half of the Tribulation (Daniel's Seventieth Week); in this case, the second half. There is no reference here as some believe, to the time Christ spent in the grave - which was only three days, not three and a half days.



Quick! Get out!

readeth, let him understand:) Then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains ..."] and Christians will be scattered about in every city, town, and village of the whole earth where the inhabitants thereof will gaze upon them in glee and great joy because there is now no "righteous man" to torment their consciences.

What must be meant here is that shortly after the Abomination of Desolation (which occurs midway through the Tribulation or the Seventieth Week), the Beast (Antichrist) will make war on Israel and the Church - those who keep the commandments of God (Israel), and those who have the testimony of Jesus (the Church) (Rev. 12:17); that he will prevail on a world-wide basis in a holocaust that will dwarf the Holocaust of Hitler (Rev. 11:7); and that the dead bodies of both Jews [i.e., those who were unable to escape according to Matt. 24:15-16: "When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso

But after three and a half years (the last half of the Seventieth Week, the "Great Tribulation"), Jesus will return, and the rapture and resurrection will occur - and this is the precise meaning behind the verse: "And they heard a loud **VOICE**, For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a **SHOUT**, with the **VOICE** of the archangel, and with the trumpet of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first. Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air, and thus we shall always be with the Lord. (I Thess. 4:16-17) from heaven saying to them, 'Come up here'. And they went up into heaven in the cloud and their enemies beheld them." (Rev. 11:12, 13)

GOD IS NOW THROUGH WITH THOSE WHO REFUSE TO REPENT

Lastly, many are puzzled about the reference to the fraction "one-tenth of the city" and about "7,000 persons killed" in conjunction with the Resurrection and Rapture of the Two Witnesses in Revelation 11. These figures are symbolical. Not, however, in a good sense, but in an evil sense. Lange (*Lange's Commentaries on the Holy Scriptures*) suggests an answer:

"... ten denoted completeness; one-tenth denotes a minor completeness of destruction and wreck. The added figure, 7,000 is to be understood in the same manner. Three [denoting God] and four [denoting man], thus seven denoting God's dealings with man, multiplied by 1,000 [the greatest completeness, 10 x 10 x 10]: **GOD IS NOW UTTERLY THROUGH WITH UNREPENTANT MAN** - "My Spirit shall not always strive with man" (Gen. 6:3). Hence, the complete and final removal of His Two Witnesses. What this removal means is written by this figure of 7,000 killed in Babylon. The removal of the Two Witnesses is a catastrophe such as is caused when a terrific earthquake rocks the very foundations of the world, as when the central pillar that upholds the whole earth is removed. When the task of the Two Witnesses is through, **GOD IS FINISHED WITH THE WORLD**. The catastrophe first strikes Babylon, the headquarters of the beastly opposition. When this totters, the rest will not stand for long."

That this entire section is symbolical can easily be seen: to calculate that one-tenth of the city was 7,000 people, and that hence the entire city (i.e., Jerusalem - or New York, or Washington D.C, or whatever) was 70,000 (i.e., ten-tenths) borders on the absurd. "And the rest became terrified and gave glory to the God of the heaven" cannot mean that now at last all who were not slain repented. When judgment descends, it is too late for repentance. When under the power of the Beast, the enemies of God are struck with terror as the first blow of judgment falls, and then acknowledge that there is a God of heaven; they have not thereby shown repentance. "The demons also know and tremble."



**GOD IS NOW UTTERLY
THROUGH WITH
UNREPENTANT MAN - "My
Spirit shall not always strive
with man" (Gen. 6:3).**

CHAPTER XI

ANTICHRIST: KING OF BABYLON

THE DECAYED ESTATE OF AMERICAN DEMOCRACY

William Greider, former assistant managing editor of *The Washington Post*, writes:



The decayed estate of American democracy

tures - hollow laws that are emptied of serious content in the private bargaining of Washington. Promises are made and never kept. Laws are enacted and never enforced. When ordinary people organize themselves to confront the deception, they find themselves too marginalized to make much difference."

There is, as a result, an almost palpable yearning within today's electorate to be rescued from all this; a desire for some kind of Arthurian figure to step forward and put an end to it.

THE LONGING FOR A NEW ARTHURIAN FIGURE TO MAKE THINGS RIGHT - A NEW CAMELOT

Max Mell, a contemporary poet, has said that underneath the thin cosmopolitan surface of today's modern Western World [i.e., the Euro-based, white civilization of Western Europe and North America] lie all the "old

"The decayed condition of American democracy is difficult to grasp ... Symptoms of distress are accumulating freely in the political system and citizens are demoralized ... A climate of stagnant doubt has enveloped contemporary politics, a generalized disappointment that is too diffuse and intangible to be easily confronted ... This dissonance ... is so discomforting that many naturally turn away from its implications ... In place of meaningful democracy, the political community has embraced a ... culture of false appearances ...

[It] responds to the public's desires with an artful dance of symbolic [and vacant] ges-



The longing for a new Camelot

heroes" still - Parsifal, Guinevere, Roland, Lancelot, Barbarossa, Tristan, Isolde, etc. They are implanted far too deeply in our collective memory to ever be rooted out by the fleeting fashions of modernity, secularism, and democracy - and who, like Arthur (the "once and future king" - the *Resitiutor Orbis*), stand ready to re-emerge and rescue us from the chaos and confusion of this present evil world. And there are more people than most would care to admit (many of whom are passing themselves off as Christians) who are calling us to embrace the concept of leadership that these old "warrior kings" represented - a kind of messianic leadership based on nobility of character, charisma and the ability to "get things done."

Indeed, many of the Christian men and women who are crying out for such leadership hold the concepts of what we today call "democracy" in utter contempt. To their mind, messianic leadership - not democracy - is the ideal. To such people, the messy and disordered condition of "politics as usual" - with all its sordid, back room deal-making and compromises - is a disgusting and vulgar thing, made all the more loathsome by people like Bill and Hillary Clinton and the radical feminists, militant homosexuals and effete multiculturalists who surround them.

The longing for such a messiah rests on the bedrock of Western tradition, a tradition which the secular elites can hide and gloss over, but one which they have utterly failed to stamp out; it is far too deeply embedded in the Western psyche - so much so that British writers Norris J. Lacy and Geoffrey Ashe can write that such a messiah has been -

"... persistently imagined and hoped for - a new Constantine who will ... end civil strife and [the] usurpation [of political power by the moneyed elite] ... [who will] defeat ... [Christendom's] ... enemies, and bring back peace and prosperity."

And not only that, but - as Carolly Erickson, a professor at the University of California at Santa Barbara, writes -

"... one who [like Arthur] dwells in the circle of the miraculous."



KING ARTHUR:
The Resitiutor Orbis

Americans are looking for a *Resitiutor Orbis* who stands ready to rescue them from the chaos and confusion of this present evil world.

THE DARKER SIDE OF EVIL

There is, however, a dark and foreboding side to all this that goes beyond the heroic to the demonic: first, it is the product not of Biblical Christianity, and - when taken to the extreme - is precisely that which produces the David Koreshes and the Jim Joneses of our world, and it goes a long way in explaining the death-like embrace of Hitler and the German people - one with the other - as they careened towards their final destruction in the waning days of World War II.

For those Christians who look for such a solution - maybe, just maybe - they'll get it, and a lot more than they had originally bargained for. The Bible says:

"Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time." (1 John 2:18; cf. I John 2:22; I John 4:3; 2 John 1:7)

ANTICHRIST: KING OF BABYLON

And so we now at last come to one of the most primeval nightmares of the Christian West: the Antichrist.

In the study of prophecy, evangelicals of course lay a great deal of stress on the Second Coming of Christ. But in doing so, we as evangelicals often forget - though the world doesn't (a quick perusal of its movies



and books would confirm this fact) - that there is another coming that is almost as momentous as that of Christ's. In both the Old and New Testaments we are told of a **MYSTERIOUS** and **TERRIBLE** person who shall be revealed in the "Last Days." He is known variously in the Scriptures as the "King of Babylon" (Isa. 14:4), the "Little Horn" (Dan. 7:8; 8:9), the "Prince that shall Come" (Dan. 9:26), the "Man of Sin" (II Thess. 2:3-8), the "Son of Perdition" (II Thess. 2:3-8), the "Antichrist" (I John 2:18), and the "Beast" (Rev. 13:1).

Isaiah describes this extraordinary and marvelous being in Isaiah 14 with remarkable grace and elegance, and shows how this proud possessor of world power - who in titanic arrogance will think himself to be the equal of God - shall at last be cast down: the Kingdom of the Dead will rise in commotion at his arrival; specters will hurry to meet him; and princes shall bow down before him -

"... thou shall take up this proverb against the **KING OF BABYLON** [i.e., the Antichrist], and say, How hath the oppressor ceased! The golden city [i.e., Babylon] ceased! Hell from beneath is moved for thee to meet thee at thy coming: it stirreth up the dead for thee, even all the chief ones of the earth; it hath raised up from their thrones all the kings of the nations." (Isaiah 14:4-9)

In general, there have been several diverse views of the doctrine of the Antichrist. These views can be classified into four categories:

- That he is to be a "Roman Prince" of Gentile origin - the leader of the last great form of **GEN-TILE WORLD POWER**.
- That he is to be a Jew - the leader of an apostate Israel.
- That he is the Pope, or that "system of things" summed up in the form of the "Papacy."
- That rather than being a person, Antichrist is best understood in spiritual or allegorical terms as an "institution" or "principle" of evil.

THE VIEW OF THE EARLY CHURCH: ANTICHRIST AS A "ROMAN PRINCE"

The early Church believed that Antichrist was to be a person, the embodiment of human blasphemy and wickedness - a Roman Prince; indeed, almost all the early Christian literature of the Age of Persecution (33-312 A.D.) singled out the Antichrist as just such a prince. [Please see J. Trachtenberg, *The Devil and the Jews* (New York; World Publishing House, 1943; Yale University Press), pg. 224.]

THE VIEW OF THE MEDIEVAL (CATHOLIC) CHURCH: ANTICHRIST AS A JEW

But with the acceptance of Christianity by the Roman Emperor Constantine, and the increasing identification of the Church with the Roman state, it became ever more embarrassing to both the Roman state and the Roman Church to continue to allow Christian doctrine to picture the Antichrist as a "Roman Prince."

A solution to this difficult problem was finally adopted by the Papacy: over the years it gradually shifted the onus of Antichrist from off the back of Rome and on to the Jews. **THE IDEA OF ANTICHRIST AS A JEW IS THE CREATION OF THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH** and is traceable in its embryonic form to the early Fifth Century A.D., and specifically to the writing of Jacob of Serug. As a mature hypothesis, this doctrine was fully developed and finalized by Thomas Aquinas (perhaps the

Roman Church's greatest scholar) and Albertus Magnus. Both devoted considerable attention in developing this theme and it is in Catholic tradition and doctrine that this concept found its greatest acceptance.

Today, however, while the Catholic Church continues to hold to a greater or lesser degree to such doctrine (as do many Post-Millennialists), evangelical-fundamentalists have rejected this doctrine as unscriptural and Catholic in origin. J. Dwight Pentecost writes:

"He (Antichrist) is a **GENTILE** since he arises from the sea (Revelation 13:1) and since the sea depicts the Gentile nations (Rev. 17:15), he must be of Gentile origin. He rises from the [legacy] of the Roman Empire, since he is [to be] a ruler of the people [civilization] who destroyed Jerusalem (Dan. 9:26). He is to be the head of the last form of **GENTILE** [not Jewish] world dominion." (Rev. 13:1)

THE VIEW OF THE PROTESTANT REFORMERS: ANTICHRIST AS THE POPE OR THE PAPAL SYSTEM

During the Reformation, however, the onus of Antichrist - like a boomerang - returned to the Roman Catholic Church, this time with a vengeance. Dissidents within the Roman Church, and among the leaders of those Protestant bodies which broke off from Rome, began to look upon the Pope himself and the institution of the Papacy as Antichrist - and it was all too natural and understandable for them to do so, given the nature of the struggle they found themselves engaged in at the time. Indeed, the arguments in favor of this view are ingenious and plausible, but they are hard to reconcile with the Word of God. This view has tended to make of the Antichrist a "system" (the Papacy) rather than an actual person. But such views are disproved by the Word; the Scriptures plainly teach that the Antichrist is a **PERSON**. Furthermore, the Word also teaches that the Antichrist will deny the deity of Christ. The Apostle John writes:

"Who is a liar, but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist that denieth the Father and the Son." (I John 4:3)

While we are certainly not attempting here any defense of Catholicism, the Papacy has never done so! The Church of Rome has always confessed: "I believe in God, the Father Almighty, maker of heaven and earth, and in Jesus Christ, His only Son, our Lord." However false and impious the claims of the Papacy, it has always recognized its subordination to God, and the Pope's highest claim is that he is merely the "Vicar of God," and not that he is God Himself - which claim the Antichrist will most definitely make (at least after the "Abomination of Desolation"):

"... He (Antichrist) will exalt himself and magnify himself above every god." (Dan. 11:35-37)

"... So that he as God sitteth in the Temple of God showing himself that he is God." (II Thess. 2:4)

While there are many Protestant commentators who insist that the Papal System itself is described in Revelation 17, under the figure of a "Woman" arrayed in "purple and scarlet color," and decked with "gold and precious stones and pearls," it is also true that most of these same men admit that this Woman is not a picture of the Antichrist as such, but of the apostate Christian religious system which will appear in the Last Days and which will be supported by the Beast (i.e., the Antichrist) during the first half of the tribulation and prior to the "Abomination of Desolation. While there are many things in the history of the Church of Rome and in the conduct of her Popes that foreshadow the Antichrist, yet it is clear from these and other Scriptures that the Pope (and / or the Papal System) is not the Antichrist, and that these Scriptures can only be fulfilled in the person of some individual that is yet to come.

THE VIEW OF THE "LIBERAL" CHURCH: ANTI-CHRIST AS AN INSTITUTION OR PRINCIPLE OF EVIL

Finally, there have been the views of Antichrist as a "principle" or "institution" of evil. These are the views generally held by most theologians in the liberal Protestant Church and even in some segments of the so-

called neo-evangelical Church. Indeed, these views have proven to be especially attractive among Christian authors who wish to maintain some semblance of genuine Christian faith hand-in-hand with a liberal-critical view of Scripture origins - in other words, by those who deny the literal and inerrant interpretation of the Scriptures. But it is simply not possible for those who believe in a literal interpretation of the Scriptures to hold such views and at the same time to make them square with the Scriptural identification of Antichrist as a person (which a literal interpretation of the Scripture demands) rather than as a "principle" or "institution."

GETTING BACK TO ORIGINS: ANTICHRIST AS A PERSON - A "ROMAN PRINCE"

Today, most serious students of the Word accept the early church's view of the Antichrist. There is, as Dr. Robert Duncan Culver has suggested, almost universal agreement among them that:

"... a final **PERSONAL** Antichrist (of Gentile origins) shall appear near the close of the present age who will become master of the world and who will be destroyed by Christ at His coming."

It is thus their view that the Antichrist is to be the head of the last form of **GENTILE WORLD POWER** - depicted in Daniel's dream image (Daniel 2) as the feet of iron and clay - the final form of the fourth great Gentile empire: the Roman! **IT IS THIS FINAL FORM OF THE FOURTH GREAT GENTILE POWER (THE ROMAN) THAT IS KNOWN IN THE SCRIPTURES AS PROPHETIC BABYLON.** But the Scripture is even more specific. In Daniel chapter 7, this final form of Gentile world power is indicated as a head with ten horns (depicting a group of nations) over which an eleventh nation rises and eventually dominates. **IT IS AS LEADER OF THIS ELEVENTH NATION THAT ANTICHRIST IS KNOWN AS "KING OF BABYLON."**

THE DOCTRINE OF THE ANTICHRIST

The cornerstone of the Doctrine of the Antichrist is II Thessalonians 2:1-12. There are many other passages which speak of the Antichrist, but all are unintelligible in the absence of this key passage. Just as Revelation 20 is the cornerstone of the Doctrine of Resurrection and Judgment, so is II Thessalonians 2 the cornerstone of the Doctrine of the Antichrist.



In addition to II Thessalonians 2, there is another key test concerning the Antichrist hardly less important than II Thessalonians 2. It is Daniel 7:20, 24-25. These verses say that ten horns representing ten kingdoms (over which sit ten kings) shall arise in the final stage of the fourth **GENTILE** kingdom. These ten horns correspond to the ten toes of Daniel's dream image in Daniel 2 [Please also see Revelation 17:12-18]. A little (i.e., younger) horn shall arise from among the original ten and it is out from this horn that Antichrist shall appear. This little horn represents both the kingdom out from which the Antichrist shall come and the

Antichrist himself (in the same fashion that the original ten horns represent both kings and the kingdoms over which they sit). This is the common view.

Almost all interpreters - Jewish, evangelical, and men of about every kind of persuasion concerning "last things" (eschatology) agree that this is some kind of consummate Antichrist. Liberal Christianity and Reform Judaism think Daniel 7 was written at the time of Antiochus Epiphanes (about 165 B.C.) and that the author of Daniel supposed that Antiochus -- the sacrilegious, anti-Semitic tyrant of Syria (and descendent of the Greek general, Selussis, Alexander's brilliant lieutenant) who desecrated the Jewish Temple -- would be the final wicked oppressor before the coming of the Messiah's victorious Kingdom, with the Jews as his elite.

THESE SAME LIBERALS THINK THAT THE AUTHOR OF DANIEL WAS MISTAKEN. It should, therefore, come as no shock that most evangelicals (as well as most Orthodox Jews) reject the thesis that this passage has anything (directly) to do with Antiochus and that it relates directly and specifically to the Antichrist (the false messiah).

There are in addition to these two main passages many other passages which shed additional light on this man of sin: Ezekiel 28:1-10; Daniel 7:7-8; 21-23; 8:23-25; 9:26-27; 11:36-45; Revelation 13:1-10; 17:8-14. A synthesis of the truths contained in these verses reveal the following (please see J. Dwight Pentecost, *Things to Come*; Robert Duncan Culver, *Daniel and the Latter Days*; and Sir Robert Anderson, *The Coming Prince*). The synthesis is organized into three parts:

- **Part 1** lists those general characteristics which accrue to the Antichrist before he is manifested through the Treaty with Death and Hell by which he will guarantee Israel's security (in other words, those characteristics which will accrue to him before the beginning of the Seventieth Week).
- **Part 2** lists those characteristics which describe his personality during the first half of the Seventieth Week and before the Abomination of Desolation.
- **Part 3** lists those characteristics through which he is fully manifested as the Son of Perdition during the second half of the Seventieth Week - the "Great Tribulation:"

PART 1:

HIS APPEARANCE BEFORE THE TRIBULATION

- He will appear in the Latter Days.
- He will appear before the Day of the Lord - which is to say, before the Rapture and the Resurrection.
- His "SATANIC" manifestation (specifically, his manifestation as the Son of Perdition and the Beast) will (and is) being hindered by the Restrainer. It should be noted in this connection, however, that the SATANIC manifestation of the Antichrist will occur only after the Abomination of Desolation, which itself occurs midway through the Seventieth Week.
- He is a **GENTILE** (not a Jew) since he arises from the sea (Revelation 13:1) and since the sea depicts the **GENTILE** nations (Rev. 17:15), he must be of **GENTILE** origin (please see J. Dwight Pentecost, *Things to Come*, pg. 332). Robert Duncan Culver writes, "... the Scripture leads us to believe that ... the suffering of ... (God's people) will be brought about by a great, evil king of

a **GENTILE** nation ..." [Robert Duncan Culver, *Daniel and the Latter Days* (Chicago; Moody Press, 1954) pg. 85.]

- He will arise from within the boundaries of Western Civilization, since he is a ruler of the people (civilization) which destroyed Jerusalem. [(Daniel 9:26) - i.e., Graeco-Romanism or "The West."]
- More specifically, he will arise from an "eleventh" kingdom which is heir to the heritage of the original ten which themselves represent the final form of the fourth great **GENTILE** empire [cf. Dan. 7:7-8; 20-24; Rev. 17:9-11].
- He will be a political leader. (please see verses above plus Rev. 13:1 and 7:12)
- He will be a great communicator or orator and will be renowned for his persuasiveness; he will "look the part" of a great leader. (Dan. 7:8, 20; 8:23), he will practice subtlety and will have a secret love for "craft" - i.e., witchcraft. (Daniel 8:25)
- He will promote himself as Israel's champion. (Dan. 9:27)
- He will oppose the Northern Confederacy (a group of nations to the north of Israel which will array themselves against Israel in the "Latter Days") [Ezek. 38:1 - 39:25; (cf. Ezek. 38:15; 39:2) Dan. 11:40; Joel 2:1-27 (cf. Joel 2:20) Isa. 10:12; 30:31-33; 31:8-9].
- He will put his trust in military power. Dan. 11:38).
- He will oppose the "desire of women" (Dan. 11:37); while there are some who insist that this particular verse refers to the desire of women to "bring forth the Messiah," such an interpretation requires an inordinate amount of convoluted and seems to imply that women are more desirous of this than men. The more likely interpretation is the "common sense" one - i.e., that he will oppose the "modern-day" desire of women to seek "equality" with men in the world of business and politics.
- He will deceive God's people (i.e., the Christians) by posing as their champion (apparently by appearing to promote their religious desires and political programs) in the same fashion that he deceives Israel. [(Rev. 17:3; please also see Matt. 24:24].



PART 2:

HIS APPEARANCE DURING THE FIRST HALF OF THE SEVENTIETH WEEK AND BEFORE THE ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION

- As the King of Babylon (Isa. 14:4 - please see *Lange's Commentary on the Holy Scripture*, Vol. 6, pg. 186) he will make (or "cause to prevail") a defense pact with Israel which will be directed against the Northern Confederacy. (Dan. 9:27)
- The Northern Confederacy - together with a southern confederacy of nations) will make war with him in the Middle East (Ezek. 28:7; Dan. 11:40, 42) and in the ensuing conflict he will defeat

these confederations (Ezek. 37-39). [Please see chapter 6; please also see J. Dwight Pentecost, *Things to Come*, pgs. 326-340.]

- He will be opposed by three nations in the ten nation confederacy; he will eliminate the leadership in these countries and bring them under his power. (Dan. 7:8, 24)
- After his defeat of the Northern Confederacy and the establishment of his absolute power over the ten confederated nations, he will seek to extend his domination over the whole world. (Rev. 13:8)
- He will seek to promote the extension of his power through alliances (Dan. 8:24; Rev. 17:12) and through the promotion of "world peace." (Dan. 8:25)
- He will appear as the champion of the Harlot or Great Whore of Revelation 17 (which is to say, Apostate Christianity) who will everywhere promote him in his quest for world dominion (Rev. 17:3)
- He will appear as Israel's champion. (Dan. 9:27)



PART 3:

HIS APPEARANCE DURING THE SECOND HALF OF THE SEVENTIETH WEEK AND AFTER THE ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION

- He will receive a "deadly wound" from which he recovers. (Rev. 13:3; 17:10)
- He will become energized by Satan and will receive satanic power so that now he will be able to perform "wonders" and "miracles." (Ezek. 28:9-12; Rev. 13:4; Ezek. 28:2; Dan. 8:25)
- He will claim absolute power and will demand to be worshipped as a deity; all pretense to democratic forms of government will be abandoned. (II Thess. 2:3, 9-12; Rev. 13:8)
- He will reveal himself finally as the great adversary of the Church and Israel, and will seek to destroy both of them - those who "keep the commandments of God" (i.e., the Jews) and those "which have the testimony of Jesus" (i.e., the Christians) [Rev. 12:7, 9, 12b, 14, 17; 13:7; Dan. 7:21, 25; 8:24]. Robert Duncan Culver writes,

"The Antichrist will seek to destroy God's people, especially the Jews, thus bringing on the 'Great Tribulation'. [But] I [also] feel that when Jesus speaks of the 'elect' as coming into a great trial ... the sufferers of the trials are not [only] Jews as such. He quite obviously is [also] referring to His disciples, to Christian believers, who will be living on earth when, at last the sad events just before the end of the age



shall come." [See Matt. 24; Luke 21; Mark 13; please also see Sir Robert Anderson, *The Coming Prince*.]

- Because he will now demand to be worshipped, he will turn even on the "Apostate Church" (i.e., the "Harlot Church" as opposed to the real church) so that he may rule unhindered - indeed, it is axiomatic that those who seek absolute power will never share that power with anyone else; they inevitably destroy all competitors (real or only imagined) and the perceived closeness of any previous relationships has mattered little to these kinds of men as Ernst Roehm [Hitler's chief of the SA (*Sturmabteilung*)] found out to his horror with regard to Hitler on the infamous "Night of the Long Knives" in 1936. (Rev. 17:16-17)
- He will establish himself as the head of Satan's lawless system. (II Thess. 2:3)
- He will seek to change all laws and customs (as the Jacobins attempted to do after the French Revolution). [Dan. 7:25]

6-6-6

Finally, there is the question which arises from the Biblical reference to the number 6-6-6 (Rev. 13:18) in reference to the Beast (Antichrist). The number should more properly be read not as six hundred and sixty-six, but as a **SERIES OF THREE SIXES**: 6-6-6.

The Scripture makes it plain that this number has reference specifically to the name of the Beast - and Antichrist does not become the Beast until after the Abomination of Desolation which - again - occurs midway through the Tribulation period. Thus, the name to which the number 6-6-6 refers may not be actually appended to the Antichrist until after the Abomination of Desolation - rendering it useless for Christians to identify the Antichrist using this number until after the Abomination of Desolation. The practice of taking a new name is a common practice in "sacring" - a practice which many western monarchs used and one which the popes continue to practice, even today.

A NOTE OF CAUTION

One final note of caution. The author does **NOT** take a position with regard to the **ACTUAL IDENTITY** of the Antichrist and believes that it can be very dangerous to do so. The "acid" test as to the identity of the Antichrist concerns the Treaty with Death and Hell. Only one person, and one person only, will "cause this treaty to prevail" - and that one person is the Antichrist. The treaty will be in the form of a "Defense Pact" and will be directed against the Northern Confederacy. [Please see Sir Robert Anderson, *The Coming Prince* (London: Hodder & Stoughton, 1894) with introduction by President Grey of the Moody Bible Institute.]

CHAPTER XII

THE BEAST OF REVELATION 17

"And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird." (Rev. 18:2)

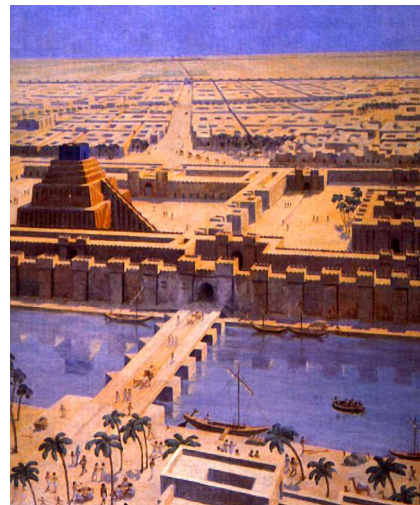
PART 1: IN SEARCH OF BABYLON

THE ANCIENT CITY

The ancient city of Babylon grew in size and importance from the days of Nimrod (Gen. 10:10) until it reached its greatest glory in the reign of Nebuchadnezzar (B.C. 604-562). As described by Herodotus, it was an exact square of some 15 miles on a side, or 60 miles around, and was surrounded by a brick wall 87 feet thick and 350 feet high, though probably that is a mistake, 100 feet being nearer the height. On the wall were 250 towers, and the top of the wall was wide enough to allow six chariots to drive abreast. Outside the wall was a vast moat surrounding the city, kept filled with water from the river Euphrates; and inside the wall, and not far from it, was another wall extending around the city.

Twenty-five magnificent avenues, 150 feet wide, ran across the city from north to south, and the same number crossed them at right angles from east to west, making 676 great squares, each nearly $\frac{3}{5}$ of a mile on a side. The city was divided into two equal parts by the river Euphrates, that flowed diagonally through it, and whose banks within the city were walled up and pierced with brazen gates with steps leading down to the river. At the ends of the main avenues, on each side of the city, were gates, whose leaves of brass shone as they opened or closed in the rising or setting sun like "leaves of flame."

The Euphrates within the city was spanned by a bridge, at each side of which was a palace, and these palaces were connected by a subterranean passageway underneath the bed of the river, in which at different points were located sumptuous banqueting rooms constructed entirely of brass. Near one of these palaces



Babylon

stood the "Tower of Bel" or Babel, consisting of eight towers, each 75 feet high, rising one upon the other, with an outside winding stairway to its summit, which towers with the chapel on the top, made a height of 660 feet. The chapel itself, which was lavishly furnished, could be reckoned in today's dollars as approaching \$1,000,000,000.00.



Hanging Gardens of Babylon

The "Hanging Gardens" of Babylon were renowned as one of the wonders of the Ancient World. These gardens were 400 feet square and were raised in terraces one above the other to a height of 350 feet. The topmost terrace was reached by staircases 19 feet wide. The top of each terrace was covered with large stones, on which was laid a bed of rushes, then a thick layer of asphalt, next, two courses of bricks cemented together, and finally, plates of lead to prevent leakage; it was then covered with earth and planted with shrubbery and large trees. The whole had the appearance from a distance of a forest covered mountain which was a very remarkable sight in the level plain of the

Euphrates.

Babylon was probably the most magnificent city the world has ever seen; "poor" Jerusalem was but a small, provincial and tacky village in comparison! Babylon the Great - that "Great City" (Rev. 18:2); Jerusalem, the "Holy City," (Rev. 21:10) - "small and compact" (Psalm 122:3).

BABYLON: A MYSTERY WRAPPED IN AN ENIGMA

And what about Prophetic Babylon? It will, of course, be every bit as magnificent!

Before we set out on our hunt for this great city, however, let's deal with one of the biggest stumbling blocks to any search: the thought that "Prophetic Babylon" has anything at all to do with the ancient city, or that the verses which deal with this prophecy (i.e., Revelation 17 and 18; Isaiah chapters 13 and 14, and Jeremiah chapters 50 and 51) were fulfilled when Cyrus took Babylon in B.C. 541.

As strange as it might seem, there are some who insist that the prophecies concerning "Babylon" (again - Revelation 17 and 18, Isaiah chapters 13 and 14, and Jeremiah chapters 50 and 51) were fulfilled when the Medo-Persians captured Babylon in 541 B.C. - and that these verses have, therefore, nothing to do with

events yet future. But there is too much in these chapters which were not accomplished when Cyrus took the ancient city of Babylon. For example, both the prophecies of Jeremiah and Isaiah, like those of the Revelation, indicate that Babylon [Prophetic Babylon] is to be destroyed suddenly and catastrophically - "in one short hour,"

NEVER TO BE INHABITED AGAIN!!

But when Cyrus took the city in B.C. 541, he took it so quietly and with such little commotion that some of the inhabitants did not know until the third day that Belshazzar had been slain and the city taken.

Some years later, it revolted against Darius Hystaspis, and in B.C. 478 Xerxes took the city and plundered it. But he did not



Babylon destroyed – never to be inhabited again

destroy it. In B.C. 331, Alexander the Great prepared to lay siege to the once again thriving and powerful city, but the citizens threw open the gates and received him with acclamation. During the subsequent wars of his generals, Babylon suffered much and was finally brought under the power of Seleucis. In B.C. 293 Seleucis founded Seleucia in the neighborhood of Babylon, and the rival city gradually drew off a large portion of Babylon's inhabitants so that by A.D. 15, Strabo spoke of the city as being largely deserted.

Nevertheless, there still existed within the city a large Jewish population left over from the "Captivity." Indeed, we find that the Apostle Peter wrote his First Epistle from Babylon in A.D. 60 (I Peter 5:13). About the middle of the Fifth Century, Theodoret spoke of Babylon as being inhabited only by Jews who still had three Jewish schools or "Yeshivas" there. In the last year of the same century, the Talmud was issued from Babylon and accepted as authoritative by Jews throughout the world.

In A.D. 917 Ibu Hankel mentioned Babylon as still being in existence, and by A.D. 1100 it had again grown into a city of some importance. Shortly afterwards, it was enlarged, fortified and renamed "Hillah." In 1898, Hillah contained about 10,000 inhabitants and was surrounded by fertile lands and beautiful groves which stretched along the Euphrates River.

During this entire period (B.C. 541 - A.D. 2011) it could never be said that "neither shall the Arabian pitch tent there, neither shall shepherds make their fold there" (Isa. 13:20). Nor could it be said of Babylon - "Her cities are a desolation, a dry land, and a wilderness, a land **WHEREIN NO MAN DWELLETH**, neither doeth any son of man pass thereby." (Jer. 51:43). Nor could it be said, "... and they shall not take of thee a stone for a corner, nor a stone for foundations, but thou shalt be desolate forever, saith the Lord" (Jer. 51:26), for many towns and cities have been built from the ruins of Babylon - Seleucia by the Greeks, Ctesiphon by the Parthians, Al Maiden by the Persians, and Kufa by the Caliphs. Indeed, in Baghdad today (the capital of modern Iraq) Babylonian stamped bricks may be frequently noticed.



US troops occupy Hillel, the ancient city of Babylon

But Isaiah is still more specific, for he locates the time when his prophecy will be fulfilled. He calls it the "DAY OF THE LORD" (Isa. 13:9) - that is to say, at the end of the "Great Tribulation." Moreover, he says that when Babylon is destroyed, "The stars of heaven and the constellations thereof shall not give their light; the sun shall be darkened in his going forth, and the moon shall not cause her light to shine" (Isa. 13:19; see also Luke 21:25-27). Surely nothing like this happened when Cyrus took Babylon in B.C. 541.

In the description of the destruction of the city of Babylon given in Revelation 18, we are told that Babylon's destruction will be accomplished in "**ONE HOUR**" (verse 19). Again - this is certainly not the description of events which surrounded Cyrus's taking of the city. In addition, we are told in the same chapter that she is to be destroyed by fire (Rev. 18:8-9, 18) and this is in exact harmony with the words of Isaiah 13:19 and Jeremiah 50:40. Moreover, in Revelation 16:17-19, we are told that an earthquake will shake the city at the time of its destruction. No such earthquake ever shook the city when Cyrus took it in B.C. 541.

Obviously, then, the Babylon that is described in Isaiah 13 and 14, Jeremiah 50 and 51 and in the Revelation is not the ancient city of Babylon, but some great "latter-day" nation which by means of its enormous military and economic might will establish its ascendancy over the world.

Lastly, there are those who insist that the prophecies which deal with Babylon refer to modern-day Iraq. Indeed, prior to the Gulf War, countless numbers of fundamentalist Christians could be found who were predicting doom for America in its confrontation with Iraq over Kuwait. Such thinking, of course, was moronic - U.S. forces sliced through Iraq like a knife through butter; and it happened again when General Franks troops captured Baghdad in 2003 - revealing in the process more about the real identity of Prophetic Babylon than most American Christians were (are) prepared to admit.



US Abrams Main Battle Tanks enter Baghdad

BABYLON THE GREAT

In Scripture, Babylon represents the kingdom and glory of Satan (Rev. 17:1-8); Jerusalem is the city of the Living God (Rev. 12:22).

Satan is called the "Prince of this World" (John 12:31; 14:30; 16:11) over which sits Babylon, the city of Satan. What is meant by the term "world?" **As we have discussed in previous sections of this book**, the word "world" is the translation of the Greek word *Kosmos*, which means an harmonious order or arrangement, and it is used in three ways in the New Testament:

- **First**, it means the **MATERIAL UNIVERSE** (Acts 17:14; Matt. 13:35; John 1:10; Mark 16:15).
- **Second**, it means -
 1. **THE INHABITANTS OF THE WORLD** as whole (John 1:10; 3:16; 12:19; 17:21);
 2. **THE WHOLE RACE OF MAN ALIENATED FROM GOD AND HOSTILE TO THE CAUSE OF CHRIST** (Heb. 11:38; John 14:17; 14:27; 15:18); this is but an extension of (a) above and is the meaning we are most concerned with here.
- **Third**, it means the whole circle of **WORLDLY** goods, endowments, riches, advantages, pleasures, which though hollow and fleeting, stir our desires and seduce us from God, so that they are obstacles to the cause of Christ (I John 3:17; Matt. 16:26; I Cor 2:12; 3:19, 7:31; Titus 2:12; II Peter 1:4; 2:20; I John 2:15-17; James 1:27). It is the world of our split level homes, two cars, good careers, good educations, bank accounts, vacations, etc. It is when these pleasures and even so-called necessities of life "possess our hearts" and crowd out our commitment to the Lord and to His people that they have in reality become part of the kosmos.

Moreover, the word *Kosmos*, taken in conjunction with the three meanings described above, implies that behind all this there is a mind - the Prince of this World - which gives order and arrangement to it all. John says:

"The whole **KOSMOS** [as described above] lieth in the evil one." (John 5:19)

He is the **KOSMOKRATER** or world-ruler - a word which, however, appears only once, and is used in the plural of his lieutenants: "the **WORLD RULERS OF THIS DARKNESS**" (Eph. 6:12).

Politics, education, literature, science, art, law, commerce, music, our homes, careers, etc. - together they constitute the "*kosmos*." Subtract them, and the world as a coherent system ceases to exist. It is the development of these things that constitutes history. The question is, which direction is history tending? What is its ultimate goal? - **BABYLON THE GREAT**, the masterpiece of Satan!! That is the direction of the world's advance - the kingdom of Antichrist, and we are only seconds away as God's prophetic clock winds down.



John Martin - *Le Pandemonium*
Satan brooding over his masterpiece

The world (*kosmos*) is Satan's grand creation and he has directed all his strength and ingenuity into causing it to flourish. To what end? To capture man's allegiance and draw him to himself. He has one object - to establish his own dominion in human hearts worldwide! Babylon is the centerpiece, the pinnacle of his great design.

COMMERCE

Commerce is at the heart of Babylon! It is at the heart of Satan:

"The word of the Lord came again unto me, saying...
 "Now, thou son of man, take up a lamentation for Tyrus [Satan],
 "And say unto Tyrus, O thou that art situate (situated) at the entry ["midst" - is the more accurate translation] of the sea, which art a **MERCHANT** of the people ... [the traders of the earth] have made thy beauty perfect.
 "Tarshish [the trading nations] ... traded in thy fairs.
 "Son of man, say unto the Prince of Tyrus, Thus saith the Lord God, because thine heart is lifted up and thou hast said, I am a god, I sit in the seat of God **IN THE MIDST OF THE SEAS** ...
 "By thy great wisdom and by thy traffic [commerce] thou hast increased thy riches, and thine heart is lifted up because of thy riches:
 "By the multitudes of thy merchandise they have filled ... thee with violence, and thou hast sinned: ...
 "Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries by ... the iniquity of

KING OF TYRUS

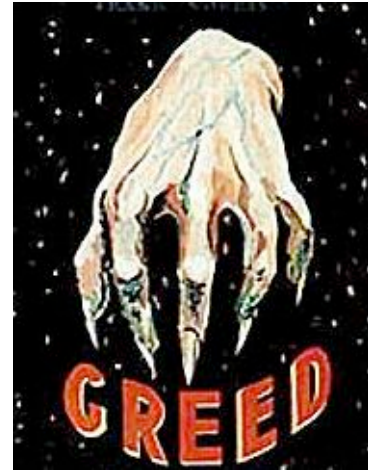
Concerning the identity of this personage (i.e., the "King of Tyrus"), almost all evangelical scholars are in agreement that what the Scriptures have in mind here is Satan. Pember writes: "... the lamentation upon the King of Tyrus ... cannot be applied to any mortal ... To adopt the too common plan of explaining these (verses) away as mere figures of speech, is to trifle with the Word of God. We have no right to use so dishonest a method of extricating ourselves from difficulties, a method which enables men to deduce almost any desired meaning from a passage, and makes the whole Bible an enigma instead of a disclosure ... [Please see Pember, *Earth's Earliest Ages* (pgs. 45-49) for a detailed treatment as to the identification of Tyrus as Satan (antichrist)].

thy traffic [commerce] ..." (Ezek. 27:1-3, 12; 28:2, 5, 16, 18).

At the heart of commerce is money. Money is addictive and all too often leads the possessor of it into unrighteousness. The Word of God speaks of "the mammon of unrighteousness" (Luke 16:9). The corruption which results from the "love of money" and the things which it can buy, invariably leads away from God.

Paul writes:

"They that desire to be rich fall into a temptation and snare and many foolish and hurtful lusts, such as drown men in destruction and perdition. "For the love of money is the root of all evil: which some reaching after, have been led astray ... and have pierced themselves through with many sorrows." (I Tim. 6:9-10)



THE TIMES OF THE GENTILES

With all this in mind, let's now begin our quest in earnest. We will use as our principle guide the best evangelical review on the subject - *Things To Come*, by J. Dwight Pentecost of Dallas Theological Seminary. In doing so, we will gradually paint a picture of "Prophetic Babylon" and let the reader draw his own conclusions. We will begin with a discussion and explanation of the "Times of the Gentiles." Why? Because Prophetic Babylon is to be the culmination of the full development of Gentile world power - its final and complete fulfillment.

In Luke 21:24, Jesus said:

"Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled." (Luke 21:24)

This time period - the "Times of the Gentiles" - is one of the most important time periods in the prophetic Scriptures. It is to be a period of time in which Jerusalem is to be under the dominion of Gentile world power. This period began with the Babylonian captivity when Jerusalem fell into the hands of the Gentiles, and as J. Dwight Pentecost writes:

"... it has continued unto the present time and well continue through the Tribulation Period, in which era the Gentile powers will be judged. The dominion of the Gentiles [will] end at the second advent of Messiah to the earth."

In other words, the "Times of the Gentiles" will end at the second coming of the Lord in glory. While there are some who contend that the "Times of the Gentiles" ended in 1967 when Israel retook the City of Jerusalem, most evangelicals reject this thesis because the present Israeli occupation of Jerusalem is destined to be cut short when the Gentiles will once again wrest the city from the Jews for 1,260 days (3-1/2 years) shortly after the Abomination of Desolation during the Tribulation. (Rev. 11:2)

Scofield defines the time limits thus:

"The times of the Gentiles is that long period beginning with Babylonian captivity of Judah under Nebuchadnezzar, and [which is] to be brought to an end by the destruction of Gentile world power ... [at] the coming of the Lord in glory." (Dan. 2:34, 35, 44 and Rev. 19:11, 21)³

Scofield, then agrees with Pentecost - the "Times of the Gentiles" will end at the Second Coming. The fullest description of the period is given to us in Daniel. Edward Dennett writes:

"What we have in Daniel is ... the course and character of Gentile power, from the destruction of Jerusalem [under Nebuchadnezzar] on to the appearing of Christ, together with the position of the

remnant and the sufferings of the Jewish people, while the Gentiles possess the dominion, until at last God, in His faithfulness in pursuance of His purposes, interposes, and for His own glory, works for the rescue of His elect **EARTHLY** people (i.e., the Jews)."

THE GREAT IMAGE

The first prophetic outline of the course of this period - the "Times of the Gentiles" - is given in Daniel 2, where, through the medium of the "great image," the successive empires that would exercise Gentile dominion over Jerusalem are outlined. The term "empire" as used here is better understood as "civilization;" the English word "empire" implies mere political or military unity, while Daniel has in mind a unity of far greater dimensions than what the word "empire" denotes - a unity which embraces a common culture, law, science, social structure, religion, etc., and is best expressed in the English language by the word "civilization."

The Book of Daniel reads:

"And in the second year of the reign of Nebuchadnezzar, Nebuchadnezzar dreamed dreams, wherewith his spirit was troubled, and his sleep brake from him.

"Then the king commanded to call the magicians, and the astrologers, and the sorcerers, and the Chaldeans, for to show the king his dreams. So they came and stood before the king.

"And the king said unto them, I have dreamed a dream, and my spirit was troubled to know the dream.

"The king answered and said to the Chaldeans, The thing is gone from me: if ye will not make known unto me the dream, with the interpretation thereof, ye shall be cut in pieces, and your houses shall be made a dunghill.

"The Chaldeans answered before the king, and said, There is not a man upon the earth that can show the king's matter: therefore there is no king, lord, nor ruler, that asked such things of any magician, or astrologer, or Chaldean.

"Then Daniel answered with counsel and wisdom to Arioch the captain of the king's guard, which was gone forth to slay the wise men of Babylon:

"Then was the secret revealed unto Daniel in a night vision. Then Daniel blessed the God of heaven.

"Daniel answered and said, Blessed be the name of God for ever and ever: for wisdom and might are his:

"And he changeth the times and the seasons: he removeth kings, and setteth up kings: he giveth wisdom unto the wise, and knowledge to them that know understanding:

"He revealeth the deep and secret things: he knoweth what is in the darkness, and the light dwelleth with him.

"The king answered and said to Daniel, whose name was Belteshazzar, Art thou able to make known unto me the dream which I have seen, and the interpretation thereof?

"Daniel answered in the presence of the king, and said, The secret which the king hath demanded cannot the wise men, the astrologers, the magicians, the soothsayers, show unto the king;



"But there is a God in heaven that revealeth secrets, and maketh known to the king Nebuchadnezzar what shall be in the latter days. Thy dream, and the visions of thy head upon thy bed, are these;
"Thou, O king, sawest, and behold a great image. This great image, whose brightness was excellent, stood before thee; and the form thereof was terrible.
"This image's head was of fine gold, his breast and his arms of silver, his belly and his thighs of brass,
"His legs of iron, his feet part of iron and part of clay.
"Thou sawest till that a stone was cut out without hands, which smote the image upon his feet that were of iron and clay, and brake them to pieces.
"Then was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold, broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshingfloors; and the wind carried them away, that no place was found for them: and the stone that smote the image became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth.
"This is the dream; and we will tell the interpretation thereof before the king.
"Thou, O king, art a king of kings: for the God of heaven hath given thee a kingdom, power, and strength, and glory." And wheresoever the children of men dwell, the beasts of the field and the fowls of the heaven hath he given into thine hand, and hath made thee ruler over them all. Thou art this head of gold.
"And after thee shall arise another kingdom inferior to thee, and another third kingdom of brass, which shall bear rule over all the earth.
"And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron: forasmuch as iron breaketh in pieces and subdueth all things: and as iron that breaketh all these, shall it break in pieces and bruise.
"And whereas thou sawest the feet and toes, part of potters' clay, and part of iron, the kingdom (i.e., the fourth kingdom, the kingdom of iron) shall be divided; but there shall be in it of the strength of the iron, forasmuch as thou sawest the iron mixed with miry clay.
"And as the toes of the feet were part of iron, and part of clay, so the kingdom shall be partly strong, and partly broken.
"And whereas thou sawest iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men: but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay.
"And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever.
"Forasmuch as thou sawest that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it brake in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver, and the gold; the great God hath made known to the king what shall come to pass hereafter: and the dream is certain, and the interpretation thereof sure." (Dan. 2:1-3, 5, 10, 14, 19-22, 26-28, 31-45)

Lewis Sperry Chaffer, founder and first President of Dallas Theological Seminary, elaborates on these verses:

"Five world dominions in their succession are foreseen ... **FOUR** of these are represented by the portions of the image and the fifth as that which will arise upon the wreckage of the four ... [after] the judgments of God fall The first, [Ancient] Babylon as the head of gold, was already at the zenith of its powers when Daniel gave his interpretation. The second was Media-Persia in which kingdom also Daniel lived to share. The third dominion was Greece under Alexander, and the fourth was Rome, which was in its fullest development in the day that Christ was here on earth. It is this iron kingdom which merges in its final form [still as the fourth great Gentile world kingdom] into feet of iron and clay. It is in this time of the feet of iron and clay [of the fourth world kingdom] that the "Smiting Stone" [as the Fifth Kingdom - the Kingdom of Christ] strikes [and shatters the image - that is to say, Gentile world power]."

THE FOUR WILD BEASTS

The second prophetic outline of the course of this period is given in Daniel 7. Whereas in Daniel 2, the course of world empire is viewed from man's perspective, in Daniel 7, the same course of world empire is viewed from the Divine viewpoint, where the Gentile empires are seen not as an attractive image, but as

four wild, voracious beasts, which devour and destroy all before them and, consequently, are worthy of judgment.



The four wild beasts

The Book of Daniel reads:

"In the first year of Belshazzar king of Babylon Daniel had a dream and visions of his head upon his bed: then he wrote the dream, and told the sum of the matters.

"Daniel spake and said, I saw in my vision by night, and, behold, the four winds of the heaven strove upon the great sea.

"And four great beasts came up from the sea, diverse one from another.

"The first was like a lion, and had eagle's wings: I beheld till the wings thereof were plucked, and it was lifted up from the earth, and made stand upon the feet as a man, and a man's heart was given to it.

"And behold another beast, a second, like to a bear, and it raised up itself on one side, and it had three ribs in the mouth of it between the teeth of it: and they said thus unto it, Arise, devour much flesh.

"After this I beheld, and lo another, like a leopard, which had upon the back of it four wings of a fowl; the beast had also four heads; and dominion was given to it.

"After this I saw in the night visions, and behold a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly; and it had great iron teeth: it devoured and brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with the feet of it: and it was diverse from all the beasts that were before it; and it had ten horns.

"I considered the horns, and, behold, there came up among them another little horn, before whom there were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots: and, behold, in this horn were eyes like the eyes of man, and a mouth speaking great things.

"I beheld till the thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of days did sit, whose garment was white as snow, and the hair of his head like the pure wool: his throne was like the fiery flame, and his wheels as burning fire.

"A fiery stream issued and came forth from before him: thousand thousands ministered unto him, and ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him: the judgment was set, and the books were opened.

"I beheld then because of the voice of the great words which the horn spake: I beheld even till the beast was slain, and his body destroyed, and given to the burning flame.

"As concerning the rest of the beasts, they had their dominion taken away: yet their lives were prolonged for a season and time.

"I saw in the night visions, and, behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him.

"And there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him: his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed.

"I Daniel was grieved in my spirit in the midst of my body, and the visions of my head troubled me. I came near unto one of them that stood by, and asked him the truth of all this. So he told me, and made me know the interpretation of the things.

"These great beasts, which are four, are four kings, which shall arise out of the earth.

"But the saints of the most High shall take the kingdom, and possess the kingdom for ever, even for ever and ever.

"Then I would know the truth of the fourth beast, which was diverse from all the others, exceeding dreadful, whose teeth were of iron, and his nails of brass; which devoured, brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with his feet;

"And of the ten horns that were in his head, and of the other which came up, and before whom three fell; even of that horn that had eyes, and a mouth that spake very great things, whose look was more stout than his fellows.

"I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them;

"Until the Ancient of days came, and judgment was given to the saints of the most High; and the time came that the saints possessed the kingdom.

"Thus he said, The fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon earth, which shall be diverse from all kingdoms, and shall devour the whole earth, and shall tread it down, and break it in pieces.

"And the ten horns out of this kingdom are ten kings that shall arise: and another shall rise after them; and he shall be diverse from the first, and he shall subdue three kings.

"And he shall speak great words against the most High, and shall wear out the saints of the most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time.

"But the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy it unto the end.

"And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey him.

"Hitherto is the end of the matter. As for me Daniel, my cogitations much troubled me, and my countenance changed in me: but I kept the matter in my heart. (Daniel 7:1-28)

Arno C. Gaebelein explains this passage as follows:

"The gold in the dream image, and the first beast represent the [ancient] Babylonian empire. In the beginning it was a lion with wings, but they were plucked out; it lost its strength and though it had a man's heart it was a beast still ... The bear stands for the Medo-Persian empire, the empire seen as of silver, the chest and arms. One paw is lifted up, because the Persian element was stronger than that of the Medes. The bear had three ribs in its mouth because Susiana, Lydia, and Asia Minor had been conquered by this power. The leopard, with four wings and four heads, is the picture of the Graeco-Macedonian empire, corresponding to the thighs of brass in the image of Nebuchadnezzar. The four wings denote swiftness, the four heads the partition of this empire into the kingdom of Syria, Egypt, Macedonia, and Asia Minor ... we call attention to the fact that in the selection of beasts to represent these world powers who domineer the "Times of the Gentile," God tells us that their moral character is **BEASTLY**. The lion devours, the bear crushes, the leopard springs upon its prey ... then we have the fourth world empire, the iron one, **ROME**. It is described in a way as none of the others are. It is dreadful, terrible, exceeding strong; it has great iron teeth. It devours, breaks in pieces and stamps down. It has ten horns [which correspond to the ten - toes of the image] **AND IN THEIR MIDST RISES UP A LITTLE ["YOUNGER" OR "HINDERMOST"] HORN ...**



The little or "younger" horn

Thus, the Scriptures reveal that from the time of Daniel until the time when Jerusalem shall be given freedom (**ON A PERMANENT BASIS**) from Gentile dominion at the second advent of Christ, there will be four great empires which shall rise and fall. The period of Tribulation (the last seven years of the Times of the Gentiles) will be the final epoch in the development of this period.

THE FINAL FORM OF GENTILE WORLD POWER: WESTERN CIVILIZATION

There are several important passages of Scripture which have an important bearing on the question of the final form of Gentile world power. In the descriptions of the "Times of the Gentiles" given in Daniel 2, the prophet deals in a general way with the four successive empires which will in their turn possess world power. But he becomes quite specific with the end of that power. In Daniel 2:40-44, the final form of Gentile power is described. Pentecost writes:

"... the final form of Gentile power [is as follows]:

- "The ... form of ... [this power] is an outgrowth from and final development of the fourth great empire, the **ROMAN**. This final form is represented by the ten toes [and the ten horns], (Dan. 2:41-42, see also Dan. 7.)
- "The final form of this power is marked by division ...
- "The final form of Gentile power is marked by a federation [of that power], since the mixture of the iron and clay [in the feet of the image] is an unnatural one, it would seem to suggest that the federation is not brought about by force, else this condition would not continue. But it is brought about by mutual consent, so that each member in the alliance retains its own identity. This is in harmony with Revelation 17:13."

Now we come to a very important point. Four great world empires [civilizations] of Gentile origin are spoken of by the Prophet Daniel - four and only four! - the ten toes of the image being only the final form



of the last great empire - **ROME**. There is no interruption here in the continuity of the fourth great empire and the imagery used does not picture the death of the fourth empire and its later resurrection - but it speaks of one continuous empire up through time from Christ to the present.

Yet, it is commonly assumed by the layman that Rome collapsed in 476 A.D. - never to rise again. But Roman civilization itself never collapsed and has continued to this day. It is what we today call "Western Civilization" - a term familiar to any college student - and a term which denotes European Civilization, that is to say, that civilization which derives its force and origin from Ancient Rome. Thus, while it is true that the **POLITICAL** unity of "the one-world that was Rome's" - of

WESTERN CIVILIZATION

The outline of the history of the Western World is best understood as a civilization which, while having lost its political unity in 476 A.D., has continued as a dynamic, powerful, and culturally unified civilization to this very day.

Roman Civilization - was lost in 476 A.D., the civilization of Rome itself has survived to become the dominant civilization of this planet - directly holding sway over Western Europe and North America and holding limited sway over Central and South America, Africa, and to a lesser extent, even Asia.

In this connection, it is important to note that Western Civilization is to be differentiated from the native civilization of China, Japan, India, Africa, and Central and South America. These are civilizations of totally different origins and it is these very civilizations that Western Civilization has come to dominate to a greater or lesser degree, directly or indirectly. The science, technology, literature, law, culture, religion, and languages (especially English, and to a lesser extent, Spanish and French) of this great civilization dominates the earth as no prior civilization has ever done, and all this in spite of the fact that there has been no political unity within the confines of this civilization for some 1500 years. The political unity of this great civilization has remained profoundly elusive and ethereal - always just out of reach of those who so ardently sought it - Charlemagne, Louis XIV, Napoleon, and even Hitler. Each failed in his turn. **AND THIS IS EXACTLY THE CONDITION OF THINGS PROPHESED BY DANIEL.** Thus, the outline of the history of the Western World is best understood as a civilization which, while having lost its political unity in 476 A.D., has continued as a dynamic, powerful, and culturally unified civilization to this very day.

This is the view of Pentecost. Pentecost writes:

"It would seem best to view this Roman Empire as a continuous development from its original or initial form at the time of Christ until its final form at the second coming of Christ."

G.N.H. Peters echoes the view of Pentecost:

"It may seem a hard saying, but it is one which the facts fully bear out ... that the one key to the whole subject [of the history of Western Civilization] - without which medieval history is simply an unintelligible chaos - is no other than **THE CONTINUED EXISTENCE OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE** [in the form of Western Civilization]. As long as people are taught that the Empire came to an end in the year 476, a true understanding of the next one thousand years becomes utterly impossible. No one can understand either the politics or the literature of that whole period unless he constantly bears in mind that in the ideas of the men of those days, the Roman Empire, the Empire of Augustus, Constantine, and Justinian, was not a thing of the past, but a thing of the present."



The Church The State

IN THIS CONNECTION, IT IS EXTREMELY IMPORTANT TO UNDERSTAND THAT THE CIVILIZATION FINALLY BEQUEATHED BY ANCIENT ROME TO THE WESTERN WORLD WAS NOT THE "PAGAN" ROME OF CICERO, NERO, AND CALIGULA, BUT THE "CHRISTIAN" ROME OF CONSTANTINE - A ROME THAT INCLUDED AS AN INTEGRAL PART OF IT AN APOSTATE FORM OF CHRISTIANITY IN THE FIGURE OF THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH.

The touchstone to Roman Catholicism was the integration of the Church with the Roman State. This is the antithesis to all that the Church was meant to be - a **HEAVENLY** reality, not something of the earth, and most especially, not something of **GENTILE** Rome. The basis of all evangelical theology, on the other hand, is the rejection of Roman Catholicism's synthesis of the Church with the **GENTILE** State and the acceptance of Israel's rightful heritage on the earth - the acceptance of the biblical reality that there is only one nation God has ever covenanted with - and that nation is Israel.

IN THIS CONNECTION, IT IS EXTREMELY IMPORTANT TO UNDERSTAND THAT THE CIVILIZATION FINALLY BEQUEATHED BY ANCIENT ROME TO THE WESTERN WORLD WAS NOT THE "PAGAN" ROME OF CICERO, NERO, AND CALIGULA, BUT THE "CHRISTIAN" ROME OF CONSTANTINE - A ROME THAT INCLUDED AS AN INTEGRAL PART OF IT AN APOSTATE FORM OF CHRISTIANITY IN THE FIGURE OF THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH.

It would seem, then, that the problem in acquiring a proper perspective of the fourth great Gentile power is not so much in seeing this empire as a **REVIVAL** of the "Roman Empire" as it is in seeing the recasting of the **CONTINUING** sphere of this same empire into its final ten-toed or ten-horned configuration.

THE GEOGRAPHIC EXTENT OF PROPHETIC BABYLON

But what of the extent of this empire? What are its proper prophetic boundaries? It has commonly been held that the last stage of the Roman Empire (its ten-toed configuration), will coincide with the boundaries of Caesar's Empire - that of ancient Rome. But, once again, this is an argument based on a misunderstanding conveyed in the English word "empire," which denotes a political, geographic or military unity, rather than in the English word, "civilization," which is the meaning properly conveyed in the prophecy. Concerning the boundaries of the "New Roman Empire," Pentecost writes:

"There seems to be good reason for holding the view that the final future boundaries of the last Gentile world power need not coincide with the former boundaries, **BUT, IN FACT, MAY EXCEED THEM GREATLY** ... Scripture seems to indicate an empire of even greater dimensions than [of ancient Rome]: "... power was given him [Antichrist as head of this final form of the fourth great Gentile empire] over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations" (Rev. 13:7) ... **THE RELATIONSHIP EXISTING BETWEEN THE "BEAST" AND THE "WOMAN" (Rev. 17) SUGGESTS THE SCOPE OF THIS EMPIRE.**"

Pentecost then quotes F.C. Jennings as follows:

"... the Scriptures tell us unequivocally that the world empire that Rome possessed [speaking here of the political unity that the Roman civilization had at one time held] will again be restored to her, and my purpose is to gather such light as it has pleased the God of all grace to give in His word, as to the extent and limitations of that revived ... [political unity]. The boundaries of the [new] empire have been assumed to have ... the same geographical boundaries ... [as the old empire]. **THIS I TAKE TO HAVE BEEN A FUNDAMENTAL MISTAKE**, for it ignores completely the introduction of another ... basic and characteristic element, into the earth. Mere geographic boundaries are but little in accord with the peculiarly spiritual character of this era; the introduction of a distinct spiritual element, demands even for earthly boundaries, a spiritual measurement ...

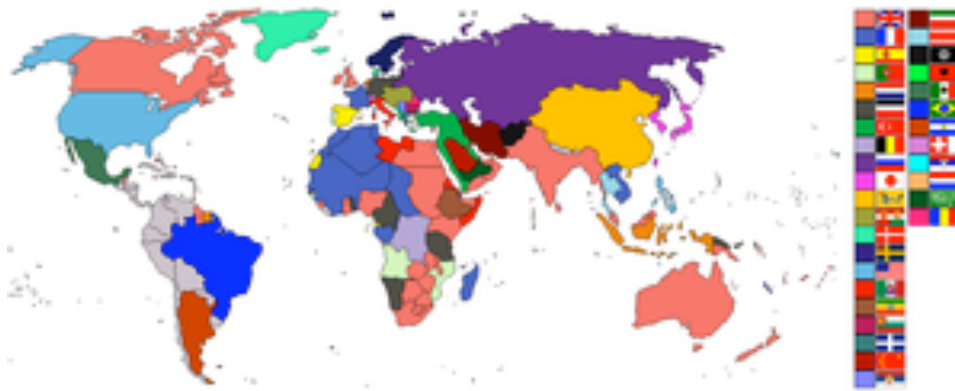
"Turning then to the seventeenth chapter of the Book of Revelation, we see the whole stage filled with two personalities only: a "Beast" and a "Woman" ... these two ... picture ... the future prophetic earth ... there can be no argument or discussion as to this speaking of both the **CIVIL** [political, economic, and military] and **ECCLESIASTICAL** [religious] conditions that will rule and characterize that part of the earth that is within the limits or boundaries of Prophecy. The whole of it will be filled with what shall answer to this "Beast" and this "Woman." The two [the "Beast (which answers to the Civil Power) and the "Woman" (which answers to the Religious Power) are thus indissolubly co-related, and tell us to what end all [this is] trending; and that is that there will eventually be a one World-Empire and a one World-Church, and these will cover the whole of what is now called **CHRISTENDOM**; the one Empire supporting the one Church, [as] the "Beast" in the picture supports the "Woman," and the "Woman" is supported by the "Beast" ...

"... we are compelled to see that the boundaries of the Empire will be the boundaries of the professed, but **UTTERLY APOSTATE CHRISTIANITY**; and vice-versa, the boundaries of the apostate church will be exactly co-terminus with those of the Empire. But that being assured and clear, it follows beyond all question, that the revived Roman Empire will include ... every country everywhere in which there is any claim to apostate Christianity at all, **AND SO WILL INCLUDE NORTH AMERICA** ..."

Prophetic Babylon will thus be the indissoluble union of the Apostate Church (the Woman) with **GENTILE** world power (the Beast) as pictured in Revelation 17 in the description of a woman drunk with the blood of the saints and riding on the back of a beast. The union of the Church with **GENTILE** world power

was formalized in the union of the old Roman Empire with the Roman Catholic Church under Constantine at the beginning of the fourth Century A.D. It was carried over into the Medieval World and has characterized the civilization of the West to this very day, spreading even into the Protestant world. This union of civil and religious authority will characterize the final form of the Fourth Wild Beast - known in the Scripture as "Prophetic Babylon." The borders of the "Revived Roman Empire," then, will reach out and encompass all of Christendom.

But we must never forget that the roots of this vast latter-day empire rest in Europe. Indeed, it is extremely important to bear in mind that the nations of Europe are exactly those nations which were chiefly responsible during the last five centuries for spreading Western Civilization through their system of colonization to the four corners of the world - to North and South America, Africa, the Middle East, India, and even parts of Asia.



The fact is, eighty years ago, the European nations controlled through their system of colonies almost one-half of the land surface of the globe! And while today they have lost their colonial empires, the civilization they introduced to these areas still survives and in many instances is thriving and prospering more than in the original "mother countries" [e.g., Canada, South Africa, Australia, New Zealand, etc.]. The Beast of Daniel (Chapter 7) is thus represented by a body - which stands for the full extent of Western Civilization - and the head with ten horns - which stand for those countries of Europe chiefly responsible for carrying this civilization to the world.

The fact is, eighty years ago, the European nations controlled through their system of colonies almost one-half of the land surface of the globe! And while today they have lost their colonial empires, the civilization they introduced to these areas still survives and in many instances is thriving and prospering more than in the original "mother countries" (e.g., Canada, South Africa, Australia, New Zealand, etc.). The Beast of Daniel (Chapter 7) is thus represented by a body - which stands for the full extent of Western Civilization - and the head with ten horns - which stand for those countries of Europe chiefly responsible for carrying this civilization to the world - namely, Britain, France Spain, the

THE LEAGUE OF DEMOCRACIES

There also seems to be room to believe that a New Confederation organized under the authority of the US could be created by the United States consisting of ten nations that would take the place of NATO, the EU and even the UN - all of which are rapidly losing their legitimacy. Indeed, Senator John McCain discussed the possibility of forming just such a new coalition when he ran for the presidency in 2008; he called it, "The League of Democracies." Concerning this matter Robert Dreyfuss wrote at the time:

"To combat what he [McCain] likes to call 'the transcendent challenge [of] radical Islamic extremism', McCain is drawing up plans for a new global institution that he calls the League of Democracies that can bypass the balky United Nations ... and support a revived US unilateralism that will engage in 'rogue state rollback' against his version of the 'axis of evil'. In all, it's a new apparatus designed to carry the 'war on terror' deep into the twenty-first century."

TIME WILL TELL.

Netherlands, Belgium, Portugal, Italy, Germany, Denmark and Sweden.

THE "YOUNGER HORN"

Now, something new is added to the picture of the Beast which represents the final form of the fourth great **GENTILE** world power - **AN ELEVENTH HORN!!!** Pentecost writes:

"From among these ten kingdoms there will arise ... [another which] will have control over the whole dominion ..."

In other words, there shall arise an eleventh nation out from the original ten (an offspring of the ten) which will grow up and eventually dominate the whole of Western Civilization. And it is out from this eleventh nation that the Antichrist shall come [please see Daniel 7]. This eleventh horn [nation] is described as little or younger. The Hebrew word translated here as little means hindermost or that which comes after and conveys the thought of youth or younger as in the term, little girl. (Daniel 7:8 and 24). It is thus to be understood that this eleventh horn is one of those nations colonized by the original ten. This horn is described as more stout or much stronger than the original [first] ten (Dan. 7:20).

We ask the reader now, which nation could this possibly be? Brazil? Argentina? Canada? Mexico? Australia? But, come now, let's reason further. Some years ago, S. Franklyn Logsdon wrote:

"Man seems to have a special delight and a strong aptitude for the use of nicknames and symbolical terms. The "Bambino" would of course be the home run swatting Babe Ruth, with the "Hammer," Henry Aaron, the current champion in that category ... Everyone conversant with boxing would recognize the "Brown Bomber" as Joe Lewis So also with the Scripture. Prophetic entities, not specifically named in the Bible, may be identified by representations or by descriptions [such as the "Olive Tree" for Israel and the "Lampstand" for the Church] ... The chief reason why many nations of today are not mentioned by name in the Scripture is simply and obviously because ... [they] were not in existence in Bible days. The [human] writer did not know the ethnic names. We must, therefore, search for designations or names or both, which in a convincing manner are applicable [to the world situation of today]. By description, we can identify people, places, and things. Thus, it should not be impossible, or even difficult to identify nations in this manner."



S. Frank Logsdon (1907-1987) was a Baptist preacher, popular author and Bible conference speaker; Logsdon pastored Moody Memorial Church of Chicago.

DESCRIPTION OF CIVIL BABYLON

The Bible describes Prophetic Babylon - the eleventh horn (i.e., the "younger" horn) - as follows [and here we only use descriptions of Prophetic Babylon that are generally recognized as such by "mainline" evangelicals):

- She dwells in the midst of many waters - she is protected by the waters [or oceans] which surround her [literally, she is said to dwell "in the heart of the seas" - Pember, *Earth's Earliest Ages*, pg. 46). Indeed, Antichrist is pictured by Ezekiel as exulting in the strength of his sea-girt nation, and likening himself, in proud reliance upon his inaccessible dwelling, to the God that sitteth above the heavens [Ezekiel 28:1-2; Jeremiah 51:13].
- Her People are a mingled people - that is to say, a "melting pot." (Jeremiah 50:37).
- She evidently has never known the heel of a conqueror and is exceedingly powerful militarily (Revelation 18:4-5 - implied, Jer. 50:23).

- The nations of the earth are dominated by her (Rev. 18:9); she is an arrogant, proud, and haughty nation (Jer. 50:23).
- She is the greatest economic power in the world, a power so great that the nations of the earth are able to grow rich if they can trade with her or are allowed access to her domestic markets in which to sell their goods (Revelation 18:3, 11, 12).
- By means of her economic power [covetousness] she controls the world; gluttony reigns as the people (or the elites which control this nation) live sumptuously [but want more - their appetite never satisfied], while many in the world starve (Jeremiah 50:38; 51:12-13).
- The nations of the earth must trade with her by sea (a confirmation of #1 above - Revelation 18:19, 23).
- The people of Babylon are exceedingly materialistic and are madly in love with their worldly possessions which have become their idols (Jeremiah 50:38); her tastes are extravagant (Rev. 18:14); she is a nation of great material attainments; and her achievements in the "fine arts" [i.e., music, dance, literature, films, etc.] are renowned throughout the world and copied everywhere (implied - Rev. 18:22; Jer. 51:53).
- Babylon is described as a vast latter-day nation, not as a single city (Jer. 50-51). In fact, she is a nation of **MANY** influential cities (Rev. 18:18). In this connection, it is necessary to note that we are here talking not of a mere city to be rebuilt on the site of Ancient Babylon; such a concept is in conflict with Isa. 13:19-22 - please see the note on page 1347 of the Scofield Reference Bible.
- Babylon is described as a nation which at one time was a God-fearing nation [a "Golden Cup" in the Lord's hand], but a nation which left God and fell into degradation and then which intoxicated the rest of the world with her iniquity. (Jer. 51:7).
- Finally, she is a nation that "has reached for the stars [heavens]" - i.e., space (Jer. 51:53).

Now, we ask the reader to put all emotion and feelings aside, and to decide the following question in light of the cold, hard, **SCRIPTURAL** facts: which nation are we talking about here? We want to emphasize that what has been presented is nothing new. It's just that evangelicals refuse to come to grips with the truth of the prophetic Scriptures.



One additional description should be noted: prophetic Babylon is also described as a nation which shall pose as Israel's chief ally and protector in the "latter days" [Please see *Daniel and the Latter Days* by Robert Duncan Culver, Chapter 4; please also see Daniel 7]. We ask the reader to name the nation today

which is Israel's chief and only ally, that one nation more than any other nation which poses as Israel's defender - be honest, which nation is this?



BABYLON AND THE TEN CONFEDERATED KINGDOMS

Evangelicals have in the past contended that Antichrist would secure world dominion as king of the Ten Confederated Kingdoms (evidently a group of Western European states - though it's anyone's guess as to which states these might be, and it's probably not all that important to single the specific states out - after all, what the Bible has in mind here is Western Europe taken as a whole).

But the Scripture in no place identifies the Antichrist as the king of these nations. While the Bible does indicate that he will dominate them, it does not say that he will rule directly over them, but that he will be an **ELEVENTH KING OF AN ELEVENTH NATION** (see Daniel 7:24). [In this connection it is interesting to note that the number "eleven" is the number of apostasy.]

Moreover, in Daniel chapter seven, concerning the Ten Confederated Kingdoms [the ten horns of the fourth wild beast - verses 7 and 8], the Antichrist is described not as one of the "ten kings," but as an eleventh king of an eleventh nation, a nation independent of, and different from the original ten, a nation, however, which evidently derives its heritage from the original ten nations.

Is there any doubt that the United States has derived its heritage, its culture, and over 80% of its people from Europe? Can there really be any doubt as to the identity of this great latter-day nation? - are we not speaking here of the United States of America?

PART 2 : U.S. MILITARY SUPREMACY

"Who is like unto this **BEAST**? who is able to make war with it?"

(Rev. 13:4).

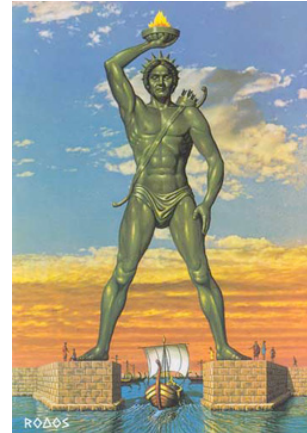
INTRODUCTION

The Bible speaks of a "**BEAST NATION**" (Dan. 7:7) that shall arise in the "end of days;" a nation that will be "... **DREADFUL**" and "**TERRIBLE**," and "**STRONG EXCEEDINGLY**" with "great iron teeth;" one that will "**DEVOUR**" and "**BRAKE IN PIECES**" the rest of the nations of the world (Daniel 7:7); and, finally, one that Isaiah describes as an "**OVERFLOWING SCOURGE**" (Is. 28:18) that will gain mastery

over the entire earth and establish a **ONE-WORLD EMPIRE** that will bring ruin and poverty to the peoples and nations of the world.

What nation are we talking about here? - Russia? China? Japan? The European Community? An Islamic confederation of nations (a kind of new Caliphate)? No! - only **DUMB** evangelical Christians are disposed to believe that it could be any one of these nations or combination of nations. The fact is,

"America's presence today fills the world like some mighty colossus. She stands as a giant in a world filled with midgets. Her existence shatters the pretense of all those who have gone before her - of Egypt, Assyria, Persia, even of ancient Rome - and she inhabits and diffuses the earth with her omnipotence and Titan-like bearing."



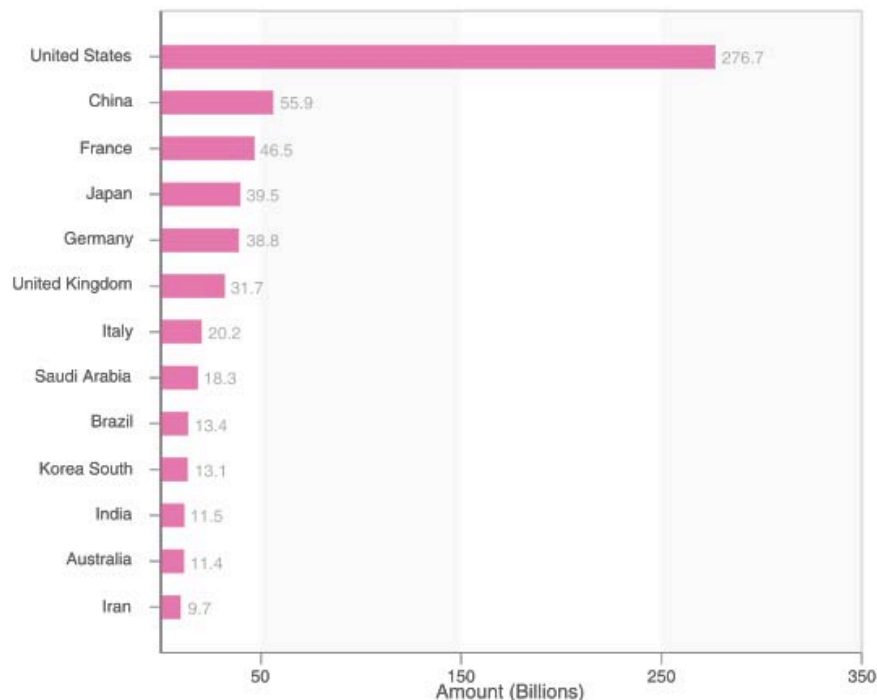
AMERICA'S WORLD-WIDE MILITARY BASE SYSTEM

LIKE ROME BEFORE IT, THE UNITED STATES HAS ACQUIRED AN EMPIRE THAT CAN BE HELD TOGETHER ONLY BY BRUTE MILITARY FORCE - for it cannot possibly be imagined that if the millions and millions (even billions) of people that the U.S. has ruthlessly subjected and brought into its orbit had the vote, they would vote to remain in that system.

What benefit do those who toil in the sweat shops of America's multi-national corporations overseas or those whose lands are being stripped of their mineral and agricultural wealth derive from this pitiless and cold-hearted system. No! - these people can be held in check only by brute military power.

America's presence today fills the world like some mighty colossus. She stands as a giant in a world filled with midgets.

IN DEFENSE OF THIS EMPIRE, AMERICA HAS CREATED A POWERFUL MILITARY MACHINE - INDEED, THE GREATEST MILITARY MACHINE THE WORLD HAS EVER SEEN - AND HAS GARRISONED IT THROUGHOUT THE WORLD IN A BASE-SYSTEM VERY SIMILAR TO ANCIENT ROME'S.



America spends more on its military than all the rest of the nations COMBINED

Indeed, the distinguished author and academician, Chalmers Johnson - whose books include *The Sorrows of Empire: Militarism, Secrecy, and the End of the Republic* and *Blowback: The Costs and Consequences of American Empire* - writes:

"Our [military] garrisons encircle the planet. This vast network of American bases on every continent except Antarctica actually constitutes a new form of empire -- an empire of bases with its own geography not likely to be taught in any high school geography class. Without grasping the dimensions of this globe-girdling **BASEWORLD**, one can't begin to understand the size and nature of our imperial aspirations ..."

Johnson continues:

"With the exception of those who have served in the U.S. military, Americans are almost entirely ignorant of the existence of this **INFRASTRUCTURE OF COERCION AND DEATH**. If they are dimly aware that the U.S. has some foreign military bases, they have little idea that they exist for purposes other than to defend the people of the 'host' nations."

Dr. Joseph Gerson, the Director of Programs of the American Friends Service Committee in New England, comments on this system as follows:

"At root, this entire system serves as an **INTEGRATED GLOBAL INFRASTRUCTURE FOR IMPERIAL DOMINATION**. Not even Genghis Khan, Alexander the Great, Julius Caesar or Benjamin Disraeli [of Great Britain] had such a host of mighty fortresses."



THE MILITARY MACHINE THAT USES THIS SYSTEM

In this connection, it **MUST** be noted that the military machine that this **IMPERIAL BASE SYSTEM** supports cannot in any way be compared to the relatively archaic, underfunded, and under-equipped armies that Europe, Russia and China are capable of deploying. It's a supper-sophisticated killing machine deploying technologies and equipment unheard of in the armies of Europe, Russia and China - a military machine consisting of a "standing ground army" (including the Marine Corps as well as Reserve and National Guard units capable of immediate deployment) that approaches 1,000,000 men.

When the 1,000,000 or so men and women of the air force (with its thousands of strike aircraft scattered in bases all over the world), and the navy with its hundreds of ships including its thirteen "magnificent" super carriers - oceanic **BATTLESTARS** such as the Kitty Hawk, the Constellation, the Enterprise, the John F. Kennedy, the Nimitz, the Dwight D. Eisenhower, the Carl Vinson, the Theodore Roosevelt, the Abraham Lincoln, the George Washington, the John C. Stennis, the Harry S. Truman, and the Ronald Reagan - the size of this military machine becomes staggering. [This figure includes navy and air force reserve and National Guard units capable of immediate deployment.]



**USS EISENHOWER: America's super-carriers
– oceanic battle-stars**

ASSESSING THE SIZE OF THE AMERICAN BASE SYSTEM

Johnson reports:

"It's not easy to assess the size or exact the value of our empire of bases. Official records on these subjects are misleading, although instructive. According to the Defense Department's annual 'Base Structure Report', which itemizes foreign and domestic U.S. military real estate, the Pentagon currently owns or rents **702 overseas bases** in about **130 countries** and has another **6,000 bases** in the United States and its territories. Pentagon bureaucrats calculate that it would require at least \$113.2 billion to replace just the foreign bases -- surely far too low a figure **but still larger than the gross domestic product of most countries** -- and an estimated \$600 billion to replace all of them. The military high command deploys to our overseas bases some 253,288 uniformed personnel (not including those currently deployed in Iraq and Afghanistan), plus an equal number of dependents and Department of Defense civilian officials, and employs an additional 44,446 locally hired foreigners. The Pentagon claims that these bases contain 44,870 barracks, hangars, hospitals, and other buildings, which it owns, and that it leases 4,844 more.

"These numbers, although staggeringly large, do not begin to cover all the actual bases we occupy globally. The Base Status Report fails to mention, for instance, any garrisons in Kosovo -- even though it is the site of the huge **Camp Bondsteel**, built in 1999 and maintained ever since by



The Pentagon has \$5-billion-worth of military and espionage installations in Britain, which have long been conveniently disguised as Royal Air Force bases.

Kellogg, Brown & Root. The Report similarly omits bases in **Afghanistan, Iraq, ISRAEL, Kuwait, Kyrgyzstan, Qatar, and Uzbekistan**, although the U.S. military has established colossal base structures ... [in these countries] in the two-and-a-half years since 9/11.

"For Okinawa, the southernmost island of Japan, which has been an American military colony for the past 58 years, the report deceptively lists only one Marine base, Camp Butler, when in fact Okinawa "hosts" ten Marine Corps bases, including Marine Corps Air Station Futenma occupying 1,186 acres in the center of that modest-sized island's second largest city. (Manhattan's Central Park, by contrast, is only 843 acres.) **The Pentagon similarly fails to note all of the \$5-billion-worth of military and espionage installations in Britain, which have long been conveniently disguised as Royal Air Force bases.** If there were an honest count, the actual size of our military empire would probably top **1,000 different bases in other people's countries**, but no one -- possibly not even the Pentagon -- knows the exact number for sure, although it has been distinctly on the rise in recent years."

THE SPECIFIC MISSIONS OF THE BASEWORLD

According to Johnson, the mission of this huge **BASE SYSTEM** is -

- **To reinforce the status quo**: for example the deterrent role of U.S. bases in South Korea, and the intimidating role of many of the U.S. bases in Middle East which are designed to ensure continued U.S. privileged access to, and control of, the region's oil.
- **To encircle enemies**: as was the case with the Soviet Union and China during the Cold War and China to this day. This is a role played by U.S. bases in Korea, Japan, the Philippines, Australia, Pakistan, Diego Garcia, and in many of the former Soviet Republics of Central Asia
- **To serve & reinforce the aircraft carriers, destroyers, nuclear armed submarines and other warships of the U.S. Navy.** This includes bases in Okinawa, Yokuska outside Tokyo, and "visiting forces" and "access" agreements in the Philippines, Singapore, Thailand, and many other countries.
- **To train U.S. forces**, as was long the case for bombardiers in Vieques and as jungle war fighting and other training which continues in Okinawa.
- **To function as jumping off points for U.S. foreign military interventions as:** the cases of Okinawa, the Philippines, Korea, Spain, Italy, Honduras, Germany and now - with the changing missions of U.S. forces - new bases in Eastern Europe, Kuwait and in Iraq.
- **To facilitate C3I**: command, control, communications and intelligence, including essential roles in nuclear war fighting, and the use of space for intelligence and warfare as we saw in Afghanistan and Iraq. **U.S. bases in Okinawa, Qatar, Australia AND EVEN CHINA serve these functions.** [Yes! - **U.S. bases in China**; which is the exact opposite of what so many Christian nincompoops and other "conspiracy ninnies" believe who contend that China has bases in the U.S. (which is not true).]
- **To control the governments of host nations.** Japan, Korea (where U.S. military forces were deeply involved in military coups,) Germany, Saudi Arabia, and today's Iraq begin the list.

AMERICA'S "FOOTPRINT" ON THE WORLD

Johnson writes:

"Once upon a time, you could trace the spread of imperialism by counting up colonies. **AMERICA'S VERSION OF THE COLONY IS THE MILITARY BASE.** By following the changing politics of global basing, one can learn much about our ever larger imperial stance and the militarism that grows with it. Militarism and imperialism are Siamese twins joined at the hip. Each thrives off the other."

Johnson continues:

Marine Brig. Gen. Mastin Robeson, commanding our 1,800 troops occupying the old French Foreign Legion base at Camp Lemonnier in Djibouti at the entrance to the Red Sea, claims that in order to put "preventive war" into action, we require a "global presence," by which he means gaining hegemony over any place that is not already under our thumb. According to the right-wing American Enterprise Institute, the idea is to create "a global cavalry" that can ride in from "frontier stockades" and shoot up the "bad guys" as soon as we get some intelligence on them." [Which is, incidentally, exactly what the Americans at Camp Lemonnier in Djibouti did when they sent troops and specter gunships to kill al Qaeda personnel that had been trapped in southern Somalia by Ethiopian troops operating in conjunction with the Americans.]



CAMP BONDSTEEL
From where the US controls the Balkans

Once upon a time, you could trace the spread of imperialism by counting up colonies. AMERICA'S VERSION OF THE COLONY IS THE MILITARY BASE.

"LILY PADS" IN AUSTRALIA, ROMANIA, MALI, ALGERIA ...

Johnson reports that our **BASE SYSTEM** now includes six **SUPER-BASES** in Iraq, including bases at **Baghdad International Airport**, **Tallil** air base near Nasariyah, in the western desert near the Syrian border, and at **Bashur air field** in the Kurdish region of the north, **Camp Anaconda**, etc.

NONE OF THESE SUPER-BASES ARE SCHEDULED TO BE CLOSED WHEN THE AMERICANS SUPPOSEDLY LEAVE IRAQ. THOSE WHO "MAN" THESE BASES WILL SIMPLY BE RE-DESIGNATED AS "SUPPORT PERSONNEL" RATHER THAN AS "COMBAT PERSONNEL

In addition, the U.S. now controls the whole northern quarter of Kuwait -- 1,600 square miles out of Kuwait's 6,900 square miles -- which is being used as a logistical center for American forces in the Middle East.

Other countries where the U.S. has recently established bases - including several **SUPER-BASES** - are **Romania, Poland, Hungary, Slovakia, Macedonia, Kosovo, and Bulgaria**; in Asia -- **Pakistan** (where we have four bases), **India, Australia, Singapore, Malaysia, the Philippines**, and even, unbelievably, **Vietnam**; in North Africa -- **Morocco, Tunisia**, and especially **Algeria** (scene of the slaughter of some 100,000 civilians since 1992, when, to quash an election, the military took over, backed by our country and France); and in West Africa -- **Senegal, GHANA, Mali, and Sierra Leone** (even though it has been torn by civil war since 1991).

The models for all these new installations, according to Pentagon sources, are the string of bases we have built around the Persian Gulf in the last two decades in such anti-democratic autocracies as **Bahrain, Kuwait, Qatar, Oman, and the United Arab Emirates**.



US bases in Bulgaria; similar bases exist elsewhere in the Balkans.

Johnson says that most of these new bases will be what the military calls "**LILY PADS**" to which our troops can jump like so many well-armed frogs from the homeland, our NATO bases, or - as Johnson says "*from our bases in such docile satellites as Japan, Britain and Germany.*"

BUT WHILE THIS BASE-SYSTEM IS A WONDER TO BEHOLD IN ITS BREADTH AND SOPHISTICATION, ONE MUST BEAR IN MIND THAT IT EXISTS SOLELY TO IMPOSE A BRUTAL SYSTEM OF MISERY AND SORROW ON THOSE OVER WHICH IT STANDS GUARD. IT IS NOT A SYSTEM OF DEMOCRACY, BUT ONE OF BRUTALITY AND TYRANNY.

HOW THE SYSTEM WORKS

In a very real way, this system works more as a system of intimidation than it does of actual warfare. When everything is working properly, this system operates as a strategic **BACKUP** to the indigenous militaries of America's "client-states." It's these forces that do most of the fighting and dying in support of the American New World Order System.

- (1) The first line of defense in America's system are the militarized local police forces of America's client-states. These forces do not necessarily exist to serve the public over which they have been given charge, as they do to keep that public "in line."
- (2) Backing up these local police forces is the national police apparatus of the client-state under the control of the country's Interior Ministry and the Interior Ministry's paramilitary forces [**DEATH SQUADS**].

- (3) Behind the national police forces of the Interior Ministry stands the national army backed up occasionally by American "Special Forces" (Delta Force, the Seals, etc.).
- (4) Finally, the American military itself stands at the ready behind all these forces to intervene whenever necessary to quash the occasional uprising that may get too far "out of hand." These forces are located "at the ready" in America's **BASE SYSTEM**, and offshore on America's carrier battle groups.

AMERICA'S NUCLEAR FORCES

Finally, there is the matter of America's overwhelming nuclear superiority - **AND MAKE NO MISTAKE ABOUT IT, AMERICA STANDS ABSOLUTELY SUPREME IN THIS AREA.**



AMERICA'S NUCLEAR TRIAD – LAND, SEA AND AIR LAUNCHED NUCLEAR WEAPONS
US nuclear power is supreme throughout the world

Indeed, the extent to which America dominates the world from a nuclear standpoint was made plain recently in an article that appeared in the March / April 2006 edition of *Foreign Affairs* (a CFR publication) entitled "The Rise of U.S. Nuclear Primacy" by Keir Lieber of the University of Notre Dame and Daryl Press of the University of Pennsylvania. Lieber and Press write that it is now possible for the United States to -

"... destroy the long-range nuclear arsenals of [both] Russia and China with a first strike."

Moreover they indicate that the U.S. can now do it without fear that they would suffer a retaliatory strike. They continue:

"For 50 years the Pentagon's war planners have structured the U.S. nuclear arsenal according to the goal of deterring a nuclear attack on the United States and, if necessary ... launching a retaliatory strike that would destroy an enemy. For these purposes, the United States relies on a nuclear triad comprising strategic bombers, intercontinental ballistic missiles (ICBMs), and ballistic-missile-launching submarines (known as SSBNs). The triad reduces the odds that an enemy could destroy all U.S. nuclear forces in a single strike, even in a surprise attack, ensuring that the United States would be able to launch a devastating response. Such retaliation would only have to be able to destroy a large enough portion of the attacker's cities and industry to deter an attack in the first place.

"HOWEVER, THE SAME [U.S.] NUCLEAR TRIAD COULD BE USED IN AN OFFENSIVE ATTACK AGAINST AN ADVERSARY'S NUCLEAR FORCES. Stealth bombers might slip past enemy radar, submarines could fire their missiles from near the enemy's shore and so give the enemy's leaders almost no time to respond, and highly accurate land-based missiles could destroy even hardened silos that have been reinforced against attack and other targets that require a direct hit. **THE ABILITY TO DESTROY ALL OF AN ADVERSARY'S NUCLEAR FORCES, ELIMINATING THE POSSIBILITY OF A RETALIATORY STRIKE, IS KNOWN AS A FIRST-STRIKE CAPABILITY, OR NUCLEAR PRIMACY."**

GAINS IN U.S. NUCLEAR SUPERIORITY

Lieber and Press report that since the end of the Cold War and the collapse of the old Soviet Union, the U.S. nuclear arsenal has greatly improved. The United States has replaced the ballistic missiles on its submarines with the substantially more accurate Trident II D-5 missiles, many of which carry new, larger yield warheads.

The U.S. navy has shifted a greater proportion of its SSBNs to the Pacific so that they can patrol near the Chinese coast or in the blind spot of Russia's antiquated early warning radar network.

The U.S. air force has finished equipping its B-52 bombers with nuclear-armed cruise missiles which are invisible to Russian and Chinese air-defense radar. And the airforce has also enhanced the avionics on its B-2 stealth bombers to permit them to fly at extremely low altitudes in order to avoid even the most sophisticated radar.



Multiple atomic warheads on top of US missiles

Finally, although the airforce finished dismantling its highly lethal MX missiles in compliance with arms control agreements, it is significantly improving its remaining ICBMs by installing the MX's high-yield warheads and advanced reentry vehicles on Minutemen ICBMs and it has upgraded the Minuteman's guidance system to match the MX's accuracy.

THE COLLAPSE OF RUSSIA'S NUCLEAR CAPABILITIES

Lieber and Press go on to say:

"Even as the United States' nuclear forces have grown stronger since the end of the Cold War, Russia's strategic nuclear arsenal has sharply deteriorated. Russia has 39 percent fewer long-range bombers [which were never that good in the first place], and 80 percent fewer SSBNs than the old Soviet Union fielded during its last days. The true extent of the Russian arsenal's decay, however, is much greater than even these cuts suggest. What nuclear forces Russia retains are hardly ready for use. Russia's strategic bombers, now located at only two bases and thus vulnerable to a surprise attack, rarely conduct training exercises, and their warheads are stored off-base. Over 80 percent of Russia's silo-based ICBMs have exceeded their original service lives, and plans to replace them with new missiles have been stymied by failed tests and low rates of production. Russia's mobile ICBMs rarely patrol, and although they could fire their missiles from inside their bases if given sufficient warning of an attack, it appears unlikely that they would have the time to do so.

"The third leg of Russia's nuclear triad has weakened the most. Since 2000, Russia's SSBNs have conducted approximately two patrols per year, down from 60 in 1990 ... Most of the time, all nine of Russia's ballistic missile submarines are sitting in port, where they make easy targets. Moreover, submarines require well-trained crews to be effective. Operating a ballistic missile submarine - and silently coordinating its operations with surface ships and attack submarines to evade an enemy's forces - is not simple. Without frequent patrols, the skills of Russian submariners, like the submarines themselves, are decaying."



Abandoned Russian military base near China border that the Russians can no longer afford to man; rusting submarines of Russia's once vaunted submarine fleet.

Finally, Lieber and Press go on to say that Russia's early warning system is hopelessly antiquated.

And that's not the end of the deterioration of Russia's nuclear capability. Moscow has announced plans to reduce its ICBM force by an additional 35 percent - and outside experts expect the real cuts to approximate 75 percent of the remaining ICBM force.

A REALISTIC SCENARIO OF AN AMERICAN FIRST-STRIKE

To determine how much the nuclear balance between Russia and the United States has shifted since the end of the Cold War, Lieber and Press ran a computer model of a hypothetical U.S. attack on Russia's nuclear arsenal using the standard formulas that defense analysts have used for decades. They assigned U.S. nuclear warheads to Russian targets on the basis of two criteria: the most accurate weapons were aimed at the hardest targets, and the fastest-arriving weapons at the Russian forces that could react most quickly. Because Russia is essentially blind to submarine attack from the Pacific and would have great difficulty detecting the approach of low-flying stealth nuclear-armed cruise missiles, they targeted each Russian weapon system with at least one submarine-based warhead or cruise missile. An attack organized in this manner would give Russian leaders virtually no warning.

According to the simulation, **EVERY SINGLE RUSSIAN BOMBER BASE, SUBMARINE AND ICBM WOULD BE DESTROYED WITH NO CHANCE OF A RUSSIAN COUNTER-STRIKE.** Lieber and Press continue:

"This finding is not based on best-case assumptions or an unrealistic scenario in which U.S. missiles perform perfectly and the warheads hit their targets without fail. Rather, we used standard assumptions to estimate the likely inaccuracy and unreliability of U.S. weapons systems. **MOREOVER, OUR MODEL INDICATES THAT ALL OF RUSSIA'S STRATEGIC NUCLEAR ARSENAL WOULD STILL BE DESTROYED EVEN IF U.S. WEAPONS WERE 20 PERCENT LESS ACCURATE THAN WE ASSUMED, OR IF U.S. WEAPONS WERE ONLY 70 PERCENT RELIABLE, OR IF RUSSIAN ICBM SILOS WERE 50 PERCENT 'HARDER' (MORE REINFORCED, AND HENCE MORE RESISTANT TO ATTACK) THAN WE EXPECTED.**"

And what's more astonishing, Lieber and Press suggest that the unclassified estimates they used most likely grossly understated the capabilities of U.S. forces, making a U.S. nuclear attack against Russia even more likely to succeed.



To determine how much the nuclear balance between Russia and the United States has shifted since the end of the Cold War, Lieber and Press ran a computer model of a hypothetical U.S. attack on Russia's nuclear arsenal using the standard formulas that defense analysts have used for decades. They assigned U.S. nuclear warheads to Russian targets on the basis of two criteria: the most accurate weapons were aimed at the hardest targets, and the fastest-arriving weapons at the Russian forces that could react most quickly. Because Russia is essentially blind to submarine attack from the Pacific and would have great difficulty detecting the approach of low-flying stealth nuclear-armed cruise missiles, they targeted each Russian weapon system with at least one submarine-based warhead or cruise missile. An attack organized in this manner would give Russian leaders virtually no warning. According to the simulation, EVERY SINGLE RUSSIAN BOMBER BASE, SUBMARINE AND ICBM WOULD BE DESTROYED WITH NO CHANCE OF A RUSSIAN COUNTER-STRIKE.

THE CASE OF CHINA

Concerning China, Lieber and Press write:

"China's nuclear arsenal is even more vulnerable to a U.S. attack. A U.S. first-strike could succeed whether it was launched as a surprise first strike or in the midst of a crisis during a Chinese alert. China has a limited strategic nuclear arsenal. The People's Liberation Army currently possesses no modern SSBNs or long-range bombers. Its naval arm used to have two ballistic missile submarines, but one sank, and the other, which had such poor capabilities that it never left Chinese waters, is no longer operational. China's medium-range bomber force is similarly unimpressive: the bombers are obsolete and vulnerable to attack. According to ... U.S. government assessments, China's entire intercontinental nuclear arsenal consists of 18 stationary single-warhead ICBMs. These are not ready to launch on warning: their warheads are kept in storage and the missiles themselves are unfueled. (China's ICBMs use liquid fuel, which corrodes the missiles after 24 hours. Fueling them is estimated to take two hours.) The lack of an advanced early warning system adds to the vulnerability of the ICBMs. It appears that China would have no warning at all of a U.S. submarine-launched missile attack or a strike using hundreds of stealth nuclear-armed cruise missiles."

Lieber and Press say that despite much talk about China's military modernization, the odds that Beijing will acquire a survivable nuclear deterrent in the next several decades are slim. U.S. intelligence reports that China has been working hard on producing a new rocket - the DF-31. But even when they are finally fielded, the DF-31s are unlikely to significantly reduce China's vulnerability *vis a vis* the United States. The missile's limited range (4,970 miles), greatly restricts the area in which they can be hidden, reducing the difficulty of searching for them. The DF-31s could hit the contiguous United States only if they were deployed in China's far northeastern corner, principally in Heilongjiang Province, near the Russian - North Korean border. But Heilongjiang is mountainous, and so the missiles could be deployed only along a few hundred kilometers of good road or in a small plain in the center of the province. Such restrictions increase the missiles' vulnerability and raise questions about whether they are even intended to target the U.S. homeland or whether they will be aimed at targets in Russia and Asia.



The DF-31

Heilongjiang Province

The DF-31s could hit the contiguous United States only if they were deployed in China's far northeastern corner, principally in Heilongjiang Province, near the Russian - North Korean border. But Heilongjiang is mountainous, and so the missiles could be deployed only along a few hundred kilometers of good road or in a small plain in the center of the province. Such restrictions increase the missiles' vulnerability and raise questions about whether they are even intended to target the U.S. homeland or whether they will be aimed at targets in Russia and Asia.

Lieber and Press write:

"Given the history of China's slow-motion nuclear modernization, it is doubtful that a Chinese second-strike force will materialize anytime soon. The United States has a first-strike capability against China today and should be able to maintain it for decades to come."

THE QUESTION TO BE ASKED

The question to be asked, according to Lieber and Press, is this: Is the United States **INTENTIONALLY** pursuing nuclear primacy - or has it just happened? Lieber and Press answer their own question:

"The evidence suggests that Washington is, in fact, deliberately seeking nuclear primacy ... **THE CURRENT ... U.S. NUCLEAR FORCE ... SEEMS [SPECIFICALLY] DESIGNED TO CARRY OUT A PREEMPTIVE DISARMING STRIKE AGAINST RUSSIA AND CHINA.**"

THE INTENTIONAL PURSUIT OF U.S. NUCLEAR SUPERIORITY

Lieber and Press continue:

"The intentional pursuit of nuclear primacy is, moreover, entirely consistent with the United States' declared policy of expanding its global dominance. Washington's 2002 National Security Strategy

explicitly states that the United States aims to establish military primacy: '*Our forces will be strong enough to dissuade potential adversaries from pursuing a military build-up in hopes of surpassing, or equaling, the power of the United States*'. **To this end, the United States is openly seeking primacy in every dimension of modern military technology, both in its conventional arsenal and in its nuclear forces.**

"Washington's pursuit of nuclear primacy helps explain its missile-defense strategy, for example. Critics of missile defense argue that a national missile shield [such as the one presently being deployed along the West Coast and in Alaska] would be easily overwhelmed by a cloud of warheads and decoys launched by Russia or China. They are right: even a multilayered system with land-, air-, sea-, and space-based elements is highly unlikely to protect the United States from a major nuclear attack. But they are wrong to conclude that such a missile-defense system is therefore worthless - as are the supporters of missile defense who argue that, for similar reasons, such a system could be of concern only to rogue states and terrorists and not to other major nuclear powers.

"What both of these camps overlook is that the sort of missile defenses that the United States is deploying **WOULD BE VALUABLE PRIMARILY IN AN OFFENSIVE CONTEXT, NOT A DEFENSIVE ONE** - as an adjunct to a U.S. first-strike capability, not as a standalone shield. If the United States launched a nuclear attack against Russia [or China, or even India, Pakistan, and the European Community (if it came to that)] the targeted country would be left only with a tiny surviving arsenal - if any at all. At that point, even a relatively modest ... missile-defense system might well be enough to protect against any retaliatory strikes, because the devastated enemy would have so few warheads and decoys left." [Please see our article, "[Reducing Europe to the Status of Greece in the Days of Rome](#)."] "

Lieber and Press conclude ominously that in the light of all this -

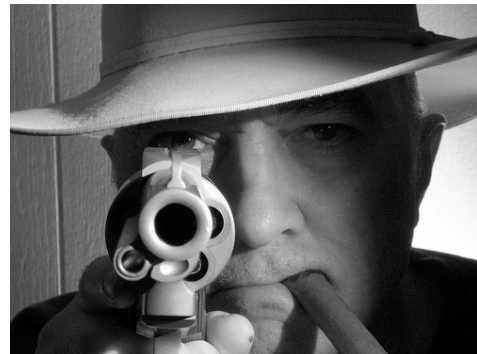
"Washington's continued refusal to eschew a first-strike and the country's [continued] development of a ... missile-defense capability take on a new, and possibly more menacing look."

WHO IS ABLE TO MAKE WAR WITH THE BEAST?

It is in the light of this reality, that the Apostle John cries out in the *Apocalypse*:

"Who is like unto this **BEAST**? who is able to make war with it?" (Rev. 13:4).

Think about the implications of all this: The United States, if it so chose, possesses the power today to conduct a first-strike against the nuclear arsenals of all its enemies [not only Russia and China, but the European Community (France and Great Britain), and all the other remaining nuclear powers of the world] without fear of suffering a retaliatory strike.



POWER FLOWS OUT OF THE BARREL OF A GUN

That's the truth of the matter - **AND ONE MUST REMEMBER HERE, IN THIS WORLD, AS MAO TSE TUNG SUGGESTED, "POWER FLOWS OUT OF THE BARREL OF A GUN"** - and anyone who thinks otherwise is a **FOOL**.

TURNING THE PEOPLES OF THE WORLD INTO SLAVES IN THE SERVICE OF THE AMERICAN EMPIRE

Moreover, if the United States so chose, it could limit its first-strike attack **ONLY** to the targeted countries' nuclear arsenals, sparing the cities, but reducing the populations of these countries to impotence in a single

instant, and reducing their populations to **SLAVE** status in the service of America's New World Order System - the clear implication being that if the populations of these countries refuse to submit to their new status, their cities would be incinerated.

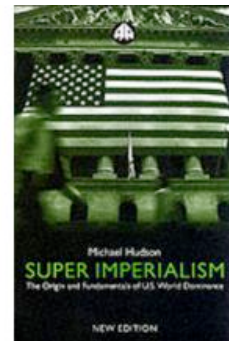
IN THIS CONTEXT, ONE SHOULD BEAR IN MIND THAT EVEN AFTER DESTROYING THE NUCLEAR ARSENALS OF ALL ITS COMPETITORS, THE UNITED STATES WOULD STILL POSSESS INNUMERABLE ADDITIONAL NUCLEAR-TIPPED MISSILES WHICH COULD BE UTILIZED TO CARRY OUT SUCH A SLAUGHTER.

So now we begin at last to understand the apostle's lament concerning this "**BEAST-NATION**:" "*Who is like unto this **BEAST**? who is able to make war with it?*" (Rev. 13:4), and we begin to appreciate the prophet Daniel's description of this "**BEAST-NATION**" as "**DREADFUL**" and "**TERRIBLE**," and "**STRONG EXCEEDINGLY**" with "great iron teeth;" one that will "**DEVOUR**" and "**BRAKE IN PIECES**" the rest of the nations of the earth. (Daniel 7:7)

PART 3 : U.S. ECONOMIC SUPREMACY

"You've shown how the United States has run rings around ... every other empire-building nation in history. **We've pulled off the greatest rip-off ever achieved.**"

Famed Economist Hermann Kahn to Michael Hudson, author of *Super Imperialism, The Origin and Fundamentals of U.S. World Dominance*



MYTHS ABOUT THE AMERICAN ECONOMY

MYTH 1: That the US is about to be displaced as the world's preeminent economic power, which - as the following graph clearly shows is just that - a myth:

GROSS DOMESTIC ECONOMY

Rank	Countries	Amount	
#1	United States:	\$13,201,820,000,000.00	
#2	Japan:	\$ 4,340,133,000,000.00	32% of U.S. economy
# 3	Germany:	\$ 2,906,681,000,000.00	22% of U.S. economy
# 4	China:	\$ 2,668,071,000,000.00	20% of U.S. economy
# 5	United Kingdom:	\$ 2,345,015,000,000.00	17% of U.S. economy
# 6	France:	\$ 2,230,721,000,000.00	16% of U.S. economy
# 7	Italy:	\$ 1,844,749,000,000.00	14% of U.S. economy
# 8	Canada:	\$ 1,223,988,000,000.00	9% of U.S. economy
# 9	Spain:	\$ 1,223,988,000,000.00	9% of U.S. economy
# 10	Brazil:	\$ 1,067,962,000,000.00	8% of U.S. economy
# 11	Russia:	\$ 986,939,600,000.00	7% of U.S. economy

MYTH 2: That the U.S. is about to go bankrupt - a myth being purveyed by FOX NEWS and the neo-conservatives; and that, as a result, the U.S. budget deficit must be drastically reduced so that global bond investors (meaning China, Japan, and the EU) do not threaten the economy by "calling in" the loans they have made to the US government.

INTRODUCTION

Most people today are completely unaware of the real foundations of America's **ECONOMIC** supremacy - a supremacy that mercilessly wrings out of the nations of the so-called "First World" (e.g., Japan, the E.U., Korea, Australia, Canada, etc., as well as "Second World" nations such as Russia, India and China) billions and billions of dollars each year in **TRIBUTE** money.

This money is then used to finance America's wars of conquest - wars that open up the economies of the so-called "Third World" to be cruelly and heartlessly raped and pillaged insofar as their "natural" and "human" resources are concerned. It is **PRECISELY** this pitiless savagery that gives rise to the Bible's description of America as a "**BEAST NATION**;" a nation that is "...**DREADFUL**" and "**TERRIBLE**," and "**STRONG EXCEEDINGLY**" with "great iron teeth;" one that "**DEVOURS**" and "**BRAKES IN PIECES**" (Daniel 7:7), and one that is an "**OVERFLOWING SCOURGE**." (Is. 28:18)



Moreover, it is exactly this **TRIBUTE** money - money that is recycled through American banks and then extended as additional credit to American consumers - that allows Americans to continue to live in relative opulence while piling up ever more personal debt - and doing so while much of the rest of the world starves.

THE EXTENT OF MOST PEOPLE'S IGNORANCE OF AMERICA'S TRIBUTE SYSTEM

The extent of most people's ignorance with regard to this matter is reflected in the perpetual "hue and cry" of naïfs and ninnies regarding the nation's huge trade and budgetary deficits - the very deficits that create the **TRIBUTE** money that America has come to rely on both corporately (as a nation) and individually - and contributes to the false and even idiotic belief in most Christians that the U.S. will eventually bankrupt itself and sink into "second-class" status.

BUT MAKE NO MISTAKE ABOUT IT, WHILE MOST OF THE "PLEBES" AND "COMMON FOLK" IN AMERICA AND ABROAD ARE IGNORANT OF HOW AMERICA'S TRADE DEFICITS ARE "MAGICALLY" TRANSFORMED INTO TRIBUTE MONEY THAT FINANCES AMERICA'S WARS OF CONQUEST AND FEEDS THE INSATIABLE APPETITE OF AMERICAN CONSUMERS FOR MORE AND MORE "THINGS," THE ELITES THAT GOVERN THIS SYSTEM ARE NOT.



**AMERICA'S TRADE DEFICITS ARE "MAGICALLY"
TRANSFORMED INTO TRIBUTE MONEY THAT
FINANCES AMERICA'S WARS OF CONQUEST**

BENIGN NEGLECT

The crucial but furtive and underhanded role that these massive deficits play insofar as the American New World Order System is concerned is reflected in the "benign neglect" of them by the "wise men" who govern the affairs of the nation as these deficits have mounted up to the heavens in the almost thirty-five years since America abandoned the gold standard.

NOTE: The fact that the Republican elites are now raising a "hue and cry" about these deficits – especially the nation's budgetary deficit – does not in any way detract from what's been stated above; this "hue and cry" is nothing more than a ruse to strip government spending on Social Security, Medicare, Medicaid, etc. and plough the savings into the defense budget and into the coffers of the rich. [Please see our article, "[Preparing the Ground in America for the Emergence of the Antichrist – Part 1.](#)"]

As Michael Hudson reports in his masterpiece, *Super Imperialism: The Origin and Fundamentals of U.S. World Dominance*:

"The [U.S. trade] deficit that caused a global crisis in 1971 when its \$10 billion rate led to a 10 percent dollar devaluation has now risen to hundreds of billions of dollars annually, and is still rising ... Still the government says that it is not worried and that the situation does not call for any action ..."

This kind of thinking drives many people crazy as they try to understand the rationale behind America's "benign neglect" with regard to these deficits. But be assured, there is a rationale behind it all. Hudson explains the *REALPOLITIK* governing America's policy of "benign neglect":

"Gold was the monetary medium that **CHECKED** America's ability to run balance-of-payments deficits without limit. As the dollar ceased 'being as good as gold' leading up to 1971, the U.S. Treasury put pressure on central banks to demonetize the metal and finally drove it out of the world monetary system ... Removing gold convertibility of the dollar - **OR FOR THAT MATTER ITS CONVERTIBILITY INTO THE PURCHASE OF U.S. COMPANIES OR OTHER HARD ASSETS** – and enabling the United States to pursue its lethal economic and military policies with regard to the rest of the world."

The United States does not dare to publicly announce that this is its policy *vis-à-vis* the rest of the world, but its policy of "benign neglect" regarding its trade policy surely gives the game away because it can hardly be imagined that if these mounting trade deficits

American elites buy up foreign companies after World War II

There are exceptions to the rule that forbids foreigners to buy up hard U.S. assets - as in the case where Daimler-Benz bought Chrysler, and other German companies such as Bayer and Siemens have been buying up parallel U.S. assets; and there are many, many other cases beyond Daimler-Benz, Bayer, and Siemens. But would you be surprised to learn that since the end of the Second World War, American shareholders have held a controlling share of the stock in these companies and many others besides, not only in Germany, but in the rest of Europe and in Japan. That, however, is another story; a story that has been carefully hidden from the American public, and a story that goes a long way in explaining why the U.S. has allowed these and other companies such as Toyota, Nissan, Sony, etc. to penetrate the American economy to the degree that they have. While this has played havoc with the jobs of ordinary Americans, it has had the wonderful effect (insofar as the elites are concerned) of -

- Destroying American unions (which the American elites hate with a passion that is hard for ordinary people to understand), and -
- Greatly enriching the American elites who systematically and very, very covertly bought up the stock of these companies after the Second World War from "native stockholders" who could at the time do nothing more than paper their walls with their all but worthless stock certificates - stock certificates that gave "native stockholders" a claim on nothing more than a pile of rubble. **THE OWNERSHIP OF THESE "FOREIGN COMPANIES" BY AMERICAN ELITE INTERESTS IS ONE OF THE DEEPEST SECRETS OF THE POST WORLD WAR II ECONOMIC SYSTEM.**

really hurt the U.S. (or at least the interests of the U.S. elites), they would be allowed to continue. The U.S. would simply return to its historic isolationism, throw up trade barriers, and go it alone, which it is perfectly capable of doing. The fact is, of all the economies of the world, it's the U.S. economy that would suffer the least under a regime of protectionism.

THE DOLLAR BECOMES THE WORLD'S MEDIUM OF EXCHANGE

The United States, however, has not pursued a policy of protectionism, and the reason is this: The U.S. has the rest of the world by its testicles (to put it in the vernacular). And how is that? - when the U.S. abandoned the gold standard, **IT REPLACED GOLD AS THE WORLD'S MEDIUM OF EXCHANGE WITH ITS OWN CURRENCY, THE DOLLAR; AND IT FORCED THE OTHER NATIONS OF THE WORLD TO DO SO AS WELL - i.e., TO USE DOLLARS RATHER THAN GOLD AS THE "BACKUP" OR SUPPORT FOR THEIR OWN CURRENCIES.** Furthermore, it forced the other nations of the world to carry on all their international transactions with dollars. This confronts America's client-states in the First World - the E.U., Japan, Korea, Australia, etc. - with a dilemma; Hudson explains:

"If they let the U.S. payments deficit drag the dollar down, this will give U.S. exporters a price advantage [i.e., they can flood their markets with undervalued American products, causing unemployment and a host of other economic ills]. To protect their own producers [and workers], central banks must support the dollar's exchange rate by recycling their surplus dollars back to the United States. This option obliges them to buy U.S. government securities, as U.S. diplomats have made it clear that to buy control of U.S. companies [as well as to repurchase control of many of their own "national companies which they lost to American shareholders after the Second World War] or even to return to gold would be viewed as an **UNFRIENDLY** act."

A MAFIA PROTECTION RACKET



This **TRIBUTE** system is analogous to a **MAFIA PROTECTION RACKET** where shop keepers and other business people are forced to pay "protection" to the local Mafia Don in order to do business - and God help those who don't pay!

The local Mafia Don would consider that an "**UNFRIENDLY ACT**" - and, again, who would want to get on the wrong side of a Mafia Don.

AN UNFRIENDLY ACT

And what's true with the Mafia is true with regard to the United States! No one wants to get on the wrong side of the United States insofar as its **PROTECTION RACKET** is concerned. After all, America is the **CAPO DI TUTI** (the "Don of all Dons") - and one has only to view the wreckage of the old Soviet Union, Cuba, Iraq, North Korea, etc. to see what happens to countries that the U.S. views as "unfriendly." **The fact that China has not suffered the same fate as the old Soviet Union is because China has now become a compliant member of America's New World Order System - all the rhetoric of political nincompoops to the contrary notwithstanding.**

As famed economist Herbert Kahn says of this **PROTECTION RACKET**, it's "*the greatest rip-off the world has ever seen*" - and while many in the outside world might realize what's happening, what does one do when confronted by a thief who has a gun pointed at your head? One hands over the cash and keeps his mouth shut!

NOTE

The fact is, the huge trade deficits that characterize U.S. trade with China are recycled back to America as TRIBUTE just as money from similar U.S. trade deficits are recycled back to the U.S. from Europe and Japan.

People know intuitively that in this world, as Mao Tse-tung once remarked, **"POWER FLOWS OUT OF THE BARREL OF A GUN,"** and America has the "biggest and badest" guns in the world. **IT'S THIS FACT THAT MAKES AMERICA'S PROTECTION RACKET WORK.**

So much then for the possibility that the nations of the earth can break free of America's grip. Hudson writes:

"Foreigners have no say over these policies [i.e., the economic policies that undergird the American New World Order System]. Americans fought a revolution over the principle, 'no taxation without representation' two centuries ago, but Europe, Asia and Third World countries seem politically far from taking a similar step today. Their dollar claims [against the U.S. treasury as a result of America's trade deficit] do not give them the voting rights in U.S. policy formation, yet U.S. government, IMF (International Monetary Fund) and World Bank officials use their dollar claims on debtor economies in Latin America, Africa and Asia to follow the Washington Consensus."



Mao Tse-tung

HOW THE SYSTEM WORKS

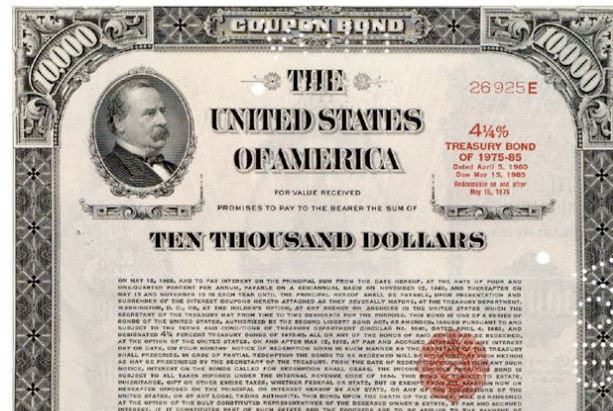
In simple terms, the system works in this way: The U.S. buys more products than it sells to foreign countries. Like gold used to do, these dollars accumulate in central banks around the world and are used by them to carry on their international trade - to buy oil from OPEC (OPEC trades its oil only in dollars), to buy commodities such as fruit and sugar from Latin America, natural gas from Russia (Russia sells its natural gas only in dollars), copper from Chile, tin from Bolivia, electronic equipment from China, cars from Japan, etc. - again, all of which are traded in dollars.

But even after foreign countries have used their dollar surpluses to buy what they want from other countries, they still have a surplus of dollars. Hudson writes:

"In fact, the larger the U.S. balance of payments (i.e., its trade deficit) grows, the more dollars mount up in the hands of ... [central banks] to be re-cycled to finance the U.S. budget deficit.

What can they do with their surplus dollars since the U.S. will not allow the holders of these dollars to buy up U.S. assets? The only thing that they can do with them is buy U.S. Treasury bonds. Hudson explains:

"These dollar holdings - in the form of Treasury bonds - have become a seignorage tax levied by America on the world's central banks." [A seignorage tax redistributes money from the lender to the borrower; it's an upside-down situation where the borrower rather than the lender ultimately benefits.]



US Treasury Bond

This so-called seignorage tax the U.S. levies on the rest of the world is used by the U.S. to cover its huge budgetary deficits - **BUDGETARY DEFICITS THAT ALLOW THE U.S. TO BUILD AND MAINTAIN ITS HUGE MILITARY MACHINE AND CARRY ON ITS INCESSANT WARS OF CONQUEST WITHOUT HAVING TO RAISE TAXES ON AMERICAN CONSUMERS.**

It's the people in America's system of client-states that finance America's military machine and pay for America's wars of conquest.

That's precisely what the Ancients used to call "**TRIBUTE**." **BUT IT'S A SUPER-SOPHISTICATED SYSTEM OF TRIBUTE THAT - WHILE WELL-KNOWN TO THE ELITES IN THE U.S. AND AMONG AMERICA'S "TOADY ELITES" ABROAD - REMAINS HIDDEN FROM THE MASSES OF THE PEOPLE BOTH IN THE UNITED STATES AND IN ITS CLIENT-STATES.**

GETTING BACK TO OUR ANALOGY OF A MAFIA PROTECTION RACKET

Getting back to our analogy of a Mafia **PROTECTION RACKET** - no one, not the Mafia nor the small shop keeper that is paying the Mafia for "protection" wants to admit **OPENLY** what's occurring. So the Mafia carries the money it extracts from the shop keeper on its books as a "loan" from the shop keeper to itself; and the shop keeper carries the money paid as "protection" to the Mafia as a loan it has made to the Mafia.



The world: forced to buy protection from the USA

Of course, both know that the so-called "loan" is never going to be repaid - **BUT IT BALANCES THE BOOKS INsofar AS BOTH PARTIES ARE CONCERNED.** This is important because when it comes time for the shop keeper to explain to his family why they don't have quite as much money to spend as they thought they had (based on the shop's gross sale's receipts), the shop keeper tells his family that he has "invested" the money. Contra

wise, it allows the family of the Mafia Don (who want to plead ignorance as to why they have so much more money to spend than they should have) to think that the money is a "loan" from some obscure "great uncle" who doesn't really want the money back.

Of course, the presence of so many armed "retainers" coming and going at the estate they live at in the Hamptons, the stories one hears wafting through closed doors about "hits," about "numbers being "run," the presence of so many "beautiful people" at the pool outside on the carefully manicured lawns, etc., leads one to wonder a little about what daddy is really up to and where all the money comes from. But a trip to the shopping mall quickly sweeps such "impure" thoughts away. And, then, each Sunday when the family attends Mass and the priest makes so much to do about Daddy, any thought that dear old dad could be up to "no good" is quickly banished from the mind.

AND ISN'T THIS THE CASE WITH THE AMERICAN CONSUMER

And isn't this the case with the American consumer; isn't this the way that Americans react to the manner in which America is squeezing **TRIBUTE** money out of the rest of the world. Indeed, it's this more than anything else that reveals the impure and avaricious nature of America's citizenry (Christians and secularists alike), and exposes their deep participation in this immoral system. After all, how many Americans would stop buying their clothes at Wal-Mart, Macys, Target, etc. if they knew that these clothes were made in Third World sweat shops; **OR** how many Americans would stop buying their electronic gadgets at Fry's, Sears, Best Buy, etc. if they knew they were being made by political prisoners in China; **OR** how many American women would stop buying diamonds if they knew how much blood and misery are associated with them? Not many I imagine.

Plainly, then, it's not just the American elites that are participants in this system of organized pillage, but the American people as well - and all their long prayers for the poor in Africa, Asia and Latin America will not wash away their guilt.

CHAPTER XIII

THE WOMAN OF REVELATION 17



"And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great **WHORE** that sitteth upon many waters:

"With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.

"So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns.

"And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication:

"And upon her forehead *was* a name written, **MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.**

"And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration. (Rev. 17:1-6)

PART 1: A MYSTERY WRAPPED IN AN ENIGMA

INTRODUCTION

Revelation 17:1-6 is one of the most enigmatic passages in all of Scripture. It's a parable, a mystery wrapped in an enigma - and it's meaning is hidden to all those who brazenly and unblushingly call themselves by Christ's Name for advantage or convenience, but whose lives betray that calling. Specifically, I speak here of the leaders of today's American Church - the Pharisees and Sadducees of our time; the same people about whom Jesus spoke when He told His disciples:

"... it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, **BUT TO THEM IT IS NOT GIVEN.**

"For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath.


"THEREFORE SPEAK I TO THEM IN PARABLES: BECAUSE THEY SEEING SEE NOT; AND HEARING THEY HEAR NOT, NEITHER DO THEY UNDERSTAND.

"And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith, **BY HEARING YE SHALL HEAR, AND SHALL NOT UNDERSTAND; AND SEEING YE SHALL SEE, AND SHALL NOT PERCEIVE:**

"For this people's heart is waxed gross, and *their* ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with *their* eyes, and hear with *their* ears, and should understand with *their* heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

"But blessed *are* your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear.

"For verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous *men* have desired to see *those things* which ye see, and have not seen *them*; and to hear *those things* which ye hear, and have not heard *them*. (Matt. 13: 10-17)



The Prophetic Scriptures: a mystery wrapped in an enigma - it's meaning hidden to all those who brazenly and unblushingly call themselves by Christ's Name for advantage or convenience, but whose lives betray that calling.

WHICH DIVIDE DO YOU FALL IN?

The question is, which divide do you fall in? - are you capable of understanding these "mysteries," or has that ability been stripped from you? If it has, then nothing that I can say will do you any good in understanding them. You no longer have "eyes to see" and "ears to hear." Your heart is "*waxed gross*," and your "*ears are dull of hearing, lest at any time you should see with your eyes, and hear with your ears, and understand with your heart, and ... you should be healed.*" (Matt. 13:15)

You are in danger of being cast away by God. And don't think that can't happen to you. Jesus plainly says that it can; that's clearly what happened to the "unprofitable servant:"

"Cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth." (Matt. 25:30)

Jesus said:

"He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him." (John 14:21)

DO YOU LOVE GOD?

Do you love God? Do you really love Him? If you do, your love will be manifested by your obedience. Do **NOT** say that you love God when you refuse to obey Him. Do **NOT** say you have faith in Him when you refuse to be obedient to His commands. The Apostle James wrote:

"What *doth it* profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him?"

"If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food,

"And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what *doth it* profit?"

"Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone.

"Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works.

"Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils [demons] also believe, and tremble.

"But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead? (James 2:14-20)



"Cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth." (Matt. 25:30)

All this to say, if you do not possess the will to obey God, then the "mysteries of God" will be forever hidden from you - and though you diligently seek to unlock these mysteries through much study and perseverance, you will be unable to do so - even if they should be explained to you by an angel of God. **AND THESE ARE NOT MY WORDS, BUT CHRIST'S.**

If, however, you are willing to obey God, then your eyes will be opened and your ears will be unplugged, and the meaning of these "mysteries" will be revealed to you - and I speak especially concerning their application in today's world and in this present time; and most particularly as they pertain to the American Church, the American New World Order System and the kind of avaricious and imperial Christianity it has spawned throughout the world.

PART 2: THE WHORE OF REVELATION 17

Revelation 17:1-6 portrays a Woman - a religious system - sitting on a Beast full of names of blasphemy (cursings, profanities, impieties and irreverence) towards God. So intertwined are these two - i.e., the Woman and the Beast - that they seem to be one, though in fact they are two separate entities:

- A **CIVIL** (political and commercial) entity - the **BEAST** (which we have already discussed).
- A **RELIGIOUS** entity - the **WOMAN**.

NOTE #1

That TWO Babylons are spoken of here is evidenced by the fact that when Religious Babylon (i.e., the Woman) is destroyed shortly after the Abomination of Desolation, she is destroyed because of the jealousy and hatred of the Ten Kings and the Beast (Revelation 17:6); but when Commercial Babylon (i.e., the Beast) is destroyed, these same kings, together with the business leaders of the world, are sorrowful and mourn her destruction [see Revelation 18].

Many people - especially those who have grown up in this country during the last twenty or thirty years and who are thus accustomed to thinking that civil power can be separated from religious power - are puzzled as to why the Bible speaks of two Babylons in the "Latter Days" - one a religious entity and the other a civil entity. They seem genuinely bewildered by the picture the Bible uses to portray their relationship one with the other - a woman (the religious entity) riding a beast (the civil entity). Why, they ask, does the civil power (the beast) have need of the religious power (the woman)? The fact of the matter is, however, there is a fundamental mutual interdependence between religion and politics, and today's multicultural and secular elites have been making a grave mistake in believing otherwise. Why? - because civil power, in the end, must be legitimized, and an appeal to the fickle and even capricious "democratic will of the majority" - while adequate enough during periods of cultural and economic stability - often fails to ensure that same stability during periods of turmoil and dislocation.

Religion gives sanction to obedience on the part of ordinary people and it legitimizes the exercise of power on the part of rulers. For this reason, religion has historically been impressed into all of society's experiences and actions - from simple family chores to the corporate activities of the state. The fact is, in most societies religion has been a state obligation and responsibility. It has manifested the very essence of the state itself - so much so that there has rarely been any question, at least at the popular level, concerning the vital link between the practice of religion and the health of the state. To most societies it has seemed self-evident that all authority emanated from the divine *because from no where else could the certitude so necessary to social order be derived.* The result of religion has been to put men and women in right relation to their society. It has assured the order and certainty so necessary to the stability of most social structures. The proposition that the state could be separated from a religious undergirding - embodied in the concept of "separation of church and state" - represents relatively new political thinking. "Politically correct" academicians in this country have been making a very grave mistake in over estimating our society's freedom from a fundamental dependence on a religiously based ethical system.

NOTE #2

One should be clear that the "religious entity" the Scriptures have in mind here is not some strange "New Age" religion, but one which is clearly characterized as "Christian" (an apostatized form of Christianity, no doubt, but "Christian" as the world counts "Christian" - and to this, most evangelicals - from Barnhouse, to Gaebelien, from Chafer to Pentecost, from Ironside to Ryrie - agree. [Please see "Part 4" in this chapter, "Apostasy"]

Society organizes itself around culture. Culture sets the parameters of the society. It determines what is "right" and what is "wrong." It provides the underlying assumptions upon which society is based. But what a culture determines to be "right" or "wrong" must be anchored by something. For example, who is to say whether abortion is "right" or "wrong?" or whether homosexuality is acceptable behavior? or whether divorce should be condoned or not? or whether the society should be organized as a patriarchy? or maybe as a matriarchy? One may assert that he "feels" homosexuality is wrong; that abortion is murder; and that men should be the head of the family. But that's not enough. Others may "feel" the exact opposite. And an appeal to philosophy to end the argument is more often than not futile. Philosophical or ethical speculation in the absence of some kind of an anchor has normally proven useless for such purposes. Indeed, all it seems to accomplish is to further erode fixity and stability, the essential ingredients of the bonds of social existence. In the absence of an acceptable anchor, philosophical and ethical speculation exists in a state of perpetual agitation. Should the agitation continue unchecked, it may lead to the ultimate contempt of all authority

THE OVERWHELMING PRESENCE OF THE WOMAN AND THE BEAST IN THE "END OF DAYS"

So overwhelming is the presence of these two entities in the "Latter Days" that Dwight Pentecost can write:

"... (in the end of days) WE SEE THE WHOLE STAGE (i.e., the whole world) FILLED WITH TWO PERSONALITIES ONLY: A 'BEAST' AND A 'WOMAN' ..."

NOTE #3

There are many who see Revelation 17:9 ("*And here is the mind which hath wisdom. The seven heads [of the Beast] are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth*") as a reference to ancient Rome (i.e., the "Seven Hills of Rome"), and HENCE TO THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH. But that is merely an assumption and finds no substantiation in the Scriptures. The context makes clear that the Bible is referring here to a succession of rulers that precedes the rule of the Antichrist: "*And there are seven kings: five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must continue a short time. And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven [i.e., he comes out from one of the seven], and goeth into perdition.*" (Rev. 17:10-11) While one may argue as to the exact nature of this succession, one thing is clear - the context in which the term "mountain" is used: It is a translation of the Greek word "Oros." Strong writes: "*In the poetical literature of the Old Testament, the view of the world held by men of that era finds its reflection. One can speak of the foundations of the 'mountains' as rooted in the UNDERWORLD.*" So what we have here is a reference to the actual place where the Woman derives her strength: the UNDERWORLD, a place where the DEMONS dwell, and all those who have been cast out of the presence of God. What's that say, then, about the United States? - Plainly, it says that - at least in the eyes of the Prophet - the United States is connected to the rule of the UNDERWORLD.

PART 3: AMERICA IS NO LONGER JUST A NATION. IT IS NOW A RELIGION



America is no longer just a nation, it is becoming a religion

THE WOMAN OF REVELATION 17

As to the identity of Religious Babylon (i.e., the Woman), she is without a doubt the false *Super-Church* of the "last days" which will lend to Commercial Babylon and the Antichrist the religious **legitimacy** that they require in their headlong pursuit of world domination.

And what church is that? - the American Church, of course: The church of Paul Crouch, Jack Hayford, Charles Stanley, D. James Kennedy, Tim LaHaye, the late John Wimber, Juan Carlos Ortiz, C. Peter Wagner, Beverley LaHaye, Ern Baxter, Kenneth Copeland, Kenneth Hagin, Oral Roberts, Pat Robertson, Jerry Falwell, Chuck Colson, Robert Stearns, Mike Bickle, Reuven Doron, Che Ahn, Frank Hammond, Cindy Jacobs, Bill Hamon, John Eckhardt, Bobbie Byerly, Dutch Sheets, Jim Goll, John Paul Jackson,

James Ryle, Frank Damazio, Ed Silvos, Carlos Annacondia, Claudio Freidzon, Roger Mitchell, Ted Haggart, Paul Cain, Chuck Pierce, Rick Joyner, Kingsley Fletcher, Jim Laffoon, Barbara Wentroble, *ad infinitum*.

C. PETER WAGNER: THE PRESIDING APOSTLE OF THE INTERNATIONAL COALITION OF APOSTLES

For example, take the fawning, pathetic words of C. Peter Wagner - who presumptuously styles himself as the "**PRESIDING APOSTLE**" of the "**INTERNATIONAL COALITION OF APOSTLES**;" Commenting on America's "War on Terrorism" that is now threatening to "morph" into a war against all of Islam, Wagner writes:

"The United States and the world are attempting to emerge from a history-altering catastrophe (by which Wagner means the destruction of the Twin Towers on September 11, 2001 by al-Qaeda). The president used well-chosen (and appropriate) language when he characterized this conflagration as a conflict between good and evil ... For the first time in 50 years our nation is now unified, in heart and in voice, **READY TO SHIFT FROM AN ERA OF PEACE TO AN ERA OF WAR.**" [Please see our article on the Twin Towers entitled "[The Events of September 11, 2001: What's Going On?](#)" Please also see our article, "[Radical Islam](#)"]



C. Peter Wagner and the International Coalition of Apostles (ICA)

Wagner seemed to actually revel in the fact that the United States was involving itself in a war against Islam; he says that the church too must ready itself for this war: Moreover, like Bush, Wagner sees this war as a conflict between "**GOOD**" and "**EVIL**;" between "**GOD**" and the "**DEVIL**" - a war that must be prosecuted both physically and spiritually.

Now it might fairly be asked, exactly what kind of a Christian would arrogate unto himself the right to speak for the church in this manner? Perhaps only those with the hubris and titanic impudence of Wagner and his ilk who think nothing of styling themselves "apostles" and "prophets" could feel they have the **RIGHT** to speak for the church; these are the kind of people about whom the Apostle Paul wrote:

"For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ.

"And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light.

"Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works." (2 Cor. 11:13-15)

FALSE PROPHETS & APOSTLES

Sandy Simpson writes,

"I'd like to know who made Wagner the '**PRE-SIDING APOSTLE**' of the church ... That he and a few others want to be the papal voice of Christianity (as if we needed a larger cacophony of voices at this point) is an indictment on Christianity as a whole. [It's] because the true church has not cast these people out and called them cultists and heretics long ago that we now have to contend with them claiming absolute authority over the churches."

Jesus warns us about these so-called "apostles" and "prophets" - i.e., about the kind of people who have the temerity and effrontery to appoint themselves as such:

"Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves." (Matt. 7:15)

According to Jesus, they are -

"... false Christs, and false prophets, ... [who] shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect." (Matt. 24:24)



WOLF IN SHEEP'S CLOTHING: C. Peter Wagner and those of his ilk.

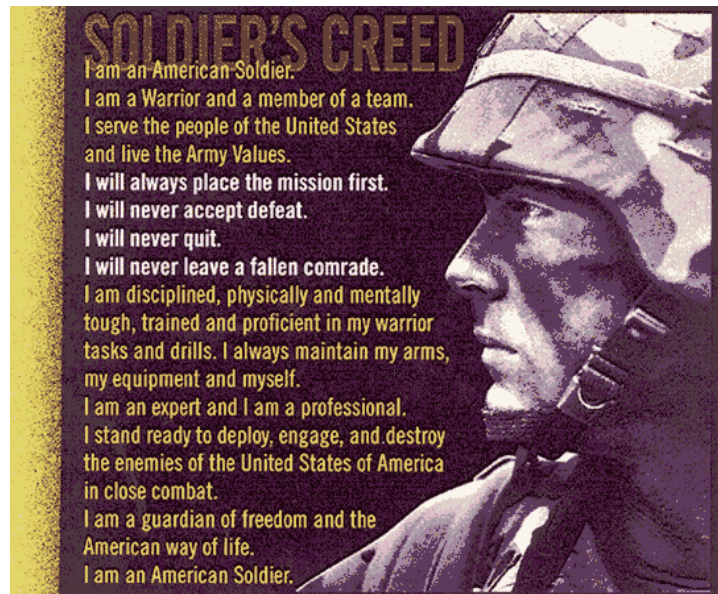
What is it that the Bible is saying here? - it's warning us against allowing these men to substantiate their claims to "apostleship" by (1) the supposed "sanctity of their lives" [i.e., "*Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing ...*" (after all, by this standard, Ghandi and "Mother Theresa" could claim "apostleship" in today's church despite the fact that they were **NOT** Christians by any standard evangelicals would accept)], and (2) "*great signs and wonders*" (by that standard, the prophets of Baal and the magicians of Egypt could be called apostles). But these are **EXACTLY** the means that Wagner and his ilk use to verify their "apostleships;" it's certainly not by recourse to the Bible.

The very real fact of the matter is, these men - all of them - are **CHARLATANS** and **FRAUDS** - impostors and pretenders posing as leaders of the church, and calling on it to support the government in its endless "War on Terrorism" and its attempt to construct a "National Security State." The blindness of Wagner and his crowd here is staggering! - "blind leaders of the blind" - that's what they are. (Matt. 15:14) [Please see our articles, "[The Utility of Police Brutality in Controlling the Poor](#);" please also see our article, "[The Watchers Are Watching You](#)."]

AMERICAN SOLDIERS AS MISSIONARIES

Concerning the relationship that has developed between the church and the state in America, George Monbiot of the British newspaper, *The Guardian*, writes:

"The United States is no longer just a nation. It is now a religion. Its soldiers have entered ... [the Middle East] to liberate its people ... from darkness. As the President told his troops: 'Wherever you go, you carry a message of hope - a message that is ancient and ever new. In the words of the prophet Isaiah, To the captives, 'come out', and to those in darkness, 'be free'."



The *Guardian* continues:

"SO AMERICAN SOLDIERS ARE NO LONGER MERELY TERRESTRIAL COMBATANTS; THEY HAVE BECOME MISSIONARIES. THEY ARE NO LONGER SIMPLY KILLING ENEMIES; THEY ARE CASTING OUT DEMONS ... LIKE ALL THOSE WHO SEND MISSIONARIES ABROAD, THE HIGH PRIESTS OF AMERICA CANNOT CONCEIVE THAT THE INFIDELS MIGHT RESIST THROUGH THEIR OWN FREE WILL; IF THEY RESIST, IF THEY REFUSE TO CONVERT, IT IS THE WORK OF THE DEVIL ... IT IS NOT JUST THAT THE AMERICANS ARE GOD'S CHOSEN PEOPLE; AMERICA ITSELF IS NOW PERCEIVED AS A DIVINE PROJECT ..."

"SO THOSE WHO QUESTION ... [THE POLICIES OF THE UNITED STATES] ... ARE NO LONGER MERELY CRITICS; THEY ARE BLASPHEMERS ... [AND] THOSE FOREIGN STATES WHICH SEEK TO CHANGE THESE POLICIES ARE WASTING THEIR TIME; YOU CAN NEGOTIATE WITH POLITICIANS; YOU CANNOT NEGOTIATE WITH PRIESTS. THE U.S. HAS A DIVINE MISSION: 'TO DEFEND ... THE HOPES OF MANKIND', AND WOE BETIDE THOSE WHO HOPE FOR SOMETHING OTHER THAN THE AMERICAN WAY OF LIFE."

IMPOSING UNITY UNDER PAIN OF EX-COMMUNICATION

Speaking concerning the discipline that the "government of the church" must be prepared to impose on believers who "vacillate" as the church prepares itself for war in conjunction with the American New World Order System, Rick Joyner writes,

"SOME PASTORS AND LEADERS WHO CONTINUE TO RESIST THIS TIDE ... MUST BE REMOVED FROM THEIR PLACE."

And again,

"... there will be many 'stumbling blocks' circulating in the church ... Those serving in leadership must trust their discernment and **REMOVE** the 'stumbling blocks'."

Of course, in saying this, Joyner is unwittingly fulfilling the words of Christ when He said:

"... **THEY SHALL SEPARATE YOU FROM THEIR COMPANY**, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake." (Luke 6:22)

And again,

"... take heed to yourselves: for they shall deliver you up to councils; and in the ... [churches] ye shall be beaten: and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them." (Mark 13:9)

PART 3: THREE THINGS OF EXTRAORDINARY NOTE

There are three extraordinary things that should be noticed with regard to the Woman of Revelation 17:

- (1) This Woman is described as a "**HARLOT**" [a whore - indeed, the "Mother of Whores" (Rev. 17:1 and 17:5)].
- (2) She is described as an "**ABOMINATION**." (Rev. 17:5)
- (3) She is described as dwelling in the "**WILDERNES**." (Rev. 17:3)

AN HARLOT

First of all, this Woman is called a **HARLOT** (a whore, a prostitute) - someone **WHO SELLS HER SEXUAL FAVORS FOR MONEY**.

Now you must understand something here: This is a detestation to God. In God's eyes, sexual intimacy is meant to be a gift a woman gives to a man whom she loves and with whom wants to be; it establishes a deep and very confidential **RELATIONSHIP** between herself and the man she loves with whom no one else can be privy. The basis of this kind of relationship is **LOVE** - unreserved **LOVE** between herself and the man she loves; and in this connection one should understand that sexual love between a man and a woman is something ardently to be desired. Indeed, the Bible says that "*it is better than wine*" (Song of Solomon 4:10), and that -

"Many waters cannot quench [this kind of] love, neither can the floods drown it: if a man would give all the substance of his house for [this kind of] love [i.e., the kind that only a woman can give], it would utterly be contemned." (Song of Solomon 8:7)



This Woman is called a HARLOT - someone WHO SELLS HER SEXUAL FAVORS FOR MONEY.

But understand something here: The Bible is not talking about **RAW** sex; it's talking about sexual intimacy between a husband and a wife that is based on mutual love, respect and commitment.

A **WHORE**, however, is not interested in love; she's not interested in commitment. Like the American Church, she's interested in only one thing: **MONEY**! She sells **RAW** sex for **MONEY**; but make no mistake about it, the sex she offers - like the American Church with all its "signs and wonders," its "Green Gospel," its rapturous music and worship services, its so-called "family values," its various "fun activities," its claims on all the flag-waving of the American New World Order System, etc. - is extremely alluring and intoxicating. [Please see our article "[A Luciferic Christianity](#)."]

Moreover, this Woman - this whore - is no "Sally Frump." She is a beautiful **SEDUCTRESS**, and by her beauty and eroticism she excites and thrills all those who touch her - and so much so that the Bible says that they are "... made **DRUNK** with the wine of her fornication" (Rev. 17:2); they "... reel to and fro, and stagger ... and are at their wits' end." (Ps. 107:27) Those who drink from her cup of fornication and who are made drunk by it are unable any longer to see that "... her house is the way to hell, going down to the chambers of death." (Proverbs 7:27)

Those who have intercourse with her are -

"... like an ox that goeth to the slaughter, or as a fool to the correction of the stocks; till a dart strike through his liver; as a bird hasteth to the snare, and knoweth not that it is for his life." (Proverbs 7:22-23)

AN ABOMINATION

This Woman is also called an "**ABOMINATION**." An abomination in Scripture is something that is detestable to God; it is **CONTRARY** to His nature; it is something which, if He allows it to be attached to His Name, will bring shame to Him. This is **INTOLERABLE** to God. It is in this connection that the **WHORE** of Revelation 17:1-6 is called an **ABOMINATION**: She is called by God's Name, but she acts **CONTRARY** to His holy nature, and in doing so she is suggesting that God approves of her profane activities. Indeed, it is because of the hypocrisy of people who call themselves by God's great Name but who - by their activities and their living - act **CONTRARY** to his divine nature, that His -

"... name ... is blasphemed among the Gentiles [i.e., the unbelievers] ..." (Rom. 2:24)

Unbelievers understand what holiness is; they may not practice it, but they know what it is; and they know hypocrisy when they see it - and plainly they see it in the activities of the American Church. Brothers and sisters, I somberly warn you that God **HATES** this kind of hypocrisy; and He **HATES** anyone who is called by His Name, but who acts **CONTRARY** to his nature - and that's precisely why He was so harsh with regard to the scribes and Pharisees:

"Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, **HYPOCRITES!** for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess.

"Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first that *which is* within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.

"Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, **HYPOCRITES!** for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead *men's* bones, and of all uncleanness.

"Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity. (Matt. 23:25-28)

And He goes on to say:

"Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.

"Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, **HOW CAN YE ESCAPE THE DAMNATION OF HELL?"** (Matt. 23:32-33)



An abomination in Scripture is something that is detestable to God; it is **CONTRARY** to His nature; it is something which, if He allows it to be attached to His Name, will bring shame to Him. It is in this connection that the **WHORE** of Revelation 17:1-6 is called an **ABOMINATION**: She is called by God's Name, but she acts **CONTRARY** to His holy nature, and in doing so she is suggesting that God approves of her profane activities.

Finally, we need to note the connection between the Woman and the Beast - an entity that the Bible says is "**FULL** of names of blasphemy against God." (Rev. 17:3) Plainly, this Beast is no friend of God! - it is God's great enemy. Why, then, does this Woman - who calls herself a follower of Jesus - connect herself with this Beast, and by doing so, linking God to the crimes of this Beast? Put another way, Why does the American Church - which claims to be God's representative on earth - consort itself with the American New World Order System which is ravaging and plundering the poor of the earth - the very people that Christ came to save? After all, Jesus said:

"The Spirit of the Lord *is* upon me, because he hath **ANOINTED** me to preach the gospel to the **POOR** ..." (Luke 4:18)

Why, then, would God permit His holy Name to be linked to an imperial system that despoils and robs the poor? It is an **ABOMINATION** to God to be linked to such a system, and anyone who is connected to this system - directly or indirectly, centrally or just tangentially - will pay a terrible price. They are an **ABOMINATION** to God, and they are in danger of hell-fire. (Matt. 23:33)

You object? - but come on now! Is it so hard for you to see this? What would you think of a friend - a "best friend," perhaps - who consorted publicly and openly with someone who consistently defamed you; who went about doing everything he could to slander you and bring you to ruin? What would you think of such a friend? I tell you what you would do! - you would cut that friend off and have nothing more to do with him.

What, then, is God to think if those who call themselves by His holy Name openly consort and benefit from a relationship with His enemy - the Beast of Revelation 17 (i.e., the American New World Order System)? He will surely cut them off! He will have nothing further to do with them!

THE WILDERNESS

Finally, the Bible portrays this Woman as dwelling in the wilderness. Her seat of power is in the **DESERT!** - a place where there is no water; and without water there is no possibility of life. No matter how much the desert is tilled, no matter how much the desert is worked, no matter how much it is fertilized, life cannot take hold in a place like that. It is **DEAD**. What's that signify? - there is no longer any hope for life in the place where the Woman dwells, i.e., in the United States!



The Woman's dwelling is in the wilderness. Her seat of power is in the DESERT! - a place where there is no water; and without water there is no possibility of life. No matter how much the desert is tilled, no matter how much the desert is worked, no matter how much it is fertilized, life cannot take hold in a place like that.

What's that say, then, about those who call themselves "followers of Jesus" but who refuse to get out of the U.S. in answer to God's holy **DICTATE** in Revelation 18:4:

"And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues." (Revelation 18:4) ? **[More about this particular verse later.]**

It says that they have been **DESENSITIZED** to the presence of God: They are unable to detect (to sense in their spirits) that He has removed Himself from that place.

Why would anyone who calls himself by Christ's name want to be in a place where Christ no longer dwells? Where there are no life-giving waters flowing out from Christ to water the land?

Now you must understand something here: These are not my words, they are Christ's. I am not the one who has called the place where this woman dwells a wilderness. It is God that has done so! - and if the woman is the American Church, then what's that say about the nation she dwells in and from which she derives her sustenance, i.e., the United States?

Listen to me, those of you who think you can produce life in this **WILDERNESS** - this **DESERT** which the **WHORE** calls home - by your much work: You are utterly wasting your time. There is no possibility for that to occur. You will not find any life-giving springs in this desert to water and give life to what you plant there, and if you stay there, **YOU WILL SURELY DIE** - and I speak not so much concerning your physical-life (which so many of my detractors seem to be fixated on), but I speak here concerning your soul-life. You are in danger of losing your soul! - and if you doubt this fact, your doubt gives evidence as to how desensitized you have become to the presence of God! It says that you have already imbibed too much of "*the wine of her fornication*" (Rev. 17:2). You are living in a drunken stupor, as it were - and this is what has desensitized you. You are already a long way "... *down the path to the chambers of death.*" (Proverbs 7:27) God does not dwell in the place you reside, and if you don't sense that, you are in deep trouble.



There are no life-giving springs in this desert to water and give life to what you plant there, and if you stay there, YOU WILL SURELY DIE - and I speak not so much concerning your physical-life, but I speak here concerning your soul-life. You are in danger of losing your soul!

God's warning to you is "Come out of her," and the reason He gives is that **YOU WILL LOSE YOUR SOUL IF YOU FAIL TO DO SO** (and, again, we are not talking about your physical life, but your soul-life).

And you should understand that these are judgments **THAT GOD WILL INFLICT UPON YOU**. One would do well to remember the words of Hebrews 3:7-11:

"Wherefore as the Holy Ghost saith, Today if ye will hear his voice,

"Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation, in the day of temptation [testing] in the wilderness:

"When your fathers tempted [tested] me, proved me, and saw my works forty years.

"Wherefore I was grieved with that generation, and said, They do alway err in *their* heart; and they have not known my ways.

"So I swear in my wrath, **THEY SHALL NOT ENTER INTO MY REST.**" (Hebrews 3:7-11)

PART 4: THE DAUGHTERS OF THE WHORE

[This section deals mainly with the activity of the American church in Central and South America; to get an idea of what the American church has been "up to" in Africa, please see our article, "[Christians in Africa Awake: America and the American Church Are Not Your Friends.](#)"]

THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS

Finally, we come to a very mysterious appellation used in the passage of Scripture we have before us (i.e., Rev. 17:1-6): "**MOTHER OF HARLOTS**" (Rev. 17:5). This woman - this **WHORE** - has given birth to many daughters throughout the world; they have spread themselves over the entire planet. Specifically, the Bible says:

"The waters which thou sawest [i.e., Rev. 17:1: "*Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon MANY WATERS*"], where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues." (Rev. 17:15)



She is called the "**MOTHER OF HARLOTS**" (Rev. 17:5). This woman - this **WHORE** - has given birth to many daughters throughout the world; they have spread themselves over the entire planet.

And believe me when I tell you that there are many such "daughters of the Whore" spread out over the world in the "**SLAVE-NATIONS**" of the American New World Order System - churches that ride the Beast just as surely as their Mother does - and we speak here not so much of the indigenous churches of these countries, but those churches that have by now been **CO-OPTED** by the American Church in order to secure a financial or commercial advantage for their members in the American New World Order System.

Christians who adhere to Liberation Theology or to an evangelical church that refuses to be co-opted by the American system are cut off from any of these benefits.

Indeed, over the years nothing has proven so advantageous for gaining admittance to the commercial benefits of the American New World Order System in the **SLAVE-NATIONS** of that system than membership in one of these churches - whether a Protestant evangelical church or a right-wing Catholic church. These churches are nothing more than "advance teams" for the American Empire.

The fact is, for many years now the leaders of the Left throughout the world have been complaining that missionaries from the United States have been acting as "front men" not so much for Christ as for U.S.

NOTE

For example, those who participated with the CIA in the unsuccessful effort to topple the semi-socialist government of Hugo Chavez in Venezuela recently were almost all members of churches - whether Protestant or right-wing Catholic - that were tied to the American New World Order System, while the poor and dispossessed who supported Chavez were members of churches that were opposed to the American System. Many Christians in the United States, of course, refuse to recognize the Christianity of Hugo Chavez and his followers - people such as Pat Robertson, for example. But that is nonsense. Indeed, Chavez - who was challenged on his claim as a Christian by Ted Koppel on ABC's Nightline - gave a testimony for Christ more genuine than anything I have ever heard given by people such as Pat Robertson, Jerry Falwell, Charles Stanley or any others of that ilk. [Copies of Chavez's interview by Koppel can be obtained from ABC.]

world hegemony. With generous financial help from their affiliates in the United States, their churches have been flourishing amidst the wreckage of radical movements that have been crushed by the American military or its surrogates. [Please see our articles, "[America's New Vietnam & Your Sons and Daughters Will Be The Ones To Fight It - All In The Name of The Lord Jesus Christ](#)," "[The Spread of America's New World Order System Northward from Latin America to the United States](#)," "[The American Empire: The Corporate / Pentagon / CIA / Missionary Archipelago](#)," and "[The American Empire and the U.S. System of Client States](#)."]

By the beginning of the 1980s, the suspicion that the U.S. government was using the American Church to further its own economic and political interests was no longer rooted in conjecture, but in fact as the Reagan administration re-militarized U.S. foreign policy after the debacle of the Vietnam War.

Soon right-wing political and religious activists were joining together where - according to author **David Stoll** - they began combining politics and religion with the view of "winning the world to Christ" by enlarging North American world hegemony. Increasingly, North American missions such as New Tribes, the Wycliffe Bible Translators, Youth with a Mission (YWAM), Demos Shakarian's Christian Businessmen's Association, Campus Crusade for Christ, etc. began allowing their missions to be harnessed to the needs of the Political Right, and they began emphasizing the necessity for the American Church, in conjunction with the U.S. military, to "**TAKE DOMINION**" over the earth.

OUR DESTINY IS TO RULE THE NATIONS

This message was echoed from the pulpits of America's "big-time" televangelists such as Jimmy Swaggart of the Assemblies of God (now "defrocked" as a result of his sexual improprieties), Jerry Falwell, D. James Kennedy, Charles Stanley, Pat Robertson, etc. These men began preaching a new kind of "end-times scenario" to their vast television audiences: that Christians had to "set things right" in the United States; that their destiny was not the end of the world, but **DOMINION** over it. "I trust you know," Dennis Peacock said at Glen Cole's Capital Christian Center in Sacramento, California, "that **OUR DESTINY IS TO RULE THE NATIONS.**"

What Peacock and countless other similarly-minded Christians had in mind was to wrest control of the country from their hated enemy, the "secular-humanists," who they maintained had taken control of it, and then use the United States as a spring board to "**CONQUER THE WORLD FOR CHRIST.**" Peacock writes:

"The Lord's prayer ... says bring your kingdom to earth now.

We've been waiting for the kingdom to come and save us like a spaceship, but it's not going to ... We want God to solve our problems, like a welfarist God mentality, [as if] God is the great Washington, D.C., in the sky. We make welfare prayers instead of empowerment prayers to Him. But **THE BIBLE SAYS THAT WE'RE TO BE CO-RULERS WITH HIM** "

Stoll elaborates on the thinking of these men:

"Based on biblical language about taking dominion over the earth, the religious right began to talk about 'taking dominion' over American society and 'reconstructing' it on biblical principles. Emblematic of their **CONQUEST OUTLOOK**, some took the next logical step: that the Bible



William Young, Who Helped U.S. Organize Secret War in Laos, Is Dead at 76 -- *New York Times*

CHIANG MAI, Thailand — William Young, a missionary who mixed evangelical zeal with covert missions for the C.I.A. in Southeast Asia, and who helped organize the "secret war" in Laos for the United States during the Vietnam War.

promised Christians political dominion over all the nations. *'The command of our General [i.e., Christ] is to bring the nations of the world under His dominion', one believer wrote. 'We have been ordered to disciple them and [we have been] promised that our Lord will be with us until the **CONQUEST** is complete. The leaders and people of the nations that plot to throw off the rule of God are conspiring in vain. Individuals and nations must be told: the Kingdom of God has come and of its increase there will be no end'.*"

PREACHING THE GOSPEL OF CHRIST THROUGH THE BARREL OF A GUN

And make no mistake about it, those who were involved in this kind of thinking saw nothing wrong with proclaiming the Gospel through the barrel of a gun. For example, R.J. Rushdooney, the father of what we today call "Reconstructionism," wrote:

"In winning a nation to the Gospel, the sword as well as the pen must be used."



R.J. RUSHDOONEY: "In winning a nation to the Gospel, the sword as well as the pen must be used."

Clearly, then, people like Peacock, Rushdooney, Robertson, Falwell, etc. were more than willing to tie the success of the Gospel to American military might. Stoll continues:

"If Christ would not return until his followers completed the Great Commission ... it could hardly be accidental that such a high percentage of the world's Christians lived in the United States. Didn't 70 percent of the world's trained Christians and 80 percent of its Christian resources come from the United States? Didn't 90 percent of the money spent on world evangelism come from the United States? Surely then, America had a special role in God's plan. Even though it was not the only country with the duty of completing the Great Commission, unto whom much had been given, much would be required. If America had been more richly blessed than all other nations combined, then it was America's duty to bear an outsize share of the task

"Yet active efforts were being made to stop evangelism. Wasn't door after door being slammed shut? Because the United States was the headquarters of world missions, numerous evangelicals believed, it must be a special target of the devil.

"Satan knew he had to destroy the United States as a bastion of godliness, as a missionary nation, before he could wreak havoc throughout the world. **THE U.S. MILITARY MACHINE WAS GOD'S WAY OF DEFENDING THE PEACE SO THAT HIS MESSAGE OF SALVATION COULD BE MADE KNOWN. WASHINGTON'S ADVERSARIES AROUND THE WORLD, THEREFORE**

... [WERE] GOD'S ADVERSARIES, AND EVANGELIZING THE WORLD HINGED ON U.S. MILITARY POWER."

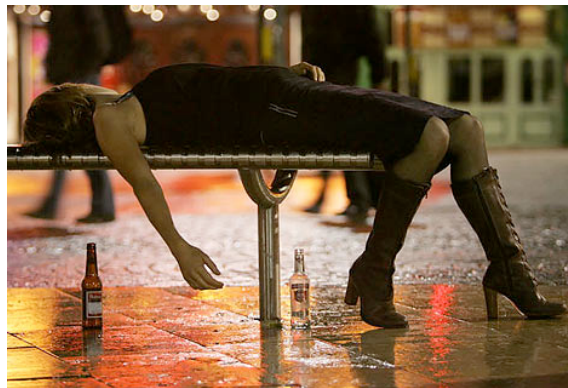
DRUNK WITH THE WINE OF HER FORNICATION

Of course, when right-wing Christians - together with their supporters in the Republican Party - talk of "*overturning the rule of those who plot to throw off the 'government of God'*," they mean those who would toss out the greedy, money-grubbing American multinationals corporations that are looting the countries of the so-called Third World, and "disappearing" those who seek to extricate their nations from the predatory grasp of the American New World Order System.

Why was all this so hard for American Christians to see? - after all, it didn't take a rocket scientist to see what the American multinationals were doing in the Third World: the wanton destruction of the rain forests, the dispossession of the poor from their land by American agri-businesses, the rape of the earth by American mining interests, the reduction of the peasantry to the status of worker-serfs in the "slave-labor factories" of companies like Liz Claiborne, Nike, etc., and on the banana plantations of the super-rich.

The answer is, American Christians had become **INTOXICATED** with worldly power, and they were so inebriated by it that they could no longer tell "right from wrong." To put it in the words of the passage of Scripture we have before us (i.e., Revelation 17:1-6), they had been "... made **DRUNK** with the wine of her fornication" (Rev. 17:2); specifically, with the wine of their religion's fornication with the American New World Order System.

They had been reduced spiritually to the state of drunkards who "... *reel to and fro, and stagger ... and are at their wits' end*" (Ps. 107:27), knowing not that those who drink from this cup of fornication are on a path that leads "... *down to the chambers of death*" (Proverbs 7:27) - "... *like an oxen that goeth to the slaughter, or as fools to the correction of the stocks; till a dart strike through their livers; as birds hasteth to the snare, and knoweth not that it is for their lives.*" (Proverbs 7:22-23)



In teaming up with the elites of the American New World Order System, they had taken on the despicable image of those elites -

"Being filled with all unrighteousness ...
wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness;
full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers,

"Backbiters ... spiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things ...

"Without understanding, covenantbreakers ... implacable, unmerciful:

"Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, **BUT HAVE PLEASURE IN THEM THAT DO THEM.**" (Romans 1:29-32)

AMERICAN CHRISTIANS: "... made **DRUNK with the wine of her fornication" (Rev. 17:2); specifically, with the wine of their religion's fornication with the American New World Order System.**

BLIND LEADING THE BLIND

America's Christian leaders had become little better than common inebriates who had been made drunk with the power that their new connection with the Political and Economic elites of the United States had gotten them - "blind leaders of the blind" (Matthew 15:14) -

"And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch." (Matt. 15:14).



"And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch." (Matt. 15:14).
AMERICA'S CHRISTIAN LEADERS TRYING TO LEAD TODAY'S CHRISTIAN CHURCH.

And that's **EXACTLY** the condition of the American Church today and all those connected to it: they've been made drunk with the wine of the Whore's fornication and have fallen into a deep ditch; besotted inebriates who stagger to and fro unable to see through the foggy haze that beclouds their brains. After all, what else can be said of Christians who embrace warfare as a means of spreading the Gospel of the **PRINCE OF PEACE** (Isaiah 9:6), the One who instructed His followers to -

"Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you,

"Bless them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully use you.

"And unto him that smiteth thee on the *one* cheek offer also the other; and him that taketh away thy cloke forbid not *to take thy* coat also.

"Give to every man that asketh of thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods ask *them* not again." (Luke 6:29-30)

OR do you think that Jesus was simply "blowing smoke" when he said these things? - that He wasn't really serious? If so, you are a blind **DOLT!** God's command here could not be any plainer, and if you choose to disobey it, you have **NO** right to call yourself a "Christian." The command to "**LOVE YOUR ENEMIES AND DO GOOD TO THEM WHICH HATE YOU**" (Luke 6:29) is central to the teachings of Christ; it is the essence of Christ's message in the New Testament; and, again, if you can't obey God in this matter, why do you call yourself a "Christian?"

MIRROR-IMAGES

Come on now! - where is there any room in the teachings of the New Testament for the kind of warfare mentality of today's American Christian community? - the kind of Christianity that Charles Swindall, D. James Kennedy, Charles Stanley, C. Peter Wagner, *et. al.* preach. Where is there any room here for the kind of Christianity that the American Church is exporting to the world in the interest of the American New World Order System and on behalf of the financial welfare of the CEOs of Exxon-Mobil, Haliburton, General Electric, Boeing, Ford Motor Company, Nike, Microsoft, etc.?

THE VERY FACT OF THE MATTER IS - WHAT CHRISTIANS IN AMERICA ARE PRODUCING IN THE OUTSIDE WORLD IS A KIND OF MIRROR-IMAGE OF THE CHRISTIANITY THAT HAS TAKEN ROOT IN THE UNITED STATES; A CHRISTIANITY THAT FLOWS OUT OF THE BARREL OF A GUN. All this substantiates the appellation given by the

Scriptures to the many, many churches throughout the world that have linked themselves to the American Church: that they are "**DAUGHTERS OF THE HARLOT!**" And what an evil kind of Christianity these "**DAUGHTERS OF THE HARLOT!**" have created in the client-states of the American new World Order System! Take just one early example: what happened in Guatemala in the early 1980s under General Efraim Rios Montt.



Rios Montt

The example here ultimately failed, but it proved useful as a model for other more successful attempts in Honduras, El Salvador, Ecuador, the Congo, the Philippines, etc. And now this example has spread to Europe - in many of the countries of the former Soviet Union. Even in Western Europe this model is beginning to take shape - especially as these populations are being "re-Christianized" under the impress of the poor who are mostly impoverished Muslim immigrants from North Africa. Indeed, the recent victory of the CDU in Germany is an example of this phenomenon, as is what's happening in Austria, Holland, and Italy. Even the United Kingdom and the Scandinavian countries have not been immune from this pathology. But it's in France under the impress of recent Muslim rioting, that this model is beginning to really take hold. [Please see our article, "[The Invasion of Europe by America's Apostate Church.](#)"]

THE CHURCH IN GUATEMALA: DAUGHTER OF THE HARLOT

But getting back to the kind of Christianity that the American Church tried to create in Guatemala in 1982, it appeared in answer to a perennial nightmare that the American elites - together with their lackey elites in the area - had had concerning the loss of their vast economic holdings in Latin America to the "scourge" of socialism - a nightmare that was given expression in a book that appeared in 1936. The novel was by an American missionary who wrote about a Russian Bolshevik who leads an uprising among Guatemala's Mayan Indians aimed at igniting a communist revolution in Central America, the fires of which engulf all of Latin America and reach even to the American border at the Rio Grande.

By the very early 1980s - almost fifty years after the book's publication - this seemed to be exactly what was happening. Indians in the western highlands of Guatemala had joined Marxist guerrillas in an effort to drive out the corrupt American-supported military regime that was then ensconced in Guatemala City. The threat was materializing, moreover, in what the Protestant Christian missionaries of Central America regarded as a particularly insidious guise: a revolutionary interpretation of their own Christian faith: the **LIBERATION THEOLOGY** of left-wing Catholics such as Gustavo Gutierrez, Oscar Romero, Dom Helder Camara and most especially, Ernesto Cardenal. Indeed, Cardenal had actually joined the revolutionary Sandinista government of Daniel Ortega in Nicaragua as a minister in the Sandinista's Revolutionary Council.

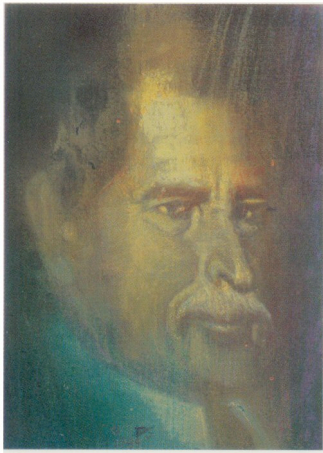
Christianity in the service of socialism? - in the service of the poor of the earth? Christianity aimed against the rich? - against American corporate interests? What were the proponents of Liberation Theology trying to do? - rob the American New World Order System of its most



LIBERATION THEOLOGY

Christianity in the service of socialism? - in the service of the poor of the earth? Christianity aimed against the rich? - against American corporate interests? What were the proponents of Liberation Theology trying to do? - rob the American New World Order System of its most useful tool (i.e., **CHRISTIANITY**) in its war against its left-wing opponents?

useful tool in its war against its left-wing opponents? That would never do! The answer of the American Church to the threat of Liberation Theology in Central America - specifically, in Guatemala - was General Efraín Ríos Montt who seized power in a military coup on March 23, 1982. This was the kind of man for whom the American missionaries in Guatemala had been praying. Stoll writes:



GENERAL EFRAÍN RÍOS MONTT

"We can ... [only] imagine the hymns of praise which greeted this true soldier of God. The confrontation between North American ... [Christianity] and [left-wing Catholic] liberation theology made Central America, in the words of an [American] evangelical missionary, 'one of the strategic battlefields in the spiritual warfare over the allegiance and eternal destiny of the world's inhabitants'. One of the elders in Ríos Montt's Church stated, Montt was a 'stabilizing factor'. It would transform Guatemala into a 'spiritual stronghold', prevent Guatemala's rich oil and titanium reserves [most of which, incidentally, were owned by American corporate interests] from falling into Marxist hands, and become a buffer between the United States and the communist advance. 'After Guatemala', warned Word's parent church in the U.S., 'only Mexico remains!'" **[NOTE: what American missionaries had in mind at that time was the threat of communism; what they have in mind today is the threat of "Muslim Terrorists."]**

To the adherents of the American Church in Latin America, the main cause of poverty and social unrest in that area of the world was not the rapacious activity of American corporate interests, but the lack of a genuine "work ethic" and a truncated morality among the poor of the region. It followed, then, that only a moral reformation could save the day.

This was the premise on which Ríos Montt announced he would save Guatemala for "Christ and the church" - and, of course, for the American New World Order System. Ríos Montt's Christian base in Guatemala was the Word Church headquartered in Guatemala City. It was an extension of Jim Durkin's Gospel Outreach denomination based in Northern California.

A LITTLE "NEW ISRAEL OF GOD"

Guatemala, under the tutelage of the American Church and missionaries connected to North America, would become a model of Christian transformation and a beacon of light to other countries of the world threatened by the same "Satanic forces" of socialism and Liberation Theology. It would become a little "New Israel of God" in association with its Mother to the north - the American Church. Indeed, Guatemala would become the first of many "little daughter" churches to the colossus in the north. In January of 1982 Ríos Montt declared:

"Guatemalans are the chosen people of the New Testament. We are the New Israelites of Central America."

Encouraged by North American televangelists like Pat Robertson, Jerry Falwell, Tim LaHaye, D. James Kennedy, etc., American Christians pledged millions and millions of dollars to Ríos Montt's effort to drive the satanic forces of socialism and Liberation Theology out Guatemala.

Every Sunday morning Ríos took to the radio to moralize against the sorry state of Guatemalan morality and to encourage his people to begin to take "personal responsibility" for their poverty - **NEVER MIND THE FACT THAT THEY HAD BEEN ROBBED OF ANY WAY TO MAKE A LIVING; NEVER**

NOTE

This was a church that I visited many times in 1982. During this time I met often with Durkin. At the time, the church was full of talk that Guatemala was the beginning of Christianity's conquest of the world - which would lead to Christ's return. The leaders of the church met often with operatives from the U.S. State Department and the CIA - both in Eureka and in Washington D.C.



MIND THE FACT THAT THE GUATEMALAN PEOPLE HAD LONG AGO BEEN ILLEGALLY STRIPPED OF THEIR LAND BY MONEY-GRUBBING NORTH AMERICAN AGRI-BUSI-



In July of 1982 the Guatemalan army - IN THE NAME OF THE "PRINCE OF PEACE" (and advised by U.S. Special Forces and the CIA) - wiped out a large village of Chuj Maya men, women and children.

NESSSES LIKE UNITED FRUIT COMPANY AND CHIQUITA BRAND; AND NEVER MIND THE FACT THAT THEIR MINERAL WEALTH HAD SIMILARLY FALLEN INTO THE HANDS OF AMERICAN MINING INTERESTS No! - what was needed was a "moral revolution," and somehow or other money would magically "fall from heaven."

And so Rios Montt's war to drive out the forces of satanic socialism and the minions of Liberation Theology began - and what a bloody affair it was! For example, in July of 1982 the Guatemalan army - **IN THE NAME OF THE "PRINCE OF PEACE"** (and advised by U.S. Special Forces and the CIA) - wiped out a large village of Chuj Maya men, women and children. Stoll writes:

"This was not a case of civilians caught in a crossfire because there had been no resistance. Gang-rape (the Guatemalan army's inducement for soldiers about to massacre women), torture, execution, and ritual cannibalism were supervised by officers who alighted from a helicopter." [Carrying Bibles in their hands, no doubt.]

KILLING INNOCENT CIVILIANS IN THE NAME OF GOD

And this was supposed to be the new "Christian army" come to save the "poor and dispossessed" in Guatemala? - and what happened to these Chuj Mayans happened time and time again during the presidency of Rios Montt. And there at the forefront of what was going on were the elders of Rios Montt's Word Church in Guatemala City. What a pathetic sight it was. Take how one Word elder, Francisco Bianchi, tried to justify all the killing:

"The problem of war is not just a question of who is shooting. For each one who is shooting there are ten workers behind him. The guerrillas won over many [civilian] Indian collaborators. Therefore the Indians were subversives. And how do you fight subversion? Clearly you had to kill Indians because they were collaborating with subversion. And then it would be said that you were killing innocent people. But they weren't innocent. They had sold out to subversion." [Please see our article, "[The Death Squads: Bringing in the Kingdom of God through Terror, Torture and Death.](#)"]



The Mayan genocide took place in Guatemala, between 1981-1983. The main groups involved were the Guatemalan government, and its counter-insurgency forces, "killing machines" (antagonist) and the Mayan Indians (protagonist). The cause for the genocide was that the Mayan Indians were accused of working toward a communist coup.

Another Christian observer wrote:

"Killing for the joy of it is wrong, but killing because it is necessary to fight against an anti-Christ system ... is not only right, but the duty of every Christian."

Soon this kind of thinking spread to other countries in the region, and was embraced by other Christian groups. Take what happened with World Vision: Refugees from the fighting in El Salvador who made their

way to refugee camps in Honduras that were run by the Christian relief organization were routinely handed over to Honduran death squads which took their orders ultimately from the American Embassy run by John Dimitri Negroponte, now the Director of Intelligence in Washington D.C. A few days later, their mutilated bodies would inevitably be found floating in the river. Not only that, but World Vision staffers actually participated in the Honduran army's interrogation of refugees in their camps, often with CIA officers looking on. [Please see our article, "[The Horror of John Dimitri Negroponte and Everything He Represents.](#)"]

ERSATZ REVOLUTIONS IN THE NAME OF THE AMERICAN NEW WORLD ORDER SYSTEM

It is precisely this kind of Christianity that has been behind the *ersatz* revolutions in Georgia (the so-called "Rose Revolution") and in the Ukraine (the so-called "Orange Revolution") [both successful] and the aborted revolutions in Belarus and in Venezuela where, as we have already indicated, the CIA attempted to overthrow the legitimate government of Hugo Chavez with the help of right-wing Christian groups in Caracas several years ago. [For what happened in the Ukraine, please see our article, "[The Truth about What's Happening in the Ukraine: Managing Democracy.](#)"]

These kind of pseudo-revolutions are becoming endemic all over the world and give evidence to the way right-wing Christian groups and the American New World Order System have teamed up to "bring Christ to the world."

CHAPTER XIV

APOSTASY

[The Great "Falling Away"]

"Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day [i.e., the day of the rapture and resurrection] shall not come, except there come a falling away [i.e., apostasy] first ..."

2 Thess. 2:3

"Things are not always what they appear to be."

- Paul Neuman to Sally Fields
in *Absence of Malice*

PART 1: APOSTASY OPENS ONE UP TO DECEPTION

INTRODUCTION

In various places and in diverse ways the Scriptures warn about the dangers that will encompass the saints of God at the end of the age - so much so that the "very elect" shall be "**DECEIVED**" (Mat. 24:24); but I Tim. 4:1-2 is the only passage in the Bible which *explicitly* shows the special cause of the peril to the church in the closing days of this era, and how Satan will break in upon her members, and by **DECEPTION** beguile many:

NOTE

The words "... if it were possible ..." in connection with Matthew 24:24 do not appear in the original texts - which would imply that some (many?) Christians will indeed be deceived.

"Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils;

"Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron ..." (I Tim. 4:1-2)

The word hypocrisy here means **to present a lie as the truth**.

"THINGS AREN'T WHAT THEY SEEM TO BE"

The peril to the church at the close of the age, then, is from people who present a lie as the truth; from hypocrites who claim to be one thing, but who in reality are something else altogether; people who pass themselves off as Christians, but who are, nonetheless, unalterably opposed to God - much as Judas was.

The peril from such men concerns every true Christian in the "Latter Days." The prophecy declares that -

- Some Christians shall fall away from the faith;
- and
- The reason for their fall will be that they have given heed to a deception - a teaching that outwardly appears to lead to God and to bring about "good," but which in reality leads to disgrace and dishonor.



Deception

These hypocrites are believed because outwardly they appear to be "good," to be "spiritual." The so-called "good life" or "spiritual life" of these hypocrites is taken as a sufficient guarantee for their teaching.

But goodness is no guarantor of the truth: all teaching must be judged against the Written Word. Nothing else will suffice. To think that goodness and "good intentions" are adequate warrants for the truth is to take the first step down the road to deception. Such thinking has its foundation in the prevalent idea that everything that Satan does is manifestly evil, the truth not being realized that he works under cover of light. (2 Cor. 11:14)

We repeat, there is only one principle for testing the source of all doctrine - and that is not "good intentions," but the Written Word, the Bible.

APOSTASY: THE "FALLING AWAY"

But how is it possible that so many evangelicals - including a vast portion of our leadership - could have allowed themselves to be so dulled spiritually that they have become such easy targets for these hypocrites? The answer is apostasy! Apostasy is not necessarily false doctrine and/or sin - though it can be this, and there can be no question that these things inevitably follow in the wake of apostasy - but rather it is, in the first instance, the **FALLING AWAY** of Christians from a view of themselves as citizens of Christ's heavenly kingdom to a view of themselves as citizens of the kingdom of this world. The Bible says:

"Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day [i.e., the day of the rapture and resurrection] shall not come, except there come a **FALLING AWAY** [i.e., apostasy] first ..." (2 Thess. 2:3)

If we truly are aliens to this world, as the Scriptures so plainly declare we are, what should we have to do with its politics? - nothing of course. Nonetheless, that's what millions and millions of Christians in the United States have involved themselves in as they have flocked to the Republican Party and anointed it as "God's Party" dedicated to the mission of "taking back the country for Christ and the church."

But, again, if we are truly aliens to this world, why should we seek to involve ourselves in the politics of what amounts to be a "foreign country?" To do so diverts us from the single mission that we have been Scripturally commissioned to accomplish - to convince as many people as possible as we journey through

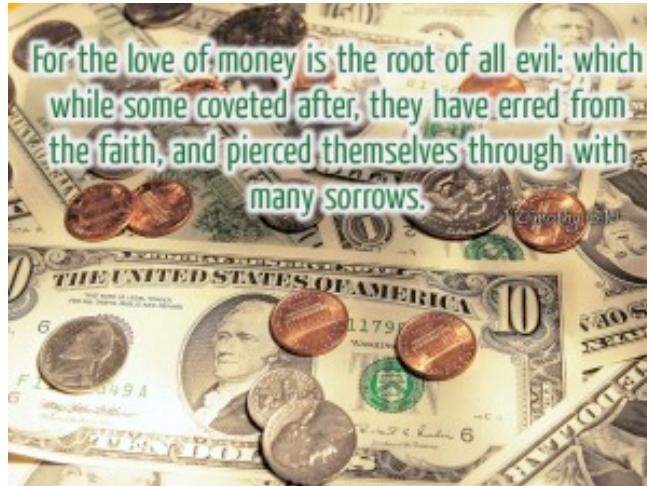
this "foreign and hostile land" to join us in seeking that better land - that "heavenly country" whose builder and maker is God.

To get involved politically in the land we say we are leaving is to reveal ourselves as nothing more than frauds - people who don't really intend to leave - and unbelievers have a stubborn and pernicious way of noticing such inconsistencies; and then we have the *chutzpah* and temerity to wonder why we are so ineffectual in leading people to Christ?

THE BAIT WHICH LEADS TO APOSTASY: THE DESIRE FOR WEALTH

It's wealth - or, as is more often the case, the desire for wealth (for most people never really get it) - which blinds us to the transitory nature of our connection to this world and which leads us into apostasy. Apostasy inevitably develops when Christians - because of their worldly comfort and wealth, or simply their desire for material things - refuse to acknowledge in word, deed, or action the fact that they are merely "pilgrims and strangers" - **aliens** - to this world and this present life.

It is the desire for material things which diverts Christians from their journey - from seeing this world as merely a "way station" on their path towards a better world. Paul wasn't just kidding around when He said,



"For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out.

"And having food and raiment let us be therewith content.

"For they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition.

"For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows." (II Tim. 6:7-10)

Dom Helder Camara of Brazil was right when he wrote:

"I used to think, when I was a child, that Christ might have been exaggerating when He warned about the dangers of wealth. Today I know better. I know how ... [impossible] it is to be rich and still keep the milk of human kindness. Money [or the desire for money] has a dangerous way of putting scales on one's eyes, a dangerous way of freezing people's hands, eyes, lips and hearts."

Jesus said,

"Lay not up for yourself treasures upon the earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: for where your treasure is, there will your heart be also ... No man can serve two masters [or two kingdoms]: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve [both] God and mammon [i.e., you cannot serve heaven and this world at the same time]." (Mat. 6:19-24)

Speaking of those who have given up on viewing themselves as citizens of heaven, and have reverted back to seeing themselves as citizens of this world, Paul said,

"For I have told you often before, and I say it again now with tears in my eyes, there are many who walk along the Christian road who have become the enemies of the cross of Christ. Their future is ... loss ... **[for] all they think about is this life here on earth.**" [Phil. 3:18-19 (Amp.)]

Apostasy - i.e., that condition of thinking which leads us to perceive ourselves more as citizens of this world than of heaven - results when our attachment to the things or "treasures" of this life - our cars, our houses, our careers, etc. - overwhelm us and cause us to think of ourselves not as aliens to this world, but as "permanent residents." Once we as Christians have acquiesced in this way of thinking we have created the conditions necessary to open us up to Satanic **DECEPTION**.



TODAY'S CHRISTIANS: "All they think about is this life here on earth." [Phil. 3:18-19 (Amp.)]

DECEPTION

If all that the Bible contains on the subject of evil could be exhaustively dealt with, we should find that more knowledge is given on the *technique* - the methodology - of Satan than many have realized, *and at the heart of his technique is deception*. From Genesis to Revelation the work of Satan as a **deceiver** can be traced, until the climax is reached in the "**Great Deception**" of the "very elect" in the "Latter Days."

Deception is truly a sinister and clandestine craft, and its work today in what passes for "evangelical Christianity" has become so lethal and toxic that the faith of countless numbers of heretofore sound Bible-believing Christians is being poisoned; yet it is so subtle and delicate in its intrigue that those who have been entangled in its web of fraud and trickery hardly realize that their faith has been thus corrupted.

We find recorded in Genesis Satan's first work as **deceiver**, and the subtle form of his method of **deception**. We see him here working upon man's highest and purest desires, and cloaking his own purpose of ruin under the guise of seeking to lead men and women into a closer relationship with God. We see him using good to bring about evil; suggesting evil to bring about good. Caught with the bait of being "wise" and "like God," man is blinded to the principle of obedience, and is **deceived** - and in the end, the desire to be "good" has counted for little. Indeed, the cleverest way in which the devil **deceives** is when he comes in the likeness of somebody or something which apparently causes a person to "be more like God" and/or to be "good." But the Bible somberly warns us:

"There is a way which seemeth right (i.e., good) unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death." (Proverbs 14:12)

THE PROBLEM & THE SOLUTION **(THE BAIT AND THE TRAP)**

Let's now pause and think about all this, particularly as it pertains to the Religious Right - remembering all the while that what follows could have only occurred to a people who have given up on seeing themselves as subjects of a heavenly kingdom, and have instead grown accustomed to thinking of themselves as citizens of this present world.

A very wise person once said,

"Satan's greatest ruse is to first create a problem, and then offer the solution. **The problem created is the bait; the poison is in the solution.**"

In the case of the Religious Right, the problem which Satan has created consists largely in what is perceived (and perhaps rightfully so) as a fundamental moral collapse of the society at large over the last three to four decades: specifically, the breakdown of the traditional family, the concomitant upsurge of single parent families, the growth of militant feminism, the acceptance of homosexuality as an "alternate life-style," Congressional and judicial acquiescence to the insane concept of women in combat, the increase in crime of all sorts, the rise of sexual permissiveness, the acceptance of "abortion on demand" - the list seems endless. When all this is combined with the new multicultural *chic* and the "political correctness" that is currently in vogue - a style of thinking which arrogantly and disdainfully denigrates the nation's older European-based, Christian civilization - it's enough to create a cultural firestorm, an enormous rage which has emotionally seized control of countless numbers of evangelicals and blinded them to their own eschatology (or doctrine of "end times").

The problem Satan has created seems compelling, persuasive, convincing; it demands action. The bait is set. The solution? - evangelicals must "enter the lists" (or arena); they must involve themselves and their churches politically to "stop the madness." **The trap is sprung!**

Without realizing it, they have fallen victim to the same trap that German Christians fell victim to sixty years ago with regard to Hitler.



The problem Satan has created seems compelling, persuasive, convincing; it demands action. The bait is set. The solution? - evangelicals must "enter the lists" (or arena); they must involve themselves and their churches politically to "stop the madness." The trap is sprung! Without realizing it, they have fallen victim to the same trap that German Christians fell victim to sixty years ago with regard to Hitler.

PART 2: APOSTASY - PAST AS PROLOGUE TO THE FUTURE

FOLLOWING IN GERMANY'S FOOTSTEPS

Germany's defeat during the First World War had led to the rise of a liberal-left, anti-Christian, anti-right parliamentary coalition which seemed to hold in contempt all the values of "Old Germany." Indeed, wherever German Christians looked in the 1920s and early '30s, they found little to comfort them: the cherished national values of hard work, self-discipline, and patriotism embodied in the conservative Lutheran and Catholic value systems of the "Old Reich" were being openly undermined and ridiculed. Pacifist and feminist novels which seemed to deride manhood - and men in general - abounded; on the stage, incest, pederasty or - at the very least - marital infidelity were glorified. Illustrated magazines featured nude dancers and international gangsters, frequently shown in company with each other; movies like the *Blue Angel* (Marlene Dietrich) and entertainers like Josephine Baker, who could be found cavorting naked on the stage in Berlin as often as she could be seen in Paris, corrupted the younger generation by glamorizing sadism and rape. Prostitutes and their pimps were the main heroes of the day. Indeed, it appeared as if



only criminals, the blasphemous, and homosexuals were of any interest to modern culture. It seemed as though Berlin had taken over from Paris as the world capital of lasciviousness and obscenity.

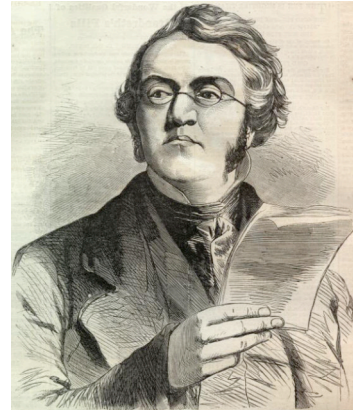
A kind of left-wing, liberal excess - the *Kabarett Kultur* - dominated the media, a liberalism which glorified sexual and cultural indulgence and which consigned the values of "ordinary folk" - which the liberal intelligentsia claimed were either stupid or barbaric, "*das platte, all zu platte Volk*" - to the rubbish heap. The literati were in command! - enemies of order, the profiteers of chaos! Like tubercular bacilli, they affected all the weak cells in the body politic. Rootless themselves, they bitterly attacked any manifestation of manly patriotism and healthy morality. They had no shame or modesty, they were the apostles of sensationalism forever in search of new trends and fashions, however worthless.

German Christians regarded the left-wing intellectuals as a noxious and cancerous element - more dangerous than gangsters. Why? - because ordinary criminals were merely engaged in offenses against property and persons, whereas the left-wing intelligentsia was helping to bring about the spiritual murder of an entire nation.

In assessing the moral and cultural decay which surrounded them, most German Christians had come to believe that this pathology of rot and decadence was by no means accidental - it was a concerted and centrally planned process - *a deliberate conspiracy* by socialists and left-wing, *avant-garde* radicals to undermine everything that was still healthy in Germany so that the country could never again recover and rise to greatness. Their stranglehold had to be broken to make a cultural recovery possible. But in attempting to set things right, in attempting to end the left's stranglehold on Germany, German Christians helped to create a nightmare which ultimately not only consumed them, but Germany and German Christianity as well. **In the end, the solution was far, far worse than the problem which had at first seemed to necessitate it.**

It's in the light of this kind of reality that William Thackeray once said:

"The wicked are wicked no doubt, and they go astray and they fall and they come to their own deserts; but who can tell the mischief the [so-called] virtuous do."



William Thackeray once said: "The wicked are wicked no doubt, and they go astray and they fall and they come to their own deserts; but who can tell the mischief the (so-called) virtuous do."

EVANGELICAL MISCONCEPTIONS RE. GERMAN CHRISTIANITY

Today, it is commonly believed in evangelical circles in America that Hitler was a "New Age" theosophist and that the reason German Christians had been seduced by him is because they had earlier abandoned the "fundamentals" of their faith - largely as a result of the "Higher Criticism of the Bible" which was then in vogue throughout fashionable and intellectual sections of German society. **But that simply is not true!** The so-called "Higher Criticism" had no more taken hold on the great majority of German Christians than it had on the great mass of American Christians. Average German Christians - as opposed to some church intellectuals - had remained as "fundamental" in their faith as they had ever been; and Hitler, while he may indeed have been a theosophist in his "inner most being" - and shown himself as such to his inner circle of friends and associates - was extremely careful to present himself as a traditional "Christian conservative" to the German people (see Adolf Hitler, *Hitler's Secret Conversations 1941-1944* and Ernst Hanfstaengl, Hitler: *The Missing Years*).

The fact of the matter is, the public *persona* that Hitler constantly cultivated was that of a "Christian Savior" commissioned by God to save the nation from the liberal rot which had overtaken it. Indeed, Hitler - in his first radio address to the German people after coming to power - announced,

"The national government ... will maintain and defend the foundations on which the power of our nation rests. **It will offer strong protection to Christianity as the very basis of our collective morality.**"

Hardly the words of an outspoken theosophist!

Two weeks later, on February 16, 1933, Hitler went even further in affirming his devotion to Christianity. In a speech at Stuttgart, Hitler asserted,

"Today Christians ... stand at the head of Germany ... I pledge that I never will tie myself to parties who want to destroy Christianity ... We want to fill our culture again with the Christian spirit ... We want to burn out all the recent immoral developments in literature, in the theater, and in the press - in short, we want to burn out the poison of immorality which has entered into our whole life and culture as a result of liberal excess during the past ... [few] years."



Thus, while it may be true that - despite the rhetoric and the *persona* - Hitler was no Christian, and that evangelicals may be correct in pointing this fact out, evangelicals are still wrong - *very wrong* - in believing that German Christians themselves were anything but sincere and "fundamental" in their faith - and the fact is, they are being very self-serving in assuming otherwise. Why? - because it obscures the real reason German Christians were seduced by Hitler - why they didn't really investigate what actually lay beneath Hitler's public *persona*; after all, it wouldn't have been difficult to do. The evidence - despite Hitler's effort to hide it - was easy to find. **The obvious reason is, they didn't want to!**

"Today Christians ... stand at the head of Germany ... I pledge that I never will tie myself to parties who want to destroy Christianity ... We want to fill our culture again with the Christian spirit ... We want to burn out all the recent immoral developments in literature, in the theater, and in the press - in short, we want to burn out the poison of immorality which has entered into our whole life and culture as a result of liberal excess during the past ... [few] years."

They wanted to believe Hitler! - and anything which got in the way was swept aside! Their perceived need to be rescued from a liberalism which they believed had run amuck had so blinded them that they *purposefully* ignored any evidence which suggested that Hitler might be something else than what he had presented himself as - and they denounced all those who attempted to uncover the real truth as "unchristian" and "unpatriotic!"

THE ROAD TO HELL IS NOT TRANSVERSED IN ONE GIANT STEP

In light of all this, the question that fairly begs to be asked is this: Are American evangelicals making the same mistake German Christians made sixty years ago with Hitler? In refusing to examine the motives behind their secular allies in the political and economic right, by condemning Christians who attempt to do so as being "unloving and uncaring," by denigrating those who question the spiritual wisdom - as opposed to the political wisdom - of a Catholic / evangelical alliance, etc. aren't American evangelicals going down the same road taken by German Christians sixty years ago? The answer, obviously, is yes!

The road that leads to Hell is not transversed with one giant step - but rather with innumerable small ones, each insignificant in itself, but when combined with countless others leads inevitably to the final destination. So also with the little compromises evangelicals are making today. Each compromise in itself is not much, and if left to itself would probably not count for anything - little steps, such as -

- When Chuck Swindall, president of Dallas Theological Seminary, agrees to participate in the activities of the "Promise Keepers" - never mind the fact that the organization encompasses within its membership people who are connected to groups inimical to the wider interests of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, and when one of its chief spokesmen, Robert Hicks, refers to Jesus as "a phallic kind of guy" [**the phallus is the erect male sexual organ, i.e., the erect penis (Hicks, *The Six Stages of Manhood*, pg. 24)**]. And it should be noted in this connection that despite the fact that the Promise Keepers no longer pass out this book at their assemblies and conferences, they continue to promote it to all their devotees, and it still forms the basis around which their small home gatherings are arranged - **and Swindall should know this; and if he doesn't, it's because he has purposefully chosen not to.**
- When Tim LaHaye accepts money from the Moonies - never mind the fact that the Moonies claim that Christ had sex with the women who followed Him.
- When Paul Crouch, President of TBN, says that he is going to "shoot" those who stand in the way of a Catholic / evangelical rapprochement - never mind the fact that Catholics have done nothing to renounce the heresies which impelled the Reformers to break with them in the first place.
- When prominent evangelical pastors throughout the country allow Death Squad leaders such as Mario and Adolfo Calero to speak at their churches - never mind the fact that the Caleros are connected to some of the most notorious Death Squads in South and Central America.

All these are little steps in and of themselves - but when combined, take us as evangelicals down a path, the destination of which is a dark and very evil place.

THE TRIFLING NATURE OF TODAY'S CHRISTIANITY

When one begins to perceive this present world as one's permanent abode, then one cannot help but try to make oneself comfortable in it - which leads one invariably to embrace a form of Christianity that is frivolous and superficial, the kind of silly and trifling Christianity embraced by Atlanta preacher Bruce Wilkinson in his book, *The Prayer of Jabez* (a book so inane and foolish - even **CHILDISH** - that it fairly boggles the mind).

The book celebrates **GREED** as a guiding principle in the Christian life, and presents God as nothing more than a "**SUGAR-DADDY**" whose sole object in life is to make Christians happy. For example, Wilkinson writes:

"If you didn't ask God for a blessing yesterday, you didn't get all that you were supposed to have. And be sure to ask **EXTRAVAGANTLY**, for you nothing but God's fullest blessings [meaning, of course, **MATERIAL** blessings] will do. Don't worry about coming across as selfish, for this is exactly the kind of request our Father longs to hear ... you will be so overwhelmed ... that you will find yourself saying, 'It's too much! Hold some of your blessings back'."

What is Wilkinson talking about here? Certainly not Christ and the Gospel - unless he has in mind **ANOTHER** Christ and **ANOTHER** Gospel (Gal. 1:6-7); a Christ the Bible knows nothing about. Jesus taught,



BRUCE WILKINSON

"If you didn't ask God for a blessing yesterday, you didn't get all that you were supposed to have. And be sure to ask **EXTRAVAGANTLY**, for you nothing but God's fullest blessings (meaning, of course, **MATERIAL** blessings) will do. Don't worry about coming across as selfish, for this is exactly the kind of request our Father longs to hear ... you will be so overwhelmed ... that you will find yourself saying, 'It's too much! Hold some of your blessings back'."

"If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come and follow me." (Matt. 19:21)

AND,

"If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me." (Matt. 16:24)

AND,

"Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal:

"But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal:

"For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also." (Matt. 6:19-21)

AND,

"No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

"Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment?" (Matt. 6:24-25)

AND,

Finally the prophet Habakkuk writes,

"Although the fig tree shall not blossom, neither shall fruit be in the vines; the labour of the olive shall fail, and the fields shall yield no meat; the flock shall be cut off from the fold, and there shall be no herd in the stalls:

"Yet I will rejoice in the LORD, I will joy in the God of my salvation." (Hab. 3:17-18)

What's Habakkuk saying here? - he is saying that what **REALLY** "marks out" the man of God is his ability to **REJOICE** in the Lord when everything else is collapsing around him - hardly the Gospel according to Wilkinson.

And Wilkinson isn't alone here! The sad fact of the matter is, the type of Christianity that is being peddled to Christians today by the pastors of today's church is the fatuous and superficial kind where T-shirts promote "J. Christ" rather than "J. Crew," "Fruit of the Spirit" rather than "Fruit of the Loom," "Christ Supreme" instead of "Krispy Kreme" and where there are endless "spin-offs" to things like the *Prayer of Jabez* generated specifically for the sake of money: For example, a devotional volume to the *Prayer of Jabez*, an illustrated gift edition, a journal, a Bible study course, "Prayer of Jabez for Women," and "Prayer of Jabez for Little Ones" ("Dear God, Please bless me in a great big way!"), not to mention greeting cards, calendars, mugs, mousepads, etc.

NOTE

BRUCE WILKINSON says: "If you didn't ask God for a blessing yesterday, you didn't get all that you were supposed to have. And be sure to ask EX-TRAVAGANTLY, for you nothing but God's fullest blessings (meaning, of course, MATERIAL blessings) will do

But the PROPHET HABAKKUK writes, "Although the fig tree shall not blossom, neither shall fruit be in the vines; the labour of the olive shall fail, and the fields shall yield no meat; the flock shall be cut off from the fold, and there shall be no herd in the stalls: Yet I will rejoice in the LORD, I will joy in the God of my salvation." (Hab. 3:17-18)



PART 3: APOSTASY - AUCTIONING GOD'S SERVANTS OFF TO THE DEVIL

MAKING CHRISTIANS VULNERABLE TO ELITE MACHINATION AND STRATAGEMS

The Wilkinson brand of Christianity is the kind of Christianity where it's "cool to be a Christian" - and **PROFITABLE**; where Christianity is licensed and "bottled" for sale, and where individual Christians are reduced to the status of consumers for whatever their pastors are selling.

Ultimately, the great hazard Christians face in all this is the danger of being reduced to a "commodity" themselves - a "**PRODUCT TO BE MERCHANDISED BY THEIR PASTORS TO THE HIGHEST BIDDER**". And who exactly is the highest bidder? - the elites, of course. And sadly, that's precisely what is happening - Christians are being "sold out" by their pastors and leaders to the elites. [Please see our article, "[The Rich Have Seized Control of the Church](#)."]

The tragic fact of the matter is, the leadership of today's church view their parishioners as a passive assembly of **AUTOMATONS** to be "bought and sold" at auction for the benefit of whatever their elite masters in the Economic Right are interested in at any particular moment.

And what is it that the pastors receive in return? - **MONEY**! Lots and lots of **MONEY**! For example,



The tragic fact of the matter is, the leadership of today's church view their parishioners as a passive assembly of AUTOMATONS to be "bought and sold" at auction for the benefit of whatever their elite masters in the Economic Right are interested in at any particular moment.

- Pat Robertson receives massive amounts of money from the John M. Olin Foundation, a channel for elite money that emanates out of the armaments industry.
- Then there is D. James Kennedy who receives money from the Carthage Foundation and the Allegheny Foundation, both of which are controlled by Richard Mellon Scaife, heir to the Mellon banking fortune, as well as Gulf Oil and Alcoa money. Kennedy also receives financial backing from the Lynde and Harry Bradley Foundation, another elite channel for money that flows out of the electronics industry.
- Then there is Moonie money that goes to support people like Jerry Falwell, James Dobson, the Rutherford Institute, and a whole host of other "big names" in the Christian world - and this is just a tiny sampling of what's going on.

Now, does one really think that all this elite money is going to the church without any strings attached? Come on now! - what strictly religious connection does the armaments industry have with Pat Robertson; or the banking industry with Jerry Falwell? Be honest here! - what intersection of interests is there between the liquor industry (Adolf Coors - another funder of many in today's church), the electronics industry, and the oil industry on one hand, and the poor Carpenter of Nazareth on the other hand? Be honest! [Please see

our article on Richard Mellon Scaife entitled, "[Richard Mellon Scaife: The Evil That Money Can Do](#)" for a look into the convoluted world that connects elite money to the leaders of today's church."]

PASTORS AS SLAVE AUCTIONEERS

The pastors act as slave auctioneers; the slaves they are selling are their own followers (and the votes that go with them at election time); and the buyers are the "worthies" of the various economic elites. Do the elites need support for "Welfare Reform" so that there is more "corporate welfare" for them and less welfare for the needy? Do they require support for their incessant war against the poor in the jungles of Colombia and Venezuela? The pastors whip up their parishioners in support of these agendas. Do the elites need "warm bodies" to demonstrate for "their man" (i.e., George Bush) in Florida - the pastors deliver. Whatever the elites want, the pastors see that they get - and oftentimes, what the elites want runs counter to the **REAL** interests of their parishioners.



The pastors act as slave auctioneers; the slaves they are selling are their own followers (and the votes that go with them at election time); and the buyers are the "worthies" of the various economic elites.

Indeed, what the pastors are doing is conspiring with the moneyed elites of this world to sell **LIES** to their own followers - lies that are as false and self-serving as the claims of cigarette companies that nicotine is nonaddictive and cigarette smoke poses no health hazard.

WHOSOEVER IS A FRIEND OF THE WORLD IS GOD'S ENEMY

And now we get to the meat of things - what apostasy ultimately produces: It transforms God's servants into **ENEMIES** of the Kingdom of God. And why is that? - because apostasy makes God's servants "friends of this world," and the Bible says:

"WHOSOEVER ... WILL BE A FRIEND OF THE WORLD IS THE ENEMY OF GOD."
(James 4:4)

These are those about whom Paul said,

"For I have told you often before, and I say it again now with tears in my eyes, there are many who walk along the Christian road who have become the enemies of the cross of Christ. Their future is ... loss ... **[for] all they think about is this life here on earth.**" [Phil. 3:18-19 (Amp.)]

PART 4: APOSTASY - MAKING ISRAEL AND THE CHURCH SERVANTS IN THE HOUSEHOLD OF THE DEVIL

MAKING A PACT WITH THE DEVIL

AND ISN'T THIS EXACTLY WHAT HAS HAPPENED TO BOTH ISRAEL AND THE CHURCH?

The very real fact of the matter is, the American New World Order System has no closer allies than Israel

and the church. My heavens! - what a **SHAME** all this is: that Israel, about whom God said, "... **I AM A FATHER TO ISRAEL**," and the church about whom the Bible says "... **CHRIST ... LOVED THE CHURCH AND GAVE HIMSELF UP FOR HER**" should be counted now as God's enemies; for **BOTH** have made a pact with Babylon, and its in Babylon's strength that both have sought refuge.

One cannot, however, be Babylon's friend and at the same time call himself a friend of God. Again, it's not without reason that the Bible says, "*Whosoever ... will be a friend of the world [over which sits Babylon the Great] is the enemy of God.*" (James 4:4)



Both Israel and the church have made a pact with the devil by becoming friends with the United States

COMMITTEE FOR THE LIBERATION OF IRAQ

And what slavish retainers both have become in Babylon's service - especially as that service has impacted on the expansion of the American New World Order System. What close partners both have become in America's brutal and bloody effort to subjugate the earth.

And one doesn't have to look far for examples: Take what Jim Lobe, who writes for Inter Press Services, discovered insofar as the elite's effort to secure Christian support for their destructive war in Iraq; he reported that a small group of well-placed **AMERICAN NEW WORLD ORDER** devotees with close ties to (then) Defense Secretary Donald Rumsfeld, (then) Vice President Dick Cheney, and (then) Deputy Defense Secretary Paul Wolfowitz was largely responsible for rallying Christian support for the invasion of

NOTE

In describing the work of the Committee for the Liberation of Iraq we are fully cognizant that this committee is today somewhat passé. Nonetheless, the workings of this committee describes perfectly what is going on in other Religious Right / Political Right institutions – even what's going on today in the Sarah Palin's Tea Party Movement.

Iraq. They called themselves the "**COMMITTEE FOR THE LIBERATION OF IRAQ**," and they brazenly set themselves up in offices on Capitol Hill.

The new "Committee on Iraq" was a spin-off from the "Project For A New American Century" (PNAC), an elite American New World Order "front group" consisting of one primary group, and two lackey groups who - like the "lapdogs" they have become - exist off the scraps of food that fall from time to time from their master's table.

THE PRIMARY GROUP :

Elements from the **POLITICAL AND ECONOMIC RIGHT** (for example, Richard Perle, Frank Gaffney, the late Jeane Kirkpatrick, Michael Ledeen, Marc Reuel Gerecht, etc., as well as elite economic groups that revolve around Exxon/Mobile, Chevron, Haliburton, Philips, etc.).

THE TWO LACKY GROUPS:

- **CONSERVATIVE JEWS** dedicated to cementing a military alliance between the United States and Israel (for example, Midge Deckter and the Norman Podhoretz "circle" centered around the conservative Jewish publication, *Commentary*).
- **CHRISTIAN EVANGELICAL "HEAVY HITTERS"** - the group that forms the **CORE** political constituency for today's Republican Party. [Please see our article, "[Inside the American New World Order System](#)."]

All of these groups in one way or another see in the very power America wields proof of America's "exceptionalism," and each group hopes to harness U.S. power for its own purposes, whether for -

- Economic aggrandizement,
 - Security for the state of Israel
- or
- The expansion of Christianity.



The naivety of both Israel and the church in making an alliance with right-wing business and political groups is astonishing and reveals how blind both Israel and the church have become.

Moreover, none of these groups shrinks from the possibility of having to use the "barrel of a gun" to promote its interests. Finally, each of these groups has come to believe that Islam is a force to be reckoned with insofar as the promotion of its interests are concerned, and, therefore, each is fervently working for Islam's diminution, and even - if possible - its destruction.

The members of PNAC believe in **POWER**, and they feel that power has a "**USE IT OR LOSE IT**" peculiarity about it. They do not intend to lose it; they mean to use it.

PROMOTING A WAR BETWEEN ISRAEL AND THE U.S (ON THE ONE SIDE) AND ISLAM (ON THE OTHER SIDE)

To this end, PNAC is dedicated to promoting America's "War on Terrorism" as a conflict between Jews and Christians (on the one hand) and Islam (on the other hand). They are intent on widening the so-called "War on Terror," and eventually turning it into a **CIVILIZATION CONFLICT** through which they hope

to eliminate Islam once and for all. This is, of course, precisely what such Christian leaders as Pat Robertson, D. James Kennedy, Jerry Falwell, John Hagee and all those evangelical Christian groups connected to the "Apostles and Prophets Movement," and the so-called "International Christian Embassy in Israel" are fervently hoping for. [Please see our article, "[Radical Islam](#);" please also see our article on the International Christian Embassy, "[The Superman Theology of the International Christian Embassy's Feast of Tabernacles](#)."]

The immediate purpose of the "Committee for the Liberation of Iraq" was to mold the Christian evangelical community into a political counterweight against those forces on the Left that are increasingly speaking out against the war - **AND IT IS FROM THIS PERSPECTIVE THAT ONE MUST JUDGE THE MEAN-SPIRITED STATEMENTS THAT ARE ESCALATING OUT OF THE LEADERSHIP OF THE CHRISTIAN COMMUNITY CONCERNING ISLAM AND THE INEVITABILITY OF WAR BETWEEN CHRISTIANITY AND THE MUSLIM WORLD.** [Please see our article, "[The Coming War in Iraq: What It's Really All About](#)."]

These statements were not "happenstance" nor coincidental. They were part of a carefully orchestrated campaign to prepare Christians to back such a war - a war whose REAL aim was to capture and then control the oil wealth of Iraq (and, *ipso facto*, the Middle East) for the benefit of America's oil elites, just as the overriding aim of the War in Afghanistan is to capture and control the oil wealth of Central Asia for those same elites. [Please see our article, "[The War in Afghanistan: It's Not What You Think](#)."]

THE PROJECT FOR A NEW AMERICAN CENTURY (PNAC)

PNAC (again, the "mother-group" for the "Committee for the Liberation of Iraq") was formed in 1997 by such Christian, Jewish, and financial elitists as Elliot Abrams, Gary Bauer, William Bennett, Dick Cheney, Vin Weber, Norman Podhoretz, Eliot Cohen, Midge Decter, Paul Dobriansky, Steve Forbes, Paul Wolfowitz and Donald Rumsfeld - all of whom were aghast at the timidity of Clinton's foreign policy in advancing the interests of the American New World Order System - especially in Central Asia and the Middle East.



The members of PNAC believe in POWER, and they feel that power has a "USE IT OR LOSE IT" peculiarity about it. They do not intend to lose it; they mean to use it. The members of PNAC view the power America wields as proof of America's "exceptionalism."

PNAC' statement of purpose reads in part:

"American foreign and defense policy is adrift ... We aim to change this. We aim to make the case and rally support for **AMERICAN GLOBAL LEADERSHIP** [read: the American New World Order System] ... We need to accept responsibility for America's UNIQUE role in preserving and EXTENDING an **INTERNATIONAL ORDER** friendly to our security, our prosperity, and our

principles [read: 'we need to create a universal economic and political order dominated by the United States and dedicated to making client-states out of the nations of the rest of the world']."

PNAC's BLOODY ROOTS

PNAC stems out of the same Evangelical Christian, Conservative Catholic, and New World Order political and economic elements in the United States that helped America fight and win its Contra War in Central and South America in the 1980s - such as the "Committee for the Free World," "Prodemca," "Friends of the Democratic Center in Central America" and last, and most importantly, the "**INSTITUTE FOR RELIGION AND DEMOCRACY**" (IRD). There is a history here to which the "Committee for the Liberation of Iraq" was connected - one with a very bloody and cruel past, and one that threatens to besmire the reputations of both Israel and the church. [Please see our two articles, "[Colombia: America's New Vietnam](#)" and "[The Spread of America's New World Order System Northward from Latin America to the United States](#)."]]

The IRD is particularly instructive concerning the **DEADLY** mindset behind what's been animating this history, and what the "Committee for the Liberation of Iraq" was **REALLY** up to insofar as the War in Iraq was concerned, and the part the American elites expect Israel and the church to play in the events that are even now unfolding in the Middle East. Twenty-five years ago, when the IRD was formed, one of its primary purposes was to bring to bear the weight of the evangelical Christian community in support of the Contra War and stifle what the elites considered to be the "pernicious" influence of "Liberation Theology" in Latin America which - as we reported in our article, "[The Death Squads: Bringing in the Kingdom of God through Terror, Torture, and Death](#)" - had taken hold in Argentina and Brazil and was rapidly spilling outward and threatening to spark a socialist conflagration throughout the region. [This is, of course, **EXACTLY** what the elites expected out of the "Committee for the Liberation of Iraq" insofar as their war in the Middle East was (is) concerned - i.e., to stifle the opposition of the Left in this country to the so-called "War on Terror," of which the War in Iraq was only one aspect.]



The "**INSTITUTE FOR RELIGION AND DEMOCRACY**" (IRD) has an extremely bloody and cruel past, and one that threatens to besmire the reputations of both Israel and the church, and its past history reveals the manner in which the American elites expect Israel and the church to play in the events that are unfolding in the Middle East.

Liberation Theology was a new and **RADICAL** Christian theology promulgated at first by left-wing Catholic clerics and later by liberal Protestant groups, and it was rapidly taking hold in the innumerable urban shanty towns and poverty-stricken rural communities throughout Central and South America. It was an incendiary gospel that linked socialism to Christian theology in a revolutionary blend which was proving to be particularly attractive to the peasants of Latin America - and it attracted them in a way which the traditional, more secular brand of Marxism-Leninism had never been able to do. [Please see our article, "[Liberation Theology, the Vatican, and the CIA: Ghosts and Phantoms](#)."]]

THE WORK OF THE INSTITUTE FOR RELIGION AND DEMOCRACY

What the IRD did was to coordinate the efforts of conservative Catholics [e.g., Catholics like General Vernon Walters (Deputy Chief of the CIA), Zbigniew Brzezinski (former Advisor to the President on National Security Affairs), Bill Simon (former Secretary of the Treasury), Michael Novak, John Neuhaus, etc., as well as "lay" Catholic groups such as P-2 and *Opus Dei* (all of which had rallied around the new conservative Pope, John Paul II)] and the **EVANGELICAL CHRISTIAN COMMUNITY** to fight the efforts by the left-wing Catholic clergy. What they (i.e., the liberal Catholic clergy) were doing that the

evangelicals and the conservative Catholics found so offensive was - in conjunction with liberal Protestant groups - fighting to break the strangle-hold on the poor (about 85 percent of the region's population) by the wealthy oligarchies that controlled Central and South America in the interests of the American New World Order System. [Please see our article, "[The Catholic / Evangelical Rapprochement](#)."]]

The IRD was responsible for providing the ideological and **RELIGIOUS** framework for waging the **MURDEROUS** war against the adherents of Liberation Theology in El Salvador, Guatemala and Nicaragua. In addition, others who operated in the political and religious nexus out from which the IRD sprang had been deeply involved in overthrowing the popularly elected Allende government in Chile, the Goulert government in Brazil and installing brutal right-wing dictatorships in their stead as well as similar dictatorships in Uruguay, Bolivia, Colombia, and Peru - **ALL IN THE NAME OF CHRIST**.

Now think about the **STUPIDITY** of all this insofar as evangelical Christians are concerned! In the interest of fighting against the "New Age" ideology (theology) supposedly espoused by the adherents of Liberation Theology and mainline Protestantism, Christian evangelicals allied themselves with groups such as P-2 and *Opus Dei* (whose conservative Catholic ideologies are much more **ABHORRENT** and **DEMONIC** than anything the adherents of Liberation Theology have ever dreamed up) to "take back **"DOMINION"** in Central and South America for "Christ and the church." [This kind of thinking - the kind that lies behind the notion that Christians must engage the forces of evil in this world "THROUGH THE BARREL OF A GUN" - is called "Dominionism;" please see our article on "[Dominionism](#)."]]

BUT SUCH THINKING IS OXYMORONIC! - i.e., allying oneself with P-2 and *Opus Dei* to fight against the adherents of Liberation Theology. **IT'S KIND OF LIKE ALLYING ONESELF WITH BEELZEBUB TO FIGHT SATAN.** It's ridiculous! At the very least, the followers of Liberation Theology had the interests of the poor at heart; *Opus Dei* and P-2 - together with the wealthy oligarchies they support - have **NEVER** had the interests of the poor in mind; their only concern has been for themselves and the interests of the American New World Order System that preserves them from the rage of the 85 percent of the population they suppress and domineer.



In the interest of fighting against the supposedly "New Age" ideology (theology) espoused by the adherents of Liberation Theology and mainline Protestantism, Christian evangelicals allied themselves with groups such as P-2 and *Opus Dei* (whose conservative Catholic ideologies are much more **ABHORRENT** and **DEMONIC** than anything the adherents of Liberation Theology have ever dreamed up) and the CIA to "take back **"DOMINION"** in Central and South America for "Christ and the church."

CREATING A SHAM PRETEXT FOR WAR IN CENTRAL AND SOUTH AMERICA

To put it plainly, what the IRD did was paint the battle for control of Central and South America - which was in reality a struggle between the indigenous populations of the region (on the one hand) and the American New World Order System (on the other hand) - as a war between "atheistic Communism" and the "Occultic Forces" of the "New Age (again, on the one hand) and Christianity and God's so-called

"Redeemer Nation" (on the other hand). And they succeeded in convincing Christian evangelicals as to the "veracity" of their ruse.

Indeed, even today in countless numbers of evangelical missionary groups (e.g., Wycliffe, YWAM, New Tribes, etc.) and Christian churches throughout the country, the defeat of Liberation Theology in Central and South America, [and the concomitant overthrow of the Allende government in Chile, the "reduction" of the Sandanistas in Nicaragua, and the earlier destruction of the Goulert government in Brazil (and the resultant installation of **MURDEROUS** dictatorships in their stead)] is hailed as a great victory for Christianity over the forces of Occultism and the New Age.

For example, Beverly LaHaye never tires of "trumpeting" her part in the overthrow of the Goulert government in Brazil; and we (i.e., Antipas) never cease to receive letters from now retired evangelical missionaries who served in Brazil, Guatemala, Argentina, Uruguay, Bolivia, El Salvador, etc. who - sadly - took sides with the death squads in their murderous campaign against the Leftists of the area during that era. Their thinking at the time ran along the lines of Cubie Ward of Paralife Ministries when he said,

"Killing for the joy of it is wrong, but killing because it is necessary to fight against an anti-Christ system ... is not only right, but the duty of every Christian."

OR the evangelical pastors who defended the **HOMICIDAL** rampage of their Contra "parishioners" by saying,

"... they don't massacre people ... They massacre demons, and these people are demon possessed: they're communists ..."

OR the businessman who praised the work of the death squads as the work of "dedicated Christians," and who further said:

"Don't say it was I who said so, but the victory over ... [the Left] began the day my wife said, 'There's no way out except to kill these monsters [i.e., the peasant adherents to Liberation Theology]: we've got to kill them all'!"

OR the work of death squad functionaries who stuck bayonets up the vaginas of their female captives, cut off the penises and testicles of their male prisoners, and fried their captives over a bed of hot coals on pieces of corrugated metal like hamburgers on a frying pan - and then sang in the choir of their churches the next Sunday as they did at the evangelical Christian *Verbo* Church in Guatemala City.

THE SHAME OF IT ALL

For these reasons and much more, Christians have become, as Psalm 44:14 suggests,

"... a byword [i.e., a terse saying or adage] among the heathen [i.e., the unbelievers], a shaking of the head among the people" [at least insofar as the poor of this world are concerned] - and because of these monstrous wrongs, the Lord's Name has been ... profaned among the heathen [i.e., unbelievers], whither we went." (Ezek. 36:22)

What a **SHAM** we as Christians "bought into" - believing (really, "pretending") that the war the American New World Order System was conducting against Liberation Theology in the jungles of Central and South America was a war of "good" vs. "evil;" of Christianity vs.



THE SHAME OF IT ALL

As a result of their alliance with the Right, Christians have become, as Psalm 44:14 suggests, "... a byword [i.e., a terse saying or adage] among the heathen [i.e., the unbelievers], a shaking of the head among the people" [at least insofar as the poor of this world are concerned] - and because of these monstrous wrongs, the Lord's Name has been ... profaned among the heathen [i.e., unbelievers], whither we went." (Ezek. 36:22)

Occultism and the New Age; of God vs. the devil! - **AND NOW THE SAME GROUP THAT SOLD US THAT "BILL OF GOODS" IS TRYING TO SELL THIS SHAM TO US ALL OVER AGAIN, THIS TIME IN THE MIDDLE EAST.** And once again, Christians are falling for this deceit, just as they did twenty-five years ago.

What **UTTER** and **COMPLETE** toadies we have been made by the rich of this world! - i.e., by the elites who control Exxon-Mobil, Philips, Chevron, Haliburton, etc. The sad truth is, America is sending its young men and women off to the Middle East to fight and die for the sake of Chevron Oil's "bottom line," and the evangelical Christian community is not only standing on the side-lines cheering, but offering up its own children as "storm troopers" for Exxon-Mobile and Philips as well.

JEWS TOO HAVE FALLEN VICTIM TO THIS PLOY

And - sadly - it's not just Christians who have been reduced to the status of toadies and boot-lickers to the rich in the American New World Order System; Jews have descended to that level as well. One has only to peruse the membership of the "Project For A New American Century" [again, the "mother group" for the new "Committee for the Liberation of Iraq" and the successor group to the "**INSTITUTE FOR RELIGION AND DEMOCRACY**" (IRD)] to discover that there is not much difference between the Jews and the Christians in this matter; both groups have sold themselves out as servants to the moneyed elites of this world, and specifically to the American New World Order System. This is the kind of thing that the prophet Hosea was talking about when he said:

"... [they have] played the harlot ... for ... [they have] said, I will go after my lovers, that give me my bread and my water, my wool and my flax, mine oil and my drink." (Hos. 2:5)

That's pretty harsh! But that's what harlotry is - selling yourself for money and the "good things of life." And why did the Jews do this? - because, as Hosea said, their "lovers" took care of them! And isn't that ostensibly what the American New World Order System is doing for the Jews and the state of Israel? - just as it is doing for Christians? Of course it is. But there's a price the Jews are having to pay for that so-called "care" - and that is, they must forever "stand at the ready," like any good servant must, to be summoned anytime, anywhere to "service the needs" of the elites who control the American New World Order System.

THERE IS A PRICE IN INFAMY TO BE PAID WHEN ONE SERVES THE AMERICAN NEW WORLD ORDER

Sadly, most Jews - and for that matter, most evangelicals - have very little idea of how far and wide over the globe this service has taken the Jews and Israel - or the depths of indecency and shame into which it has plunged them. But the poor of the earth know; those whom the American New World Order System has oppressed and domineered - they know. They know the depths of infamy and immorality to which Israel has been plunged - all for the sake of "servicing the needs" of the American New World Order System!

THAT'S WHAT HAPPENS WHEN ONE SERVES THE DEVIL AND THE INTERESTS OF HELL. [Please see our article, "[The Search for Babylon; What Do the Scriptures Say.](#)"] One acquires a



THE DISGUST OF IT ALL!

**ISRAEL: Kissing the feet of their
American dominatrix**

reputation for scandal and shame - and contrary to what most might think today, Israel was not always held in such contempt by the poor and dispossessed of the World. The fact is, most of the early support Israel received in the precincts of the United Nations came from those nations and peoples which we today call the "Third World" - and oftentimes it came in defiance of the machinations of the anti-Semitic whims of the U.S. State Department. The fact is, in the beginning, the poor of the world thought of Israel as one of them. They embraced Israel as an example of what the "little people" of the world could do if they stood their ground against the rich and powerful.

WHAT HAPPENED?

What caused everything to be turned around to the extent that it has been? What caused the "little people" of the world to turn away from Israel? What caused Israel to be numbered among those nations of the world who trample the poor of the world underfoot, rather than as a nation who stood up against the world's oppressors?

Most Jews and evangelical Christians think that it was the result of Arab propaganda. To a certain extent, that's true - at least insofar as the peoples and nations of the Middle East are concerned. Unfortunately, however, that doesn't tell the whole story. Why, for example, do the blacks of South Africa, Angola, the Congo, etc. hate the Jews and Israel so much? Why do the indigenous populations of Latin America despise them to the degree that they do? What's going on here? The rage these people feel towards Israel as expressed wherever the Left demonstrates against the oppressive policies of such institutions of the American New World Order System as the IMF, the World Bank, and the WTO cannot be explained away simply as the result of Arab propaganda. Not even anti-Semitism can explain it away.

No! - there is a much deeper and sinister reason, and one that most Jews and Israelis are loathe to admit - though deep down in their heart they surely must have an inkling if they think about it to any great degree. The very real fact of the matter is, the poor and dispossessed of the world have run into Israel and the Jews time and time again in their unceasing struggle against the oppression and cruelty of the American New World Order System. And they have run into them in the same way that the American colonialists ran into Hessian soldiers during America's War of Independence - as **MERCENARIES** and **THUGS** in the pay of their masters, the American military and the CIA.

MERCENARIES AND THUGS FOR AMERICA

The fact is, elite Israeli military units and the agents of the Mossad have been running amok all over the world in the service of the American New World Order System, performing dirty, bloody little tasks that the U.S. military and the CIA have been forbidden by law to do: an assassination here, running guns there, dealing with people that the Americans wouldn't get "caught dead" talking to, and generally acting as proxies (really toadies) for the Americans in tasks that the Americans didn't want to touch because of the horror and disgust attached to such activity - **AND THAT'S WHY ISRAEL IS SO UNPOPULAR TODAY IN THE SO-CALLED THIRD WORLD!**



The fact is, elite Israeli military units and the agents of the Mossad have been running amok all over the world in the service of the American New World Order System, performing dirty, bloody little tasks that the U.S. military and the CIA have been forbidden by law to do - AND THIS IS WHY THEY ARE SO UNPOPULAR THERE.

Come on now, don't act so surprised! You say this is the first time you ever heard about any of this? - but if that's so, it's because you didn't want to know. After all, one doesn't have to have access to secret documents to ask himself why Israeli military "advisors" and Mossad agents have been tramping all over Africa and Central and South America? For what possible reason have they been doing so? What possible motive did the Israeli military have that was purely of Israeli or Jewish origin for their ubiquitous presence as military "advisors" in the Contra training camps in Central America in the 1980s, or in Angola, the Congo, Mozambique, and elsewhere in Africa where American interests were being challenged.

MIDGE DECKTER AND NORMAN PODHORETZ

What purely Jewish reasons were there for someone like Midge Deckter - whose overriding purpose in life has been the preservation of the "Jewish state" - to be found "manning" the boards of a whole host of American New World Order System "front" organizations dedicated to maintaining America's crushing political and economic grip on the people and nations of Central and South America - for example, groups such as the **"INSTITUTE FOR RELIGION AND DEMOCRACY."** What real Israeli interest *per se* could she possibly have had for Central and South America? - or for the Contra War? The reason very obviously was that she was ingratiating herself to the American elites, and doing their bidding in order to secure their reciprocal support for Israel. **[Deckter, for those of you who have never heard of her, is the wife of Norman Podhoretz, the publisher of Commentary Magazine, the leading light of conservative Jewry in the United States, and the conduit through which Israeli officials (especially Likud Party officials) orchestrate their relationship with American evangelicals and elite moneyed interests such as the Heritage Foundation, Olin, Pew, etc.]**

It's through Jews connected to the "Podhoretz group" that countless numbers of Israeli military officers have been procured to speak at evangelical Christian churches. Indeed, in recent years, there is hardly an American evangelical church that hasn't been visited by handsome Israeli military officers telling dashing stories of "daring-do" about the various wars that Israel has been involved in since 1948. But rarely are there any stories told about Israeli military operations in Central and South America, or in Africa - all in slavish support of the American New World Order System. No! - those kind of stories are "off limits."



Norman Podhoretz and his allies have been ruthlessly successful in persuading American Jews to ally themselves with the neo-conservative right in the "defense of Israel."

ELLIOT ABRAMS

In addition, Deckter is the mother-in-law of none other than Elliot Abrams, who - in the 1980s - was President Reagan's notorious "front man" for the bloody suppression of the "insurrectionists" in Central America, and who was heavily linked to the operation of death squads throughout the region. Abrams and Oliver North are the ones who came up with the idea of circumventing the Congressional mandate against aid to the Contras by securing "humanitarian aid" from the American evangelical community, and military aid from the Israelis.

The entire evangelical Christian community was involved, and included just about everyone who was anything, including such Christian millionaires as Ellen Garwood (heir to the Clayton Anderson Fortune), the Coors family, Richard Mellon Scaife (heir to the Mellon Banking Fortune), Cullen Davis, Richard DeVoss,

Edwin Feulner, Edith Hakola, Smith Hempston, Herbert Hunt, Nelson Bunker Hunt, etc., as well as such prominent and influential Christian leaders as Pat Robertson, James Dobson, Robert Dugan, Jerry Falwell, Ron Godwin, Ed McAteer, *ad nauseum*. [Please see our article on the strange alliance the Christian Right has made with the Secular Right entitled "[Strange Bedfellows: The Religious Right and the Secular Right](#)."]]

The Abrams / North effort at securing the aid of the Israelis and the evangelical Christian community in support of the re-imposition of the American New World Order System in Nicaragua and the rest of Central America was a *coup* of monumental dimensions for both North and Abrams. In reality, however, Abrams was much more the leader in this effort than was North. His fingerprints were everywhere! - even in the effort to secure the backing of the evangelical community, where Abrams - although calling most of the shots - took a "back seat" to North because he was Jewish and North was a Christian.

Interestingly, it was Abrams who took control of the State Department's "Middle East Desk" during the early stages of America's "War on Terror" and its resultant war in Iraq - **LENDING CREDENCE TO THE SUPPOSITION THAT THE SAME "CROWD" THAT INVOLVED ISRAEL AND THE AMERICAN EVANGELICAL COMMUNITY IN REAGAN'S CONTRA WAR WAS IN CONTROL OF THE EFFORT TO INVOLVE BOTH COMMUNITIES ALL OVER AGAIN IN AMERICA'S NEW WARS IN THE MIDDLE EAST AND CENTRAL ASIA.**

THE FACT IS, IN TODAY'S WORLD THE AMERICAN NEW WORLD ORDER SYSTEM'S MOST LOYAL AND EFFECTIVE ALLIES (READ, LAPDOGS) ARE ISRAEL AND THE CHURCH, not NATO, not the EC, not Japan, not Saudi Arabia nor Egypt nor any other such group or entity.

INTIMIDATING THOSE CHRISTIANS WHO REFUSE TO GO ALONG: "READING THEM OUT" OF THE CHURCH

One is tempted to say that all this is just coincidence - nothing more than "happenstance." There's no real collusion between Israel and the church (on the one hand) and the elites who control the American New World Order System (on the other hand). But that's nothing more than wishful thinking - the result of **PURPOSEFUL** naiveté on the part of both Jews and Christians.

The fact is, there are "smoking guns" lying all over the world that attest to the collusion between the American elites and their lapdogs, Israel and the church. Take, for example, the IRD's statement of purpose back in the 1980s: it sets out in black and white what the leaders of the evangelical church were up to insofar as whipping their parishioners up in defense of the American New World Order System in Central America, and molding them into a bulwark of support for that system. The statement reads in part:

"Never has there been a greater need for strong churches as a crucial component of civil society. America and the world require a fresh impetus of Christian evangelization, transforming both individuals and cultures. Yet tragically, important segments of the American church ... are spiraling into deep decline as they retreat from this task. Particularly in the historic 'mainline Protestant denominations, but also in other churches, many leaders have lost their focus on the Gospel, the basis of their existence. They have turned toward political agendas mandated neither by the Scriptures nor by Christian tradition. They have thrown themselves into multiple, often leftist crusades - radical forms of feminism, environmentalism, pacifism, multi-culturalism, revolutionary socialism, sexual liberation and so forth."

This statement is a purposeful "slam" in "Church-speak" against those Christians who refuse to support the American New World Order System (what the IRD terms "civil society"). It pictures the mission of the church as the "transformation of culture" (that's what the IRD means by "Christian evangelization") - and sees the challenge of the Left as the enemy of culture, which it pictures as the "American Free Enterprise System" (read: "the American New World Order System").

When the tome speaks of the "deep decline" of the church, its "retreat from this task" (i.e., the "transformation of culture"), and its "lost focus on the Gospel" what it has in mind is the tendency of some in the church to oppose the expansion of the American system. Finally, it labels all those in the church who oppose the expansion of **THE AMERICAN NEW WORLD ORDER SYSTEM** as "leftists" - people who embrace radical feminism (i.e., "home and hearth"), environmentalism (read "tree huggers" and "New Age" devotees), multi-culturalism (read: all those who embrace non-Western and non-Christian cultures), "revolutionary socialism" (read: "Anarchists and Communists") and "sexual liberation" (read: "hedonists and libertines").

Wow! - those Christians who oppose the American New World Order System are all these things? - i.e., "hedonists," "libertines," "Anarchists," "Communists," "New Agers," and generally people who oppose "family and hearth." Eeee gads - that's the kind of "stuff" that can get one thrown out of the church - which is precisely what the IRD wants, fulfilling the words of Christ when He said,

"... take heed to yourselves: for they shall deliver you up to councils; and in the ... [churches] ye shall be beaten: and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them." (Mark 13:9)

EXCOMMUNICATED FROM THE CHURCH



READ OUT OF THE CHURCH

The IRD's statement of purpose sets out in black and white what the leaders of the evangelical church were up to insofar as whipping their parishioners up in defense of the American New World Order System in Central America, and molding them into a bulwark of support for that system. The statement reads in part: "Many leaders in both the mainline Protestant denominations and among the liberal Catholic clergy have turned toward political agendas mandated neither by the Scriptures nor by Christian tradition. They have thrown themselves into multiple, often leftist crusades. **They must be re-educated or stopped.**"

LIES AND MORE LIES

The hard truth of the matter is, the justification the elites are using to draw both Israel and the church into the wars in the Middle East is based on lies! - lies that are, as we said previously, as false and self-serving as the claims of cigarette companies that nicotine is nonaddictive and cigarette smoke poses no health hazard.

Lies! - lies like the ones the United States used to draw Christians into the Contra War of the 1980s, passing that war off as a struggle between "atheistic Communism" and the "Occultic Forces" of the "New Age" (on the one hand) and Christianity and God's so-called "Redeemer Nation" (on the other hand) rather than what it really was, a struggle between the indigenous populations of the region and the American New World Order System.

Lies! - lies like the one a sobbing 15-year-old Kuwaiti girl, known only by her first name of Nayirah, told a Committee of Congress about Iraqi soldiers storming into al-Addan hospital in Kuwait City during the First Gulf War, removing babies from their incubators and throwing them on the floor to die. It was all a lie - a lie that the U.S. government, in coordination with the Kuwaiti Ambassador (whose daughter Nayirah turned out to be), fabricated and "pushed" on the American public in order to enlist U.S. support for that war. And all this to say nothing about how the U.S. government enticed Iraq into invading Kuwait in the first place (which is another story altogether).



LIES THE US TELLS ITS PEOPLE

Lies! - lies like the one a sobbing 15-year-old Kuwaiti girl, known only by her first name of Nayirah, told a Committee of Congress about Iraqi soldiers storming into al-Addan hospital in Kuwait City during the First Gulf War, removing babies from their incubators and throwing them on the floor to die. It was all a lie - a lie that the U.S. government, in coordination with the Kuwaiti Ambassador (whose daughter Nayirah turned out to be), fabricated and "pushed" on the American public in order to enlist U.S. support for that war. And all this to say nothing about how the U.S. government enticed Iraq into invading Kuwait in the first place (which is another story altogether).

Indeed, it sometimes seems that the government can't function without lying. The murder of Patrice Lumumba; Mk-Ultra; the assassinations of John Kennedy, Robert Kennedy, and Martin Luther King; the Tonkin Gulf Resolution (which got us into the Vietnam War); the Pentagon Papers (which laid out in detail the lies the Vietnam Conflict was based on); Agent Orange; the Contra Wars; Iran-Contra; the toppling of the duly elected governments of Chile (Allende), Brazil (Goulart), Guatemala (Arbenz), etc.; the CIA's involvement all over the world in drug running, etc., etc. - **LIES!** All of them **LIES**, and if that's the case, what does that say about our government? -

"Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He ... abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it." (John 8:44)

This is the background of the people with whom both Israel and the church have "climbed into bed" - **AND IT IS PRECISELY THESE LIARS - THESE "CHILDREN OF THE DEVIL" - THAT ARE INVOLVING ISRAEL AND THE CHURCH IN THEIR MACHINATIONS INsofar AS THE WARS IN THE MIDDLE EAST ARE CONCERNED.**

CHAPTER XV

THE GOG / MAGOG WAR

"Men never do evil so completely and cheerfully as when they do it from religious conviction!" - Pascal

"The burden of the word of the LORD for Israel, saith the LORD, which stretcheth forth the heavens, and layeth the foundation of the earth, and formeth the spirit of man within him.

"Behold, **I WILL MAKE JERUSALEM A CUP OF TREMBLING** unto all the people round about, when they shall be in the siege both against Judah and against Jerusalem.

"And **IN THAT DAY WILL I MAKE JERUSALEM A BURDENSOME STONE** for all people: all that burden themselves with it shall be cut in pieces, though all the people of the earth be gathered together against it." (Zech. 12:1-3)

PART 1: GOD'S LOVE FOR ISRAEL IS BASED ON GRACE, NOT ON WORKS

THE GOTTERDAMERUNG

At first glance, it would seem that Hitler's Holocaust is a nightmare that could never be repeated. The *Götterdämmerung* in which Hitler's *Valhalla* went up in flames in a Wagnerian *Twilight of the Gods* should have consumed this horrible disease - **AND PUT TO AN OPEN SHAME ALL THOSE WHO HATE THE JEWS**. But like a nightmare which won't go away, like a cancer which goes into remission - feigning a cure - only to reappear again in some other part of the body and in a more virulent form, anti-Semitism is once more rearing its ugly head - and Jews have very **REAL** reasons to fear for their lives.

To a very large extent, today's anti-Semitism revolves around the existence of a new and UNEXPECTED phenomenon: the reappearance in world history of the state of Israel, a phenomenon which the Jews felt they had no other choice but to FORCE on the world in order to forestall their own eventual extermination. The Jews have learned through grievous experience that unless they act to save themselves, unless they hold their own fate in their own hands, they are powerless to fend off the world's hatred against them - and no assurances to the contrary (even when proffered by the liberal democracies of the West) can ever suffice to make the Jews believe otherwise. The Jews have learned how truly **WORTHLESS** such assurances are.

For example, in May 1938, as Germany's "orgy of hatred" against the Jews was reaching new heights of sadism, the governments of Great Britain, France and the United States protested. While the world might not remember what happened next, the Jews certainly do: although Hitler was annoyed at this protest, he convened the Evian Conference and offered "his Jews" to the "international community," and to Great Britain, France and the United States in particular. He knew the offer would be refused. And that's precisely what happened: the nations of the earth - and in particular the "Western Democracies" - refused to take them.

German opinion smirked at the hypocritical posturing of the "Anglo-Americans." Goebbels laughed! - had he not known all along that no "civilized" nation would ever accept that "accursed" race? A German newspaper of that era commented,

"One likes to pity the Jews as long as one can use this pity for a wicked agitation against Germany, but no state is prepared to accept even a few thousand Jews. The conference [i.e., Evian] serves to justify Germany's policy against Jewry."

FORCING ISRAEL ON THE WORLD

It is precisely the remnants of these people - the people the world turned their back on at Evian and later during the Holocaust - who, as frightened hordes of desperate refugees fleeing from Hitler's death camps, arrived in Israel to build a sanctuary against the unrelenting **HATRED** of the world. They knew at the time they were dispossessing people who had been there for centuries, **BUT THEY HAD NO WHERE ELSE TO GO**. No other nation - not even the United States - wanted them. If they were going to live, they would have to force the issue.

They came as the outcasts of Europe; the downtrodden of the shoddy Jewish ghettos of the Near East and North Africa; people with childhood memories of the sound of hammers boarding up doors and windows against the unrelenting pogroms directed against them in Russia, Hungary, Poland, etc.; they came as the



The Götterdämmerung

At first glance, it would seem that Hitler's Holocaust is a nightmare that could never be repeated. The *Götterdämmerung* in which Hitler's *Valhalla* went up in flames in a Wagnerian *Twilight of the Gods* should have consumed this horrible disease - AND PUT TO AN OPEN SHAME ALL THOSE WHO HATE THE JEWS. But like a nightmare which won't go away, like a cancer which goes into remission - feigning a cure - only to reappear again in some other part of the body and in a more virulent form, anti-Semitism is once more rearing its ugly head - and Jews have very **REAL** reasons to fear for their lives.

remnants of Hitler's death camps and as people fleeing the indifference of the French, the Belgians, the Dutch, the Swedes, and all the other "do-gooder" nations of the earth to their plight - people who had at last been driven to frantic desperation to hold their **OWN** fate in their **OWN** hands for a change, which meant having their **OWN** nation and their **OWN** army with which to defend themselves - again, even if that meant forcing themselves onto the people of the Middle East and dispossessing Arabs from land they had inhabited for generations.

The Jews were seeking a place of refuge where, when all else fails, Jews could flee to without having to depend on the capricious consent of other nations and peoples who experience had shown were at best indifferent to their fate!



JEWISH REFUGEES

They came as the outcasts of Europe; the downtrodden of the shoddy Jewish ghettos of the Near East and North Africa; people with childhood memories of the sound of hammers boarding up doors and windows against the unrelenting pogroms directed against them in Russia, Hungary, Poland, etc.; they came as the remnants of Hitler's death camps and as people fleeing the indifference of the French, the Belgians, the Dutch, the Swedes, and all the other "do-gooder" nations of the earth to their plight.

THE NEW ANTI-SEMITISM

A place of refuge; of shelter; of asylum, of sanctuary! - that's what Israel means to the worldwide Jewish community. **AND IT'S A PLACE WHOSE IMPORTANCE IS ONLY GROWING IN THE FACE OF A RESURGENT WORLDWIDE ANTI-SEMITISM.** Indeed, Donald G. McNeil, Jr. of the *New York Times* reports that in France there is a rising tide of anti-Semitic incidents. In Marseilles the Orthodox Jewish *Or Aviv* synagogue was burned to the ground. An additional three other French synagogues were set on fire over the Passover-Easter weekend, and a synagogue in Strasbourg had its doors set ablaze the day after an anti-Israel demonstration there. In addition, in Lyon, 15 masked men crashed two cars through the gates of a synagogue and set them afire. Finally, shots were fired at a kosher butcher shop in Toulouse, and a young Jewish couple were badly beaten in Villeurbanne in the Rhone region. **[And it should be noted in this connection that none of these acts were organized and abetted by Muslim immigrants – all stemmed out of France's historical antipathy towards the Jewish community.]**

The Central Jewish Consistory in Paris, in a statement sent to *Agence France-Presse*, called the weekend's attacks "the beginning of a new *Kristallnacht*, with the government totally passive about what was happening." *Kristallnacht*, or "Night of Broken Glass," on November 9, 1938, was named for the sweeping attacks that the Nazis incited on Jews and Jewish shops and places of worship.

In the face of all this, French Prime Minister Lionel Jospin announced that 1,110 additional police officers would be deployed to guard France's synagogues and Jewish schools - and, as a result, police officers, some carrying submachine guns, now are posted outside dozens of synagogues and Jewish schools throughout the country.

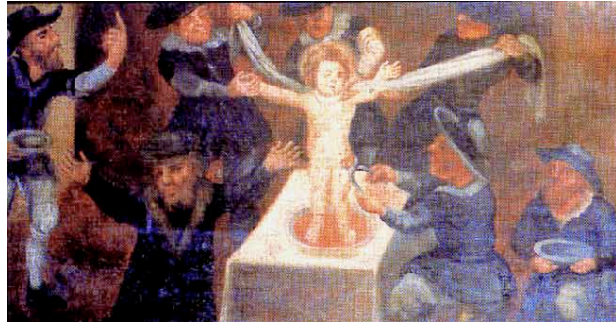
THE JEWS ARE FRIGHTENED

This is a shocking development for Jews in France. Until recently, leaders of France's 600,000 Jews have believed that they were living in a country where they were safe from the scourge of anti-Semitism. But with the growing number of anti-Semitic incidents, they no longer believe that's the case - especially in light of the fact that when they have publicly complained about the attacks, there has not been any genuine public outcry to stop them.

They just keep on occurring, ranging from anti-Semitic graffiti that is appearing on walls all over the country, to threatening phone calls received by rabbis, to shootings, to burnings, etc. Similar incidents have occurred in Belgium where five firebombs were thrown at a synagogue. And it's not just in France and in Belgium that this new anti-Semitism has taken hold. The fact is, it's happening all over Europe: in Germany, in Austria, in Denmark, in Italy - everywhere!

THE REBIRTH OF THE "BLOOD-LIBELS"

In addition to all this, *Newsweek Magazine* reports that there has been a marked revival of all the old "**BLOOD LIBELS**" against the Jews - including stories that the pastries used in the Jewish Purim festivities contain human blood; and that at Passover the blood of Christian children under the age of ten is used in the rituals. And while these stories are still confined to the fascist fringe in Europe, they are **REGULAR FARE** in the Middle East and throughout the Islamic world.



BLOOD-LIBELS

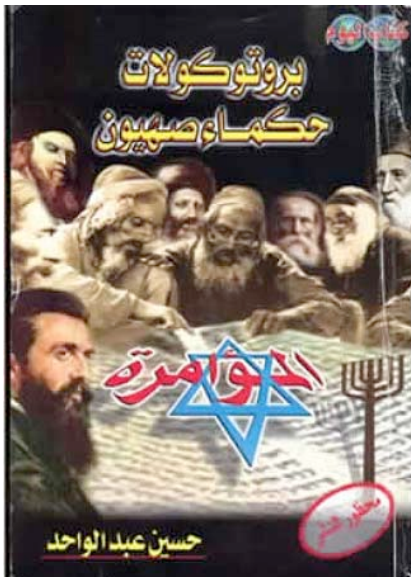
There has been a marked revival of all the old "**BLOOD LIBELS**" against the Jews - including stories that the pastries used in the Jewish Purim festivities contain human blood; and that at Passover the blood of Christian children under the age of ten is used in the rituals.

Indeed, devotees of these stories and myths can be found not just among the uneducated there, but among the university-trained elite as well. Take Dr. Umayma Ahmad al-Jalahma of King Faisal University Hospital in Saudi Arabia: *Newsweek* reports that she believes that at Passover,

"A needle-studded barrel (in which the Christian or Muslim child-victim is locked into) is used (to obtain the blood). The victims suffer dreadful torment - torment that affords the Jewish vampires great delight ..." [We **URGE** you to read our detailed account of these "blood-libels" in our article, "**Pat Robertson, ILLUMINISM, and the New World Order.**"]

CONSPIRACY THEORIES

Finally, as if to add insult to injury, a venomous anti-Jewish press has re-surfaced "big time," and is peppering the world with anti-Semitic **CONSPIRACY THEORIES**. In Egypt, according to *Newsweek*, the press regularly features stories denying the Holocaust and accepting as fact the *Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion*. [Please see our article, "**The Origins of the Illuminist Myth: The Fabrication of the Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion.**"]



There has also been a marked revival of all the old "**BLOOD LIBELS**" against the Jews - including stories that the pastries used in the Jewish Purim festivities contain human blood; and that at Passover the blood of Christian children under the age of ten is used in the rituals. [Please see our article, "**The Business Right and The Christian Right An Alliance Made In Hell**" for an interesting historical discussion on the intersection of interests in anti-Semitism between the American business community and the Religious Right; finally, please see our short article on "Holocaust deniers" entitled, "**The Institute for Historical Review.**"]

Even the oft repeated story attributed falsely to Benjamin

Franklin that the Jews would take over America if allowed to immigrate to the United States - a theory concerning the so-called "squalid" and "immoral" effect of Jewish power that most in the Religious Right in this country already subscribe to (see below) - is standard reading throughout the Middle East.

This particular theory is a popular one because it seems to give an answer to many Muslims (and not a few Christians as well) concerning what many perceive to be America's slavish and unreasonable devotion to the Jewish state; a theory predicated upon a belief by many in the existence of a **NEW YORK-JERUSALEM AXIS** controlled by a mysterious cabal of Satan-worshipping Jewish financiers associated with the Trilateral Commission and the Council on Foreign Relations.

JEWS AS THE HIDDEN-HAND BEHIND THE ATTACK ON THE WTC

And these stories just keep on coming. For instance, the events of September 11th have given rise to the theory that Israel was the "hidden hand" behind the attacks on the World Trade Center (WTC) and the Pentagon - a theory that was given a certain amount of "legitimacy" in Pakistan a few days after the attacks when General Rashid Qureshi, the public-relations chief for President Pervez Musharraf, told *Newsweek* that the attacks were carried out by the Israeli Mossad, and that all the Jewish employees of the WTC had mysteriously failed to show up for work on the day of the attack. **[In fact, Jews suffered far more deaths from the attack on the WTC than any other group in relation to their percent of the population]**



The events of September 11th have given rise to the theory that Israel was the "hidden hand" behind the attacks on the World Trade Center (WTC) and the Pentagon - a theory that was given a certain amount of "legitimacy" in Pakistan a few days after the attacks when General Rashid Qureshi, the public-relations chief for President Pervez Musharraf, told *Newsweek* that the attacks were carried out by the Israeli Mossad, and that all the Jewish employees of the WTC had mysteriously failed to show up for work on the day of the attack.

These stories - and many others beside - give evidence to the fact that anti-Semitism is making a big "comeback" not only in the world at large, but in this country as well. The truth is, a great many Americans today would not find it particularly difficult to agree with Daniel Bernard, France's ambassador to Great Britain, when - according to *Newsweek* - he was overheard to say at a private dinner party in London:

"... that shitty little country [i.e., Israel]! Why should the world be in danger of World War III because of these people [i.e., the Jewish people]?"

BILLY GRAHAM AND THE JEWS

Indeed, one of the great "open secrets" of today's America is that there remains a **HUGE** reservoir of anti-Jewish hostility in this country, especially in the Religious Right; and this hostility is clearly reflected in their hate-filled rhetoric against the ACLU. [Please see "[The Republican Party And The Jews](#)."]

Why? - because, in the artful phraseology which has over the years come to surround anti-Semitism in the United States, **THE ACLU HAS BECOME NOTHING MORE THAN A CODEWORD FOR THE JEWS**. The truth is, there are a lot of Christians who would have little trouble echoing Billy Graham when he told Richard Nixon that the Jews had established a stranglehold on the country, and that -

"This stranglehold has got to be broken or the country's **GOING DOWN THE DRAIN**."

Pretty harsh stuff! Going down the drain! - i.e., that the Jews are responsible for ruining the United States! Wow! Nonetheless, if words are to be taken at their face value - that's what Graham was saying here! - i.e., that Jewish influence in the United States was ruining the country. That sounds like something Hitler, or Goering, or Goebbels, or Himmler would have said about Germany sixty years ago. And, indeed, it is! [Please see "[The Jews, The Minorities And The Multicultural Imperative](#)."] Graham continues,

"... there is a powerful bloc of Jews in this country that are putting out the pornographic stuff."

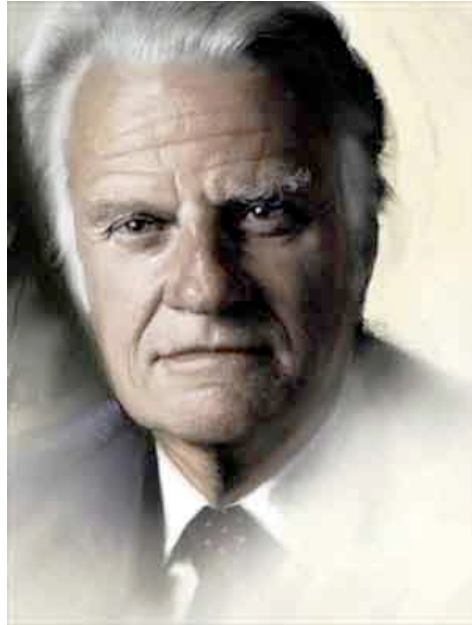
Plainly, Graham believes that Jews are responsible for America's lapsed morality. This, of course, is what Hitler *et. al.* believed too. Graham persists with even more caustic remarks about the Jews,

"A lot of Jews are great friends of mine. They **swarm** around me and are friendly to me ... **THEY DON'T KNOW HOW I REALLY FEEL**."

Since these remarks surfaced as a result of recently de-classified and released Nixon tape recordings from the National Archives, a great number of "Graham-experts" and apologists have been hauled out to cite Graham's "unstinting support" for Israel over the years and to "write off" Graham's anti-Semitic remarks as something that "should not be taken out of context" - in other words, what people should do is ignore the implications of Graham's "unguarded" White House "table talk."

WE NEED TO BE HONEST ABOUT GRAHAM

But come on now! What is more likely to be representative of the **REAL** Graham? - his "unguarded" remarks about the Jews to close confidants and friends? Or his carefully contrived public statements? Come on! - be honest here! Alexander Cockburn of *Counterpunch Magazine* believes that such thinking is very



BILLY GRAHAM ON THE JEWS

- "The Jewish stranglehold on America has got to be broken or the country's **GOING DOWN THE DRAIN**."
- "... there is a powerful bloc of Jews in this country that are putting out the pornographic stuff."
- "A lot of Jews are great friends of mine. They swarm around me and are friendly to me ... **THEY DON'T KNOW HOW I REALLY FEEL**."

representative of the white, country club kind of Christian that - **SADLY** - Graham has come to mirror over the years. Cockburn writes knowingly and very sarcastically,

"Don't people know that this sort of stuff is consonant with the standard conversational fare at 75 percent of the country clubs in America, not to mention many a Baptist soiree. Nixon thought American Jews were lefty peaceniks who dominated the Democratic Party and were behind the attacks on him. Graham reckoned it was Hollywood Jews who had sunk the nation in porn."

SCHIZOPHRENIA, THE JEWS, AND THE EVANGELICALS

Moreover, one should not be thrown off track with regard to Graham and the many others like him in the evangelical Christian community because of their "unstinting support" for the state of Israel.

While it's true that there is a lot of support from evangelicals like Graham, Robertson, Falwell, etc. for Israel, that does not seem to detract a great many of them from their disgust of the Jewish people in general. Evangelicals are **SCHIZOPHRENIC** on this point - and that **SCHIZOPHRENIA** has a lot to do with their view of the Jewish people as "Supermen" or *Obermenschen* (or sometimes as *Untermenschen*) [Please see "**Pat Robertson, Illuminism, And The New World Order.**"].

Like the nursery rhyme about the "little girl with the cute little curl in her forehead," evangelicals somehow or other believe that when the Jews are "... good, they are very, very good, but when they're bad, they're horrid" - i.e., that when Jews accept Christ, they become almost superhuman in their Christianity, but when they reject Him, they become anti-Christ in their hatred of God. But the Bible doesn't admit to this kind of distinction between the Jews and the Gentiles; on the contrary, the Bible says:

"For **ALL** have sinned, and come short of the glory of God ..." (Rom. 3:23)

And it goes on to say:

"... there is **NO** difference between the Jew and the Greek (i.e., the gentiles) ..." (Rom. 10:12)

A PERPETUAL HATRED

All this talk about American anti-Semitism, is to say nothing about the very obvious **PERPETUAL** hatred that the Islamic world has developed for Israel - a hatred that is poised to finish what Hitler tried to do: Drive the Jews of Israel into the ocean and **TOTALLY** annihilate them.



A PERPETUAL HATRED

Sadly, there exists today a very obvious PERPETUAL hatred that the Islamic world has for Israel - a hatred that is poised to finish what Hitler tried to do: Drive the Jews of Israel into the ocean and TOTALLY annihilate them.

There is no bridging this hatred; no way to resolve it. There is no longer any room for common ground between the Islamic world and the Jews.

Even if Israel were to withdraw to its so-called 1967 borders, give up its defensive positions along the Jordan River, withdraw from all its settlements on the West Bank and Gaza, that would probably still not be the end of it. This is what Hussein Ibish and Ali Abunimah, both Palestinians, believe. They write:

"... the occupation is only one of two major issues standing in the way of an end to the century-old conflict. The denial of the right of millions of Palestinian refugees, those displaced in the 1948 and 1967 wars and their descendants, to return to their homes and land is also a fundamental obstacle. Unlike the occupation, it is an issue which has never been seriously addressed or properly understood in the U.S. All recent American and Israeli proposals for Israeli-Palestinian peace have been predicated on an unworkable and disastrous concept: that the world's largest group of refugees would renounce or be denied this basic human right."

But if the Israelis grant the Palestinians the "Right of Return," it will mean the end of Israel as a Jewish state. Contrawise, if the Jews refuse to grant the Palestinians this concession, the suicide bombings will no doubt continue endlessly into the future. As *Newsweek* suggested last week,

"Israelis know - as should the rest of the world - that the real division among Palestinians is not between those who want peace in the Western sense - i.e., as a point after which the world lives free of tensions with a consciousness of reconciliation. In reality, the number of Palestinian leaders holding this view is minuscule. **THE FUNDAMENTAL SCHISM IS BETWEEN THOSE WHO WANT TO BRING ABOUT THE DESTRUCTION OF ISRAEL BY CONTINUING THE PRESENT STRUGGLE, AND THOSE WHO BELIEVE THAT AN AGREEMENT NOW WOULD BE A BETTER STRATEGY TO RALLY FORCES FOR THE ULTIMATE SHOWDOWN LATER ON.**"

Either way, Israel will eventually have to go if the Islamic world is to be satisfied!



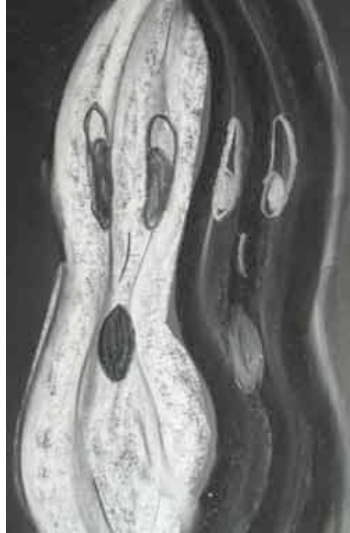
If Israel grants the Palestinians the "RIGHT TO RETURN" it would mean the end of the Jewish state.

I WILL SAVE THEE

All these things - the anti-Semitism, the anti-Zionism, the irreconcilable differences between the Muslims and the Israelis over Israel's presence in the Holy Land - have conspired together to produce a feeling of dreadful **PARANOIA** in the Jews regarding how the rest of the world feels about them, and a parallel sense

THAT WAR WITH THE PALESTINIANS (AND INDEED THE ENTIRE ISLAMIC COMMUNITY) IS INEVITABLE. The very real fact of the matter is, Israel's back is up against the wall, and so much so that Jewish historian Amos Elon writes:

"I'M IN SUCH DESPAIR BECAUSE I FEAR IT IS TOO LATE. AND I HAVE ONLY TOLD YOU HALF OF WHAT I FEAR."



AMOS ELON

"I'M IN SUCH DESPAIR BECAUSE I FEAR IT IS TOO LATE. AND I HAVE ONLY TOLD YOU HALF OF WHAT I FEAR."

But the Bible says:

"And it shall come to pass, that as ye were a curse among the heathen, O house of Judah, and house of Israel; **SO WILL I SAVE YOU**, and ye shall be a blessing: fear not, but let your hands be strong.
"For thus saith the LORD of hosts; As I thought to punish you, when your fathers provoked me to wrath, saith the LORD of hosts, and I repented not:
"So again have I thought in these days to do well unto Jerusalem and to the house of Judah: **FEAR YE NOT**." (Zech. 8:13-15)

SET THY FACE AGAINST MOUNT SEIR

And so God warns Israel's enemies, and **most especially those Muslim nations in the Middle East who have arrayed themselves against Israel's presence in the Holy Land:**

"Son of man, set thy face against mount Seir [i.e., those nations that immediately surround Israel], and prophesy against it,
"And say unto it, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, O mount Seir, **I AM AGAINST THEE**, and I will stretch out mine hand against thee, and I will make thee most desolate.
"I will lay thy cities waste, and thou shalt be desolate, and thou shalt know that I am the LORD."
(Ezek. 35:1-4)

Listen brothers and sisters: it is a fearful thing for someone to hear those words from God, **"I AM AGAINST THEE"**. There can be no more frightening thing in all the world, because we are dealing with God here. The Bible says:

"... fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him [i.e., God] which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell." (Matt. 10:28)

And why is it **EXACTLY** that God is against Mt. Seir? The Lord explains:

"**BECAUSE THOU HAS HAD A PERPETUAL HATRED** [against Israel], and hast shed the blood of the children of Israel by the force of the sword ..." (Ezek. 35:5)



"Son of man, set thy face against mount Seir [i.e., those nations that immediately surround Israel - see below], and prophesy against it, And say unto it, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, O mount Seir, I **AM AGAINST THEE**, and I will stretch out mine hand against thee, and I will make thee most desolate. I will lay thy cities waste, and thou shalt be desolate, and thou shalt know that I am the **LORD.**" (Ezek. 35:1-4)

Now I ask you, Who is it today that has **A PERPETUAL HATRED** against Israel? Is it not **CLEARLY** those who are carrying out the suicide bombings in Jerusalem, in Tel Aviv, in Natanya, etc? **SUICIDE BOMBING!** - now that's hatred!

The Bible says that God is **AGAINST THEM** [i.e., all those who hate Israel in this way] and He will **PURSUE THEM UNTO BLOOD!**

Specifically, the Bible says:

"Therefore, as I live, saith the Lord GOD, I will prepare thee unto blood, and blood shall pursue thee: sith [since] thou hast not hated blood, even blood shall pursue thee.

"Thus will I make mount Seir most desolate, and cut off from it him that passeth out and him that returneth.

"And I will fill his mountains with his slain men: in thy hills, and in thy valleys, and in all thy rivers, shall they fall that are slain with the sword.

"I will make thee perpetual desolations, and thy cities shall not return: and ye shall know that I am the LORD." (Ezek. 35:6-9)



"Therefore, as I live, saith the Lord GOD, I will prepare thee unto blood, and blood shall pursue thee: sith [since] thou hast not hated blood, even blood shall pursue thee."

SOMETHING DREADFUL IS ABOUT TO HAPPEN

Listen to me: you do not want to be found on the "**RECEIVING**" end of these verses for any reason! God is warning you! Get away, and get away fast! He is warning all those that are "round about" Israel - all those who will hear Him out on this matter - get away as quickly as possible. **SOMETHING DREADFUL IS ABOUT TO HAPPEN**, and you do not want to be around when it occurs.

All you believing Arabs who dwell in the vicinity of Mt. Seir, all you who believe and are "called according to His purpose," get away - and get your friends and families away too. A great calamity is coming. Something horrible is about to happen: all those who today say that Israel has no right to be where she is; all those who think that the Jewish people are trespassing on Palestinian land, you **SHALL BE DESTROYED**:

"I will prepare thee unto blood, and blood shall pursue thee." (Ezek. 35:6)

What's that say, then, about those who believe that Israel has no right to the so-called "West Bank?" Who say that they are going to drive Israel into the sea? Who say that Israel should negotiate with the Palestinians? Who say that Israel should give up East Jerusalem and the Temple Mount? Who hate Israel with a **PERPETUAL HATRED**? It says that God -

"... will even do according to thine anger [i.e., **HATRED**], and according to thine envy which thou hast used out of thy **HATRED** against them; and I will make myself known among them, when I have judged thee." (Ezek. 35:11)

In other words, what the Bible is saying here is that God will hate these people to the degree that they have hated the Jewish people and the state of Israel.

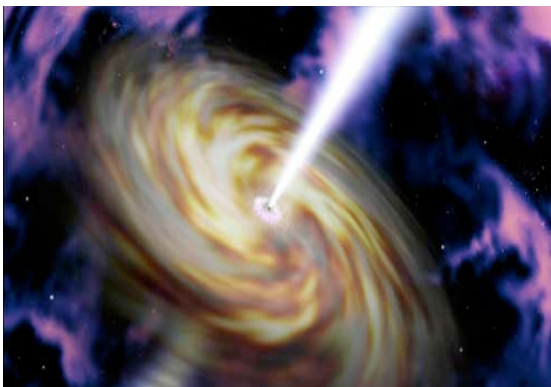


SOMETHING TERRIBLE IS GOING TO HAPPEN

All you believing Arabs who dwell in the vicinity of Mt. Seir, all you who believe and are "called according to His purpose," get away - and get your friends and families away too. A great calamity is coming. Something horrible is about to happen: all those who today say that Israel has no right to be where she is; all those who think that the Jewish people are trespassing on Palestinian land, you **SHALL BE DESTROYED**

WHO ARE YOU TO SAY TO GOD WHAT'S FAIR?

God is going to **HATE** them to the degree that they hated Israel? Wow! You say that that's not fair? - well, I tell you something, **WHO ARE YOU TO SAY TO GOD WHAT'S NOT FAIR?**



WHO ARE YOU TO SAY WHAT'S FAIR?

God is going to **HATE** them to the degree that they hated Israel? Wow! - You say that that's not fair? - Well, I tell you something, **WHO ARE YOU TO SAY TO GOD WHAT'S NOT FAIR?** The Bible says: "Nay but, O man, **WHO ART THOU THAT REPLIEST AGAINST GOD?** Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus? Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?" (Rom. 9:20-21)

The Bible says:

"Nay but, O man, **WHO ART THOU THAT REPLIEST AGAINST GOD?** Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?

"Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?" (Rom. 9:20-21)

We must understand something here! **HE IS THE POTTER AND WE ARE THE CLAY.** There is nothing more to be said - and God help those who would dare to say otherwise and challenge God's **UTTER** and **TOTAL** supremacy and sovereignty in this matter! The Bible says:

"Who is this (i.e., man) that darkeneth counsel by words **WITHOUT** knowledge?

"Gird up now thy loins like a man; for I will demand of thee, and answer thou me (if you can).

"Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? declare, if thou hast understanding.

"Who hath laid the measures thereof, if thou knowest? or who hath stretched the line upon it?

"Whereupon are the foundations thereof fastened? or who laid the corner stone thereof;

"When the morning stars sang together ...?

"Or who shut up the sea with doors, when it brake forth, as if it had issued out of the womb?

"When I made the cloud the garment thereof, and thick darkness a swaddlingband for it,

"And brake up for it my decreed place, and set bars and doors,

"And said, Hitherto shalt thou come, but no further: and here shall thy proud waves be stayed?

"Hast thou commanded the morning since thy days; and caused the dayspring to know his place;

"That it might take hold of the ends of the earth, that the wicked might be shaken out of it?

"It is turned as clay to the seal; and they stand as a garment.

"And from the wicked their light is withholden, and the high arm shall be broken.

"Hast thou entered into the springs of the sea? or hast thou walked in the search of the depth?

"Have the gates of death been opened unto thee? or hast thou seen the doors of the shadow of death?

"Hast thou perceived the breadth of the earth? declare if thou knowest it all.

"Where is the way where light dwelleth? and as for darkness, where is the place thereof,

"That thou shouldest take it to the bound thereof, and that thou shouldest know the paths to the house thereof?

"Hast thou entered into the treasures of the snow? or hast thou seen the treasures of the hail,

"Canst thou bind the sweet influences of Pleiades, or loose the bands of Orion?

"Knowest thou the ordinances of heaven? canst thou set the dominion thereof in the earth?

"Shall he that contendeth with the Almighty instruct him? he that reproveth God, let him answer it.

"Then answered the LORD unto Job out of the whirlwind, and said,

"Gird up thy loins now like a man: I will demand of thee, and declare thou unto me.

"Wilt thou also disannul my judgment? wilt thou condemn me, that thou mayest be righteous?

"Hast thou an arm like God? or canst thou thunder with a voice like him?

"Deck thyself now with majesty and excellency; and array thyself with glory and beauty (if you can)."
(Job 38-22, 31-33, 40:2, 6-9)

"DECK THYSELF NOW WITH MAJESTY AND EXCELLENCY; AND ARRAY THYSELF WITH GLORY AND BEAUTY ..." if you can?



"Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? declare, if thou hast understanding."

Of course we can't!

GOD CHOSE ISRAEL ON THE BASIS OF GRACE

Again, I say: He is the Potter, and we are the clay. But one should be perfectly clear here: God certainly did not choose the Jews because they were somehow or other congenitally better than any other people on earth; or because they were a people morally superior to the people who surround them; or that they possess some kind of innate spiritual DNA that predisposes them toward God.

He chose them in order to make an open show of His **MERCY** - i.e., that His dealings with man are based on **UNMERITED FAVOR (i.e., GRACE)** and nothing else. That's what the Bible says:

"He hath not dealt with us after our sins; nor rewarded us according to our iniquities.

"For as the heaven is high above the earth, so great is his mercy toward them that fear him.

"As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us.

"Like as a father pitieth his children, so the LORD pitieth them that fear him.

"For he knoweth our frame; he remembereth that we are dust." (Ps. 103:10-14)



God is the potter; we are the clay.

GOD IS NO RESPECTER OF PERSONS

And His mercy toward Israel is an **OPEN** and **PUBLIC** demonstration to that affect - a historical display of His **KINDNESS** and **COMPASSION** for **ALL** to see who seek after God - for the Bible says that with regard to this matter (i.e., His mercy), He is - as Peter says:

"... **NO RESPECTER OF PERSONS**:

"But in **EVERY** nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted by him." (Acts 10:34-35)

And the Bible goes on to explain what it means here by the word "work:"

"Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent." (John 6:29)

What's that mean? It means that our relationship with God - whoever we are - is based on His mercy toward us and not on any innate righteousness on our part; that if we try to approach God on the basis of anything we can do, we will surely fail. The Bible says:

"... we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away." (Is. 64:6)

And again, the Bible says:

"As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one:

"They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one." (Rom. 3:10, 12)



WHOSOEVER WILL

And so it is that we must trust in God's mercy to clothe us with His righteousness. But what assurance do we have that He will do so? For those of us who believe, we have, of course, the assurance of the Written Word:

"For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that **WHOSOEVER** [that surely includes everyone, no matter who they are or what they've done] believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life." (John 3:16)

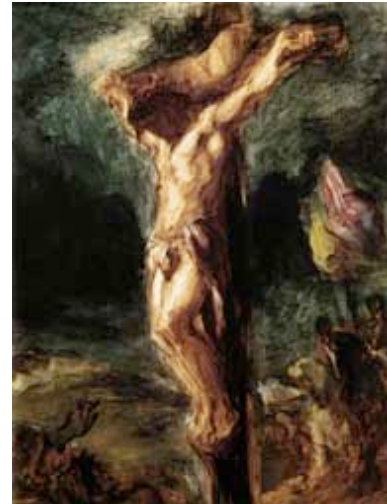
And the Bible goes on to say:

"For by **GRACE** [i.e., unmerited favor] **ARE YE SAVED** through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: **"NOT OF WORKS"**, lest any man should boast." (Eph. 2:8-9)

And Israel is God's **OPEN** and very **PUBLIC** demonstration in the **HISTORICAL RECORD** and **IN THE EVENTS OF TODAY**, that God saves man on the basis of His mercy alone, and not on the basis of any righteousness we think we possess. After all, if God can remain faithful to Israel despite all that Israel has done, and all that she has failed to do, He can remain faithful to **ALL** those who call upon His name - and that He will fulfill **ALL** the promises He has made to us and bring us safely through to the end.

GOD'S MERCY TO ISRAEL AND THE JEWISH PEOPLE WILL NOT FAIL

Contra wise, if God's promises to Israel fail on the basis of Israel's unfaithfulness, then we also stand in jeopardy of our future - for surely the church has been as unfaithful to God as Israel has been - **OR HAVE YOU BEEN READING OUR MATERIAL FOR NAUGHT**? The very real truth of the matter is, the church's historical record is every bit as tawdry and cheap as is Israel's, and to think otherwise is to reveal yourself as an **IDIOT**.



We – both Jew and gentiles - must trust in God's mercy to clothe us with His righteousness. But what assurance do we have that He will do so? What we have, of course, is the assurance of the Written Word: "For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that **WHOSOEVER** [that surely includes everyone, no matter who they are or what they've done] believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life." (John 3:16)



The Jewish people possess no higher innate morality than do the Palestinians; no greater virtue; no higher sense of decency and purity - But **THAT'S NOT THE POINT!** The point is **UNMERITED FAVOR** - i.e., **GRACE**. That's the point - and if God can save Israel on that basis, He can also save anyone on that basis as well - whether Jews or Arabs, Iranians or Turks, Russians or Chinese - whoever you are! [And one should remember here, China is probably the home of more real Christians than anywhere else on earth - despite the persecution directed against them by their government.]

It's for this reason that those who condemn Israel because she supposedly is no different from any other nation are so wrong. While **THEY ARE RIGHT** that she possesses no higher innate morality than do the

Palestinians, no greater virtue, no higher sense of decency and purity, they are still very wrong because **THAT'S NOT THE POINT!**

The point is **UNMERITED FAVOR** - i.e., **GRACE**. That's the point - and if God can save Israel on that basis, He can also save you on that basis as well - whether you are Jew or Arab, Iranian or Turk, Russian or Chinese (China, of course, is today the home of more **REAL** Christians than anywhere else on earth, despite the fact of their unrelenting persecution by the Chinese government) - whoever you are! All this to say that God will surely save **NATIONAL** Israel, for the Scriptures say that on **THAT** day,

"... **THEY** (i.e., Israel) **SHALL LOOK UPON ME WHOM THEY HAVE PIERCED** [very obviously the Lord], and they shall mourn for him [i.e., Jesus], as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness [i.e., great sorrow] for him [i.e., Christ, whom they rejected], as one that is in bitterness [i.e., great sorrow] for his firstborn." (Zech. 12:8) [Please see our sidebar on the subject of "**Jewish National Salvation**."]

PART 2: A CONTRIVED HATRED

INTRODUCTION

Yes! - God has set His face against Mt. Seir because of the Islamic world's **PERPETUAL** hatred against Israel and the Jewish people. But this hatred was not always so. Indeed, the so-called "Islamic Revolution" - which now has become the main instrumentality through which the Arab people hope to destroy Israel - is nothing more than another American invention that the U.S. helped to create and nurture as a movement to counter what it considered fifty years ago to be the main threat against U.S. interests in the Middle East: **RADICAL SOCIALISM**. That's what Nasser in Egypt, Quadafi in Libya, and the Baathist parties in Iraq and Syria were all about.



Gamal Abdel Nasser of Egypt, Mohammed Ahmen Ben Bella of Algeria and Ahmed Hassan Bakr of Iraq: These were the revolutionary leaders that freed their respective nations from colonialism - AND ALL WERE RADICAL SOCIALISTS (secularists), not Islamists.

To the U.S., Islam was seen as a religious "counter-weight" to the influence of socialism and the Soviet Union. The fact is, all of today's radical Islamic groups that are presently "bombing the hell" out of Israel are creations of the United States, from the Islamic Brotherhood in Egypt, to the Mujahadeen in Afghanistan and Iran, to Hamas and Herzollah in Lebanon and Palestine. Every single one of these groups were originally funded with U.S. money and CIA backing. It is precisely this kind of maneuvering that has

made war between Israel and her Arab neighbors all but inevitable - and so much so that the Bible says that it has - sadly - become a "**PERPETUAL HATRED**." (Ezekiel 35:5) [Please see our article, [Radical Islam](#)."]



Yes! - God has set His face against Mt. Seir because of the Islamic world's **PERPETUAL** hatred against Israel and the Jewish people. But this hatred was not always so. Indeed, the so-called "Islamic Revolution" - which now has become the main instrumentality through which the Arab people hope to destroy Israel - is nothing more than another American invention the U.S. helped to create and nurture as a movement to counter what it considered fifty years ago to be the main threat against U.S. interests in the Middle East: **RADICAL SOCIALISM**.

PROVOKING HATRED BETWEEN ISRAEL AND THE ARABS

Seen from this perspective, the relationship that exists today between Israel and the United States is kind of like the relationship that would exist between a person (the United States) who surreptitiously "bonged" someone (Israel) over the head, blamed it on one of his friends (the Arabs), and then offers to hold his friend's (Israel's) coat when the fight breaks out - which pretty much describes the relationship that the Bible says will exist between "prophetic Babylon" and Israel at the "end of the age. Specifically, the Bible says:

"And he [i.e., the "King of Babylon" - again, please see our article, "[In Search of Babylon; What do the Scriptures Say?](#)"] shall confirm the covenant with many [Israel] for one week [seven years]: and in the midst of the week [after three and a half years] he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate." (Dan. 9:27a)



Radical Islam is the creation of the CIA

The living Bible translates this passage thus:

"This king ["Anti-Christ, King of Babylon"] will make a seven year **TREATY** with the people [Israel], but after half that time, he will break his pledge and stop the Jews from all their sacrifices and their offerings; then as a climax to all his terrible deeds, the enemy [Antichrist] shall utterly defile the sanctuary of God [which is to say, he shall commit the Abomination of Desolation]." (Daniel 9:27a LB)

J. Dwight Pentecost writes:

"According to Daniel 9:26-27 the prince of the Roman empire [i.e., the West, called Babylon] will make a covenant with Israel for a seven year period. This covenant evidently ... guarantees Israel's integrity [is a defense pact] ... [and] also is a Satanic imitation of the fulfillment of the Abrahamic covenant which ... [guaranteed] Israel title deed to the land. This action is pictured by John [in the Apocalypse] (Rev. 16:2) as a rider going forth to conquer [as the first horseman in the Apocalypse] ... This condition exists for three and one-half years, after which the covenant is broken by the ... [Antichrist]."

A DEFENSE PACT

The treaty will be in the form of a defense pact between Israel and Prophetic Babylon (i.e., the United States) and will be directed against Israel's enemies - again, no doubt a coalition of Islamic fundamentalist states in the Middle East.



ISRAEL MAKES A DEFENSE PACT WITH THE UNITED STATES

But the bible says: Your [i.e., Israel's] covenant with death and your agreement with hell shall not stand.

One of the most eminent scholars on "Last Things," Sir Robert Anderson, says that the signing of this treaty will signify the beginning of the Seventieth Week - i.e., the "Tribulation Period!" Anderson writes:

"... the Seventieth Week [the seven year period of the Tribulation] will be a definite period of time, of which the beginning, the middle, and the end are definitely marked [by certain well defined events]. [Just as the beginning of the first sixty-nine weeks were signified] ... not by the return of the Jews from Babylon, nor yet by the rebuilding of their Temple, but by the **SIGNING OF THE PERSIAN DECREE [TREATY]** which restored ... [them], so also the beginning of the Seventieth Week will date not from their restoration to Judea [May 14, 1948], nor yet from the future rebuilding of their shrine, but from the **SIGNING OF THE [DEFENSE] TREATY BY THE COMING PRINCE [ANTICHRIST].**"

THE UNITED STATES IS NOT ISRAEL'S FRIEND

BUT THE UNITED STATES IS NOT ISRAEL'S FRIEND! The fact is, the Bible calls the country with whom Israel has covenanted with here (i.e., the United States) an "**OVERFLOWING SCOURGE**." Pretty heavy! - and it warns Israel that this "overflowing scourge" will eventually **BETRAY** it:

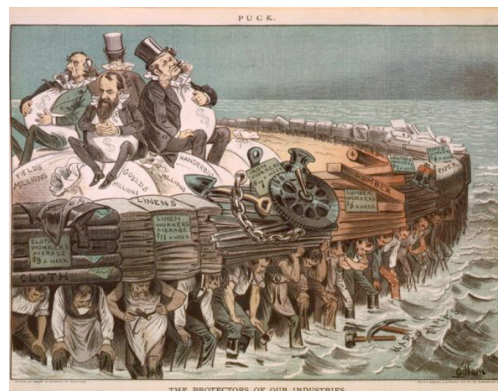
"... your covenant with death shall be disannulled, and your agreement with hell shall not stand; when the **OVERFLOWING SCOURGE** shall pass through, **THEN YE SHALL BE TRODDEN DOWN BY IT.**" (Is. 28:18) ["Overflowing scourge?" - this is certainly a pretty good description of the United States: just ask the peoples and nations of the world that the U.S. had reduced to "client-state" status - for example, Malaysia, Indonesia, the Philippines, Guatemala, the Congo - the list is endless.]

PART 3: A CONTRIVED HATRED PRODUCES A CONTRIVED WAR

We have said that the relationship between Israel and the United States is similar to the kind of relationship that would exist between a person (again, the United States) who sneakily hit someone (again, Israel) over the head, blamed it on one of his friends (again, the Arabs), and then offers to hold his friend's (again, Israel's) coat when the fight breaks out. Just as this analogy pretty much describes the contrived nature of the hatred between Israel and her Middle Eastern neighbors, it also pretty much describes the contrived nature of the coming Gog / Magog War. The sad fact of the matter is, Israel and her opponents are allowing themselves to be maneuvered into it - and its the U.S. that has done the maneuvering.

One might fairly ask, what's driving all this maneuvering? **GREED! Naked AVARICE!** Michael Parenti - one of the most astute observers of today's "world condition" - writes in the magazine *Covert Action Quarterly*:

"The goal of conservative rulers around the world, **LED BY THOSE WHO OCCUPY THE SEATS OF POWER IN WASHINGTON**, is the systematic rollback of democratic gains, public services, and common living standards ..."



PLUTOCRATS: Those who rule in Washington.

Parenti calls those who are a part of this "ruling class" (i.e., the "conservative rulers" in Washington D.C. - and most specifically, the Republican Party and their lapdogs in the Christian Right) a "**RABIDLY** ... (anti-

leftist) **PLUTOCRACY.**" **[NOTE: a plutocracy is an oligarchy that measures its worth by the money it possesses (and isn't this what today's corporate culture is all about? - the corporate culture of Bernie Ebbers, Ken Lay, etc.)]**

Parenti goes on to say that the only thing this plutocracy wants is **"EVERYTHING."**

"All the choice lands, forests, game, herds, harvests, mineral deposits and precious metals of the earth; all the wealth, riches, and profitable returns; all the productive facilities, gainful inventiveness, and technologies; all the surplus value produced by human labor; all the control positions of the state and other major institutions; all public supports and subsidies, privileges and immunities; all the protections of the law with none of the constraints; all the services, comforts, luxuries, and advantages of civil society with none of the taxes and costs. Every 'ruling class' has wanted only this: all the rewards and none of the burdens."

SECURING THE OIL WEALTH OF IRAQ FOR THE AMERICAN OIL ELITES

It is **PRECISELY** this kind of rapacity - the kind that Parenti describes above - that motivated the Bush Administration to make war on Iraq. What this "elite of greed and avarice" wants is to secure the oil wealth of Iraq for itself. That's what this elite is really after; that's what the war in Afghanistan is really all about - i.e., grabbing the oil wealth of Central Asia for the American oil companies; and that's what the coming Gog / Magog War will be all about as well - grabbing the oil riches of the Middle East. [Please see our article on this subject, "[The War in Afghanistan: It's Not What You Think.](#)"]

The truth of the matter is, as everyone knows now, Iraq posed no real threat to the United States *per se*. Iraq possessed no weapons of mass destruction. All the talk about nerve gas, anthrax, nuclear weapons, Iraq's supposed connection to al-Qaeda, etc. was just that - **TALK**. It was a smoke-screen to hide what was really driving the American government - capturing the oil wealth of Iraq, and eventually the oil wealth of all the Middle East.

And make no mistake about it, the stakes in Iraq are enormous from a monetary standpoint. There are more than **SEVENTY** known oilfields in Iraq, only fifteen of which have been developed. **AMERICA IS MANEUVERING FOR AN "END GAME" THERE**, and they are being driven by the **MAGNITUDE** of the prize that Gulf and Central Asian energy reserves and markets represent. This has resulted in a **BOTTOMLESS DEPTH OF DETERMINATION INsofar AS THE AMERICAN ELITES ARE CONCERNED TO GAIN CONTROL OVER THEM (i.e., the oil fields) REGARDLESS OF THE COST.**

A WAR AIMED AT DE-POPULATING THE MIDDLE EAST

All this to say that, in a very real sense, the real target of U.S. hostility in the Middle East is the populations that inhabit that area. Stephanie Reich reports -

"THAT THE U.S. [ELITES] WOULD PREFER TO REDUCE IRAQ [AND THE REST OF THE MIDDLE EAST] TO A SPARSELY POPULATED, POLITICALLY COMPLIANT, OIL-PUMPING ... [AREA]."

If that's the case, all the talk by opponents of the war that widening the war in Iraq could destabilize the Middle East and lead to the further radicalization (and, *ipso facto*, the Islamization) of the populations there, falls on deaf ears. Why? - because that's what the U.S. elites are aiming at: it would give them an excuse to permanently **DEPOPULATE** the area, especially if American policies in the Middle East radicalize the people there to such an extent that they are "revved up" to the point that they brashly attack Israel or create another 9/11 event in the United States. In either case, such an attack would undoubtedly

lead to a **MASSIVE** retaliatory response. In the case of Israel, it could very well be a nuclear response - which would serve "nicely" to depopulate the area, exactly what the U.S. elites want.

DEPOPULATING THE MIDDLE EAST

And isn't that **PRECISELY** the kind of outcome the Bible says will occur as a result of the Gog/Magog War? Of course it is! Read the Scriptures for yourself. The Bible says:

"And they that dwell in the cities of Israel shall go forth [after the war], and shall set on fire and burn the weapons, both the shields and the bucklers, the bows and the arrows, and the handstaves, and the spears, and **THEY SHALL BURN THEM WITH FIRE SEVEN YEARS: [Now think about that, SEVEN YEARS: it gives you an idea of the extent of the victory - i.e., that it will take seven years to clean up the mess, which, interestingly, is the length of the Tribulation.]**

The Scriptures continue:

"And it shall come to pass in that day, that I will give unto Gog a place there of graves in Israel, the valley of the passengers on the east of the sea: and it shall stop the noses of the passengers: and there shall they bury Gog and all his multitude: and they shall call it The valley of Hamongog.

"And seven months shall the house of Israel be burying of them, that they may cleanse the land.

"Yea, all the people of the land shall bury them; and it shall be to them a renown the day that I shall be glorified, saith the Lord GOD.

"And they shall sever out men of continual employment, passing through the land to bury with the passengers those that remain upon the face of the earth, to cleanse it: after the end of seven months shall they search." (Ezek. 39:2, 3-5, 7-9, 11-14)



THE GOG / MAGOG WAR: A war of annihilation aimed at killing off the people of the Middle East so as to give America's oil companies free access to the oil wealth of North Africa, the Middle East and Central Asia.

THE BREATHTAKING CRIMINALITY OF AMERICA'S GAME HERE

That all of this (i.e., all this carnage and destruction) isn't just "happen-chance" and the result of "irresistible historic forces" between the sons of Ishmael and the sons of Isaac, but rather the result of the evil machinations and maneuvering of a small cabal of greedy, self-centered, avaricious American oil elites is **BREATHTAKING** in its **CRIMINALITY**!

But surely, you say, this is not what the United States wants. Oh, really? MIT professor Noam Chomsky believes so. In his view, what the United States really wants in the Middle East is so **CRIMINAL** that most people could not help but reject it as simply too iniquitous an undertaking for anyone to take seriously. [Please see our article, "[Israel and the Renewed Struggle for the Holy Land](#)."]]



The breathtaking CRIMINALITY of the American elites in fomenting the Gog / Magog War in order to secure the oil wealth of North Africa, the Middle East and Central Asia!

PART 4: DIFFERENTIATING BETWEEN THE GOG/MAGOG WAR AND ARMAGEDDON

That there exists a clear distinction between the Gog/Magog War and Armageddon there can be no doubt! As J. Dwight Pentecost has pointed out, there are a number of considerations which make it very plain that we are dealing with two great wars rather than one during the Tribulation.

- In the Gog/Magog War, definite allies of Gog are mentioned as opposing Israel - "Magog," "Mesheck," "Tubal," "Gomer" (**TURKEY**), Ethiopia, Libya, (see Ezekiel 38) and **EGYPT** (see Daniel 11:42], while at Armageddon all nations are engaged against Jerusalem (Joel 3:2; Zeph. 3:8; Zech. 12:3; and 14:2).

- Gog comes from the North (Ezek. 38:6, 15), while at Armageddon, the armies come from out of the whole earth.
- Gog is the head of the armies at his invasion (Ezek. 38:15), but at Armageddon, the Beast is at the head of the invasion (Rev. 19:19).
- There is a protest against Gog's invasion (Ezek. 38:13), but at Armageddon there is no such protest because all the nations of the earth have joined themselves with the Beast in his attack against Jerusalem.
- Gog is overthrown by divine intervention through the convolutions of nature (Ezek. 38:22), but the armies at Armageddon are destroyed by the sword which goes out of Christ's mouth (Rev. 19:15).
- Gog's armies array themselves in the open fields (Ezek. 39:5), while at Armageddon they are seen in the city of Jerusalem.
- Gog's armies are destroyed outside of Jerusalem on the mountains and in the valleys (Ezek. 39:2-4), while the Beast and his armies are destroyed in the city of Jerusalem itself (Zech. 12:2; 14:2).
- The Lord calls for assistance in executing judgment on Gog (Ezek. 38:21), while at Armageddon He is viewed as treading the winepress alone (Rev. 19:15; Isaiah 63:3-6).
- The invasion by Gog will be sudden and will come with relatively little warning (Ezek. 38:11), while Armageddon will be no sudden and unexpected event.

Thus, as Dwight Pentecost has suggested,

"Two diverse movements (wars) must be acknowledged."

SOMETIME BETWEEN NOW AND THE BEGINNING OF THE TRIBULATION

Moreover, to suggest, as some **NINCOMPOOPS** do, that the Scriptures that reference the Gog/Magog War refer to some sort of event that occurred in antiquity is pure nonsense. The truth is, **NO** prior invasion of the land of Israel is sufficient to be the fulfillment of this prophecy. There have been invasions in the past that have wrought hardship on the land and the people of Israel, but **NONE** answer to the details given here. The destruction of the Temple in AD 70, for example, was accomplished by the Romans who came from the west. But the invasion described here comes from the direction of **TURKEY** and Persia to the north, and **EGYPT**, Ethiopia and Libya from the south.

These passages, then, can only refer to some as yet future event in Israel's history - and this is clearly indicated by the phrase, "... *in the latter years*." (Ezek. 38:8) This fact is attested to by almost all Orthodox Jewish scholars (who themselves consider these prophecies to be as yet unfulfilled). Dwight Pentecost, Robert Duncan Culver, and David L. Cooper agree with the Orthodox Jews. For example, Cooper writes,

"... it is utterly impossible to locate the fulfillment of this prediction [i.e., the Gog/Magog War] after the Millennial Age. It cannot be placed at the beginning of the Millennium, nor at the end of the Tribulation. It must, therefore, be located [at the beginning] of the Tribulation, because there is no other logical place for it to occur since the three other dates are impossible ... There will [thus] be a time between now and the beginning of the Tribulation when [this war will occur which will initiate the seven years of the Tribulation Period]."

Again, this thesis is substantiated in a somewhat backhanded way by Ezekiel 39 when the prophet reveals that a full **SEVEN** years will be needed to clear away the wreckage of the Gog/Magog War:



"And they that dwell in the cities of Israel shall go forth (after the war), and shall set on fire and burn the weapons ... THEY SHALL BURN THEM WITH FIRE SEVEN YEARS ..."

"And they that dwell in the cities of Israel shall go forth, and shall set on fire and burn the weapons ... and they shall burn them with fire **SEVEN** years ..." (Ezek. 39:9)

The seven years referred to here by Ezekiel could be none other than the seven years of the Tribulation Period - since no such seven years will follow Armageddon; after Armageddon, the beasts of the field and the fowls of the air will clear away the wreckage - and that by divine direction and in a short period of time. Then the Millennium will begin - there is no seven year interval here. Thus, the Gog/Magog War will immediately precede the events of the Tribulation period. There is, as Cooper suggests, simply no other place to put it which will conform to the pertinent Scriptures.

The Gog/Magog War, then, will precede the Tribulation and will act as a catalyst for the great events of that period, while Armageddon will bring to a conclusion the events of the Tribulation Period. **A FAIR READING OF THE PASSAGES IN SCRIPTURE THAT DEAL WITH THESE GREAT WARS WILL YIELD NO OTHER RESULT.**

NOTE

This great war has nothing to do with the war described in Revelation 20:7

It should be noted in reference to the Gog/Magog War described above that this great conflict has nothing to do with the conflict described in Revelation 20:8; the war that is described there takes place **AFTER** the Millennium (Rev. 20:7), while the conflict which is described in the passages above and later in Daniel clearly takes place **BEFORE** the Millennium. "Gog" is obviously a reference to an evil, angelic prince who possesses Satanic dominion over those nations which have arrayed themselves against Israel - much in the same way that the "Prince of Persia" and the "Prince of Grecia" (Greece) [described in Daniel (i.e., Daniel 10:13-20) with whom Michael, the archangel of God, fought] possess. Evidently, Gog will be loosed with the devil one final time after the Millennium. [Please see Revelation 20:7-8.]

PART 5: GATHERING ALL THE "PLAYERS" TOGETHER FOR THE GOG/MAGOG WAR

HATE AND GREED DRAW THE "PLAYERS" TOGETHER

Greed is the Fuel that Drives the Engines of War

Now one must understand something about the Gog/Magog War: It's a war of **GREED** - and while the leaders of today's American Church will try to tell you differently as the storm clouds gather - i.e., that it's a war that aims to "bring democracy to the peoples of the Middle East;" a war that aims to "break the power of Islam so that Christianity can once again bloom in its ancient heartland" - it's, nonetheless, purely and simply, a war about **GREED**, as are **ALL** wars. To say otherwise is to fly in the face of the clear teachings of the New Testament. Jesus said:

"Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth:

"But I say unto you, That ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also.

"And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have *thy* cloke also.

"And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain.

"Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away.

"Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy.

"But I say unto you, **LOVE YOUR ENEMIES, BLESS THEM THAT CURSE YOU, DO GOOD TO THEM THAT HATE YOU, AND PRAY FOR THEM WHICH DESPITEFULLY USE YOU, AND PERSECUTE YOU;**

"That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust.

"For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same?" (Matt. 5:38-46)

There is no such Thing as a "Just War" in the Teachings of the New Testament

There is no such a thing as a "Just War" in this world and in this life; that the church is authorized to participate in a such a war is a concoction of the Medieval Church which used that concept to justify its murderous participation in the crusades and its bloody conquest and subjugation of the "New World."



The concept of the "Just War" is a concoction of the Medieval Church that used this notion to justify the West's murderous participation in the crusades and its bloody conquest and subjugation of the "New World" as well as Africa and much of Asia – all in the name of the "Prince of Peace."

The Medieval Papacy

The Bible instructs us that wars result from **COVETOUSNESS**:

"From whence *come* wars ... ? *come* they not hence, *even* of your lusts ... ? (James 4:1)

What the Bible is saying here is that, ultimately, wars are not about ideology or God, or any other such things. These are just the masks behind which those who indulge themselves in the rapacity of war hide themselves. In the end, it's all about **GREED** and **AVARICE**:

"Ye lust, and have not: [so] ye kill, and desire to have [more], and cannot obtain:[so] ye fight and war [all the more] ..." (James 4:2)

In the case of the Gog/Magog War - the war that we are examining now - its about the oil elites' effort to hold on to their ill-gotten gain in the Middle East: the fabulous oil riches of that area. It's about preventing the people of the Middle East - the rightful owners of this wealth - from taking back those riches and expelling America from the region.

NOTE

Unfortunately for the people of the Middle East, mixed up in their effort to regain control of their fabulous wealth is a **HATRED** of Israel, whom the people of the Middle East and Central Asia see as America's "CAT'S PAW" in the region. And it's not without reason that they think so - because that's exactly what Israel has become: **AMERICA'S "TOADY."** In doing so, Israel - a people who are called by God's great Name - have brought shame upon themselves and upon Him by whom they are called. [Please see our article, "[Israel and the End of the Age.](#)"]

The Twin Purposes of Radical Islam (Gog) in the Middle East

There can be, of course, no question as to the gathering storm in the Middle East; it's plain enough for anyone to see who wants to see (Mark 8:18); one doesn't even need the Bible to see what's going on: Specifically, that the forces of Islamic Radicalism are gathering themselves together to -

- Destroy Israel.
- Drive America out of the Middle East.

Clearly, what the leaders of Islamic Radicalism are seeking to do is reestablish a single Islamic Caliphate over the entire area - one that stretches from Morocco in the west (including possibly even the Iberian Peninsula) to Pakistan in the east (and possibly farther east to Malaysia and the Philippines). [Please see our article on the origins of Radical Islam, "[Radical Islam](#);" please also see our articles, "[The Coming War in the Middle East](#)" and "[Israel and the Renewed Struggle for the Holy Land](#)."]



The Islamic Caliphate as envisioned by the Muslim Brotherhood.

HATE DRAWS GOG DOWN ON ISRAEL

Insofar as the Scriptures are concerned, we can plainly see Gog's primary purpose regarding Israel (#1 above) in Ezekiel 38:10-12:

"Thus saith the Lord GOD; It shall also come to pass, *that* at the same time shall things come into thy mind [i.e., Gog's mind], and **THOU SHALT THINK AN EVIL THOUGHT**:

"And thou shalt say, I will go up to the land of **UNWALLED VILLAGES** [i.e., Israel]; I will go to them that are at rest, that dwell safely, all of them dwelling without walls, and having neither bars nor gates,

"To take a spoil, and to take a prey; to turn thine hand upon the desolate places *that are now* inhabited, and **UPON THE PEOPLE THAT ARE GATHERED OUT OF THE NATIONS** [again, Israel], which have gotten cattle and goods, that dwell in the midst of the land." (Ezekiel 38:10-12)

"*Thou shalt think an evil thought?*" Ezek. 38:10) - clearly, Gog's primary purpose here is to destroy Israel, "*The people that are gathered out of the nations.*" (Ezek. 38:12) If there is some spoil to be had in the process, that's all well and good - but what really is driving Gog is **HATE: HATE FOR ISRAEL!**

GREED DRAWS IN THE "MERCHANTS OF TARSHISH"

Art Thou Come to Take a Spoil?

Then the Bible says something very interesting that reveals Gog's secondary purpose (#2 above) - the elimination of America's presence in the Middle East (which will bring the wrath of America down on Gog). **IT ALSO REVEALS WHOSE OX IS REALLY BEING GOADED BY THE FORCES OF ISLAMIC RADICALISM, AND WHO REALLY IS BEHIND WHAT'S GOING ON IN THE MIDDLE EAST - i.e., THE CEOs OF AMERICA'S MULTINATIONAL OIL COMPANIES**, companies who are more than willing to sacrifice America's sons and daughters for the sake of their "bottom lines." [Please see our article, "[The Coming War in Iraq; What It's Really All About](#)."]

And how exactly do we know that this is so? The Bible leaves us a plethora of clues which anyone who has "eyes to see" and "ears to hear" (Mark 8:18) can pick up on. We can begin by examining Ezekiel 38:13 which follows hard on the heels of the verses we have just examined (Ezekiel 38:10-12):

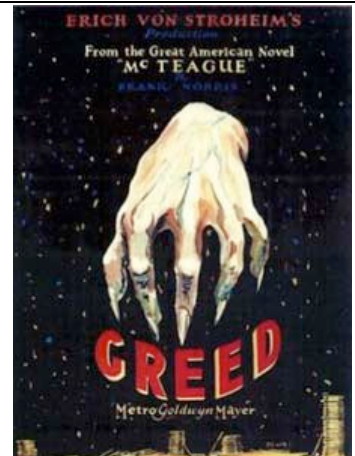
"Sheba and Dedan, and the merchants of Tarshish, with all the young lions thereof, shall say unto thee (i.e., Gog), **ART THOU COME TO TAKE A SPOIL?** hast thou gathered thy company to take a prey? to carry away silver and gold, to take away cattle and goods, to take a great spoil?" (Ezek. 38:13)

NOTE:

THE GREED OF THE MERCHANTS OF TARSHISH

It's interesting to note in this connection that for a time Israel proved itself useful to Tyre's own selfish ends; but eventually Tyre came to view Israel as an impediment to its continued aggrandizement. The parallel to what's happening today with Israel in connection to the United States and what happened centuries ago between Israel and Tyre should be plain enough for anyone to see. **AND THAT'S PRECISELY WHY THIS CONNECTION IS MADE IN THE PROPHETIC SCRIPTURES.**

Tyre was driven by **GREED**, and when it eventually turned on Israel, there was nothing particularly ideological or theological in its "breach of faith" insofar as Israel was concerned. Israel had become an obstacle to the riches that Tyre wanted to take unfettered possession of. For that reason Israel had to be expunged, much as a robber would brush aside a yelping puppy that stood in his way of burgling a house - which is precisely what America will do to Israel shortly after the Gog/Magog War.



The question that fairly begs to be asked in connection with this verse is Who exactly are "Sheba" and "Dedan," and the "Merchants of Tarshish" who raise a protest against what Gog is doing? Evidently, they're not particularly interested in Israel *per se*; what they're interested in is the **SPOIL** that will accrue to Gog if his attack proves successful.

Sheba, Dedan and the "Merchants of Tarshish"

Sheba, Dedan, and the "Merchants of Tarshish" are all mentioned in Ezekiel chapter twenty-seven as merchants of great wealth who made the ancient kingdom of Tyre "roll and go." Speaking to the king of Tyre, the prophet says:

"**TARSHISH WAS THY MERCHANT** by reason of the multitude of all *kind of* riches; with silver, iron, tin, and lead, they traded in thy fairs.

"**DEDAN WAS THY MERCHANT** in precious clothes for chariots.

"**THE MERCHANTS OF SHEBA** ... they *were* thy merchants: they occupied in thy fairs with chief of all spices, and with all precious stones, and gold.

"The ships of Tarshish did sing of thee in thy market: and thou wast replenished, and made very glorious in the midst of the seas. (Ezekiel 27:12, 20, 22, 25)

IN OTHER WORDS, THESE MEN WERE, SO TO SPEAK, THE CEOs OF THE GREAT "MERCHANT HOUSES" OF THEIR TIME; men of "high finance" - the "Robber Barons" who made the Kingdom of Tyre (again,, the kingdom referenced in Ezekiel twenty-seven) the wealthiest nation of its day. **THE "KINGDOM OF TYRE" AND THE "MERCHANTS OF TARSHISH" ARE INEXTRICABLY LINKED TOGETHER IN HOLY WRIT.**

The kingdom of Tyre and the "Merchants of Tarshish"

That, of course, brings us to the matter of Tyre's empyreal ("spiritual") identity; what Tyre was really all about in the ancient world. Concerning Tyre, the great Bible expositor, J.N. Darby writes :

"TYRE ... REPRESENTS THE WORLD AND ITS RICHES, in contrast with Israel as the people of God; and rejoices [over the destruction of Israel] not like the other nations of the world from personal hatred, but because, having opposite interests, the destruction of that which restrained its career gave free course to its natural selfishness."

What Darby is saying here is that unlike most other peoples of the ancient world who hated Israel with an open and very **PERSONAL** hatred, Tyre had a hidden distaste for Israel; but not out of any **PERSONAL** animosity, but simply because Israel hindered Tyre from its quest for worldly wealth. [Please see our article, "[The Real Enemy of Israel; It's Not What You Think](#)," please also see our article, "[The Republican Party and the Jews](#)."]



America has been corrupted by the greed and avarice of its business elites such as the Bank of America's Ken Lewis.

MULTINATIONAL CORPORATIONS. BOTH VIEW ISRAEL AS NOTHING MORE THAN A USEFUL TOOL WHICH CAN BE THROWN AWAY AFTER ITS USEFULNESS HAS PASSED. Hence God's warning to Israel concerning its alliance with America:

"... your **COVENANT WITH DEATH** shall be disannulled, and your **AGREEMENT WITH HELL** shall not stand; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, then **YE SHALL BE TRODDEN DOWN BY IT.**" (Isaiah 28:18)

THE KING OF TYRE

I Sit in the Seat of God"

And now - in case anyone has missed the point - the Bible very clearly draws the parallel forward to today and links the King of Tyre to the AntiChrist, and it does so in a most marvelous way. The prophet begins by first addressing the kingdom of Tyre as a whole:

NOTE

Israel's usefulness to the United States.

It's interesting to note in this connection that for a time Israel had proved itself useful to Tyre's own selfish ends; but eventually Tyre came to view Israel as an impediment to its continued aggrandizement. The parallel to what's happening today with Israel in connection to the United States and what happened centuries ago between Israel and Tyre should be plain enough for anyone to see. AND THAT'S PRECISELY WHY THIS CONNECTION IS MADE IN THE PROPHETIC SCRIPTURES.

Tyre was driven by **GREED**, and when it eventually turned on Israel, there was nothing particularly ideological or theological in its "breach of faith" insofar as Israel was concerned. Israel had become an obstacle to the riches that Tyre wanted to take unfettered possession of. For that reason Israel had to be expunged, much as a robber would brush aside a yelping puppy that stood in his way of burgling a house; **OR** better yet, much as a criminal would turn on his former comrades when it came to dividing up the spoil of their mutual plunder - which is precisely what America will do to Israel shortly after the Gog/Magog War.

In the Scripture, **TYRE IS TO AMERICA AS THE "MERCHANTS OF TARSHISH" ARE TO THE CEOs OF AMERICA'S GIANT**

"The word of the LORD came again unto me, saying,
"Now, thou son of man, take up a lamentation for Tyrus;
"And say unto Tyrus, O thou that art situate in the ... [midst]
of the sea, *which art* a merchant of the people for many
isles, Thus saith the Lord GOD; O Tyrus, thou hast said,
I AM OF PERFECT BEAUTY.
"Thy borders *are* in the midst of the seas, **THY BUILDERS
HAVE PERFECTED THY BEAUTY.** (Ezekiel 27:1-4)



And then the prophet turns his attention to the king of Tyre:

"The word of the LORD came again unto me, saying,
"Son of man, say unto the prince of Tyrus, Thus saith the
Lord GOD; Because thine heart *is* lifted up, and thou
hast said, **I AM A GOD, I SIT IN THE SEAT OF GOD, IN THE MIDST OF THE SEAS;**
yet thou *art* a man, and not God, though thou set thine heart as the heart of God:
"Behold, thou *art* wiser than Daniel; there is no secret that they can hide from thee:
"With thy wisdom and with thine understanding thou hast gotten thee riches, and hast gotten gold
and silver into thy treasures:
"By thy great wisdom *and* by thy traffick hast thou
increased thy riches, and **THINE HEART IS
LIFTED UP BECAUSE OF THY RICHES:**
"... thou hast set thine heart as the heart of God ..." (Ezekiel 28:1-6)

The King of Tyre

NOTE

This is a nation, then, that glories in its beauty and what it sees as its perfection. It dwells in the midst of the seas. It is bounded by the seas. What nation could that possibly be? Come on now - be honest. [Please see our articles, "[The American Empire: In Search of Babylon; What Do the scriptures Say?](#)" and "[The Image of the Beast.](#)"]

Up to this point, it could be said that the Bible is describing a man - a very impressive and remarkable (though extremely egocentric) man - but still a man.

The King of Tyre as a Picture of the AntiChrist

Then, however, the Bible goes beyond what could be the description of a mere mortal - way beyond:

"Son of man, take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyrus, and say unto him, Thus saith the Lord GOD; **THOU SEALEST UP THE SUM, FULL OF WISDOM, AND PERFECT IN BEAUTY.**
"**THOU HAST BEEN IN THE EDEN OF GOD;** every precious stone *was* thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created.
"**THOU ART THE ANOINTED CHERUB THAT COVERETH;** and I have set thee *so*: **THOU WAST UPON THE HOLY MOUNTAIN OF GOD; THOU HAST WALKED UP AND DOWN IN THE MIDST OF THE STONES OF FIRE.**" (Ezekiel 28:12-14)

These are words that could not possibly be said of a mere man:

- "Thou sealest up the sum, full of wisdom, and perfect in beauty."
- "Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God."
- "Thou *art* the anointed cherub that covereth."
- "Thou wast upon the holy mountain of God."

- "Thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire."

We're No Longer Talking about a Mere Man

Obviously, we're no longer talking about a mere man. The great Bible expositor, C.I. Scofield, writes:

"Here, as in Isa. 14:12, **THE LANGUAGE GOES BEYOND THE KING OF TYRE TO SATAN**, the inspirer and unseen ruler of all such pomp and pride as that of Tyre. Instances of thus indirectly addressing Satan are: Gen. 3:14, 15; Matt. 16:23. The unfallen state of Satan is here described ... The vision is not of Satan in his own person, but of Satan fulfilling himself in and through an earthly king who arrogates to himself divine honours, so that **THE PRINCE OF TYRUS FORESHADOWS THE BEAST** (i.e., the AntiChrist - Dan. 7:8; Rev. 19:20)." [Please see "[George Bush, the Promise Keepers, and the Principles of Messianic Leadership](#)."]



We're No Longer Talking about a Mere Man.

Darby writes:

"In chapter xxviii [28], it is the prince and the king of Tyre that are judged for their pride. Verses 1-10 set Tyre before us the prince of this world's glory as a man, exalting himself and seeking to present himself as a god, having acquired riches and glory by his wisdom. Verses 11-19, while continuing to speak of Tyre, go ... much farther, and disclose, though darkly, the ... ways of Satan, become through our sin the prince and god of this world. The prince of Tyre represents Tyre and the spirit of Tyre. The verses which follow (11-19) are much more personal. I do not doubt that, historically, Tyre itself is referred to; verses 16-19 prove that. But ... the mind of the Spirit goes much farther [toward Satan]."

NOTE

In this connection, it should be noted that Hiram, the king of Tyre, promoted himself as the friend of Israel. Indeed, Hiram had allied himself with Solomon and had even helped Solomon build the Temple. Darby writes: "The special relation of Tyre with Israel added something to the position of the merchant city, and gave room also for the use made here of the history of its king as a type or figure of the prince of this world" - who will, in the 'end of days' attempt to pass himself off - like Hiram before him - as Israel's friend."

Corrupted by the Search for Wealth

The Bible continues concerning the king of Tyre:

"Thou *wast* perfect in thy ways from the day that thou *wast* created, till iniquity was found in thee. **"BY THE MULTITUDE OF THY MERCHANDISE THEY (i.e., SHEBA, DEDAN, AND THE "MERCHANTS OF TARSHISH") HAVE FILLED THE MIDST OF THEE WITH VIOLENCE, AND THOU HAST SINNED:** therefore I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy thee, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire.

"Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness: I will cast thee to the ground, I will lay thee before kings, that they may behold thee.

"THOU HAST DEFILED THY SANCTUARIES BY THE MULTITUDE OF THINE INIQUITIES, BY THE INIQUITY OF THY TRAFFICK; therefore will I bring forth a

fire from the midst of thee, it shall devour thee, and I will bring thee to ashes upon the earth in the sight of all them that behold thee.

"All they that know thee among the people shall be astonished at thee: thou shalt be a terror, and never *shalt* thou *be* any more. (Ezekiel 28:12-19) [Please see our article, "[The Elite, Money and the End of Days](#);" please also see our articles, "[Greed, Avarice and the Coming Dictatorship](#)" and "[The Measure of a Man's Worth](#)."] "

The Search for Wealth Invariably Leads to the Use of Violence

Tyre and the prince of Tyre had defiled themselves, and one should take careful note of the manner in which they did so:

- "By the multitude of thy merchandise they (i.e., Sheba, Dedan, and the "Merchants of Tarshish") have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned."
- "Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries by the multitude of thine iniquities, by the iniquity of thy traffick."



What's the Bible saying here? - it's saying that Tyre and the Prince of Tyre have been corrupted by the **GREED** and **COVETOUSNESS** of their business leaders. When the Bible speaks here of "traffick," it's speaking of "economic activity." Believe me when I tell you that the Bible wasn't blowing smoke when it said:

"They that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and *into* many foolish and hurtful lusts, **WHICH DROWN MEN IN DESTRUCTION AND PERDITION.**

"FOR THE LOVE OF MONEY IS THE ROOT OF ALL EVIL ..." (I Tim. 6:9-10a) [Again, not some evil, but ALL evil.]

The Search for Wealth Invariably Leads to the Use of Violence

"By the multitude of thy merchandise they (i.e., Sheba, Dedan, and the "Merchants of Tarshish") have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned."



"They that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and *into* many foolish and hurtful lusts, **WHICH DROWN MEN IN DESTRUCTION AND PERDITION.**

"FOR THE LOVE OF MONEY IS THE ROOT OF ALL EVIL ..." (I Tim. 6:9-10a) [Again, not some evil, but ALL evil.]

Moreover, the Bible sets up a kind of formula here, a social equation, as it were: The search for wealth - i.e., "the ceaseless quest for money to make still more money," as Michael Parenti puts it - leads **INVARIABLY** to **VIOLENCE**. That's what the Bible is saying when it says, "*They [i.e., Sheba, Dedan, and the "Merchants of Tarshish"] have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned.*"

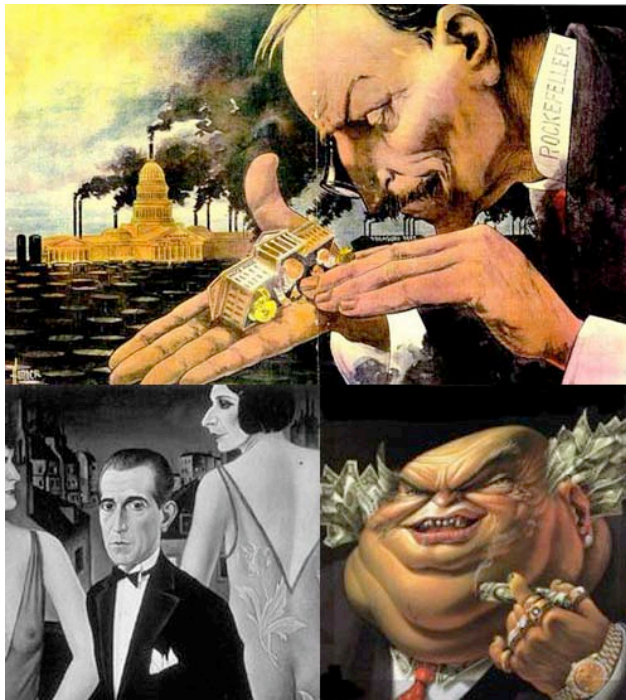
PARALLEL WORLDS

The Parallel between the "Merchants of Tarshish" and the American Business Elites

Come on now! - is it that hard to see the parallel between Tyre and the "Merchants of Tarshish (on the one hand) and America and her business elites (on the other hand)? The fact is, in today's world, the American business elites stand in exactly the same place to America as the "Merchants of Tarshish" stood in relation to the kingdom of Tyre - **AND IT IS, THEREFORE, NOT WITHOUT PURPOSE THAT THE BIBLE DRAWS THIS PARALLEL FORWARD TO TODAY'S WORLD IN EZEKIEL CHAPTER TWENTY-SEVEN:** Those who have "eyes to see" and "ears to hear" (Mark 8:18) will easily make the connection.

And make no mistake about the centrality of the American business elites to the way America (and, *ipso facto*, the world) is run today. The late Professor C. Wright Mills of Columbia University has written:

"... in this particular epoch a conjunction of historical circumstances has led to the rise of an elite of power ... the men of the circles composing this elite, severally and collectively, now make such key decisions as are made; and that, given the enlargement and the centralization of the means of power now available, the decisions that they make and fail to make carry more consequences for more people than has ever been the case in the world history of mankind." [Please see our article, "[Greed, Avarice and the Coming Dictatorship](#)."]



The fact is, THE RICH IN AMERICA ARE NOTHING MORE THAN CRIMINALS IN BUSINESS SUITS, But unlike the Mafioso (who have, in relative terms, only a few "hit men" at their disposal to enforce their will), the CEOs of General Electric, Ford Motor Company, Haliburton, Exxon-Mobil, etc. have the entire U.S. military at their disposal to enforce their will. AND SO WE NOW UNDERSTAND THE CRYPTIC REFERENCE TO "SHEBA, DEDAN AND THE MERCHANTS OF TARSHISH" IN EZEK. 38:13: "Sheba and Dedan, and the merchants of Tarshish, with all the young lions thereof, shall say unto thee (i.e., Gog), ART THOU COME TO TAKE A SPOIL? hast thou gathered thy company to take a prey? to carry away silver and gold, to take away cattle and goods, to take a great spoil?" (Ezek. 38:13)

Mills Continues:

"The pursuit of the moneyed-life is ... [the elite's] commanding value, in relation to which the influence of other values has declined, so ... **[THAT THEY HAVE] EASILY BECOME MORALLY RUTHLESS IN ITS PURSUIT...**"

"[They have] narrowed the meaning of 'success' to big money and in these terms condemn [financial] failure as the chief vice, raising money to the plane of absolute value."

"Whenever the standards of the moneyed-life prevail, the man with money, **NO MATTER HOW HE GOT IT**, will eventually be respected. [In America], it is not only that men want money; it is that their very standards are pecuniary. In a society [i.e., the American society] in which the money-maker has ... no serious rival for repute and honor, the word 'practical' comes to mean 'useful for private gain' and 'common sense', 'the sense to get ahead financially'."

Criminals in Armani Suits

Just as the moneyed elites of Tyre filled Tyre and Tyre's tribute states with bloodshed and violence, so also America's moneyed elites have filled America and her "client-states" with violence and bloodshed, except it's not called that when America's business elites "traffic" in it. When they rob the poor, dispossess them of their land and houses, pollute the environment, ship their jobs overseas to "slave-labor factories," instead of calling it what it is - i.e., "criminality" - they call what they are doing "sound business practices." [Please see our article, "[The American Empire and the New Global Elite](#);" please also see "[The American Empire and the U.S. System of Client-States](#)."]]

And its just not that they openly practice such things; they then buy up legislators, take control of the judiciary, co-opt the administrative organs of the government, and buy up the electoral process in order to insure that they are immune from the consequences of their felonious acts. Commenting on the kind of "democracy" they have created for themselves in America, Michael Parenti writes that as things stand now, the American people -



They look good on the outside; but inwardly they are CRIMINALS

"... might better think of [their system of government] ... as a dual political system. First, there is the symbolic political system centered around electoral and representative activities including party conflicts, voter turnout, political personalities, public pronouncements, official role-playing and certain ambiguous presentations of some of the public issues which bestir presidents, governors, mayors and their respective legislatures. Then there is the substantive political system, involving multi-billion dollar contracts, tax write-offs, protections, rebates, grants, loss compensations, subsidies, leases, giveaways and the whole vast process of budgeting, legislating, advising, regulating, protecting and servicing major producer interests - now bending or ignoring the law on behalf of the powerful, now applying it with full punitive vigor against heretics and 'troublemakers'. The symbolic system is highly visible, taught in schools, discussed by academicians, gossiped about by newsmen. The substantive system is seldom heard of or accounted for."

The fact is, **THE RICH IN AMERICA ARE NOTHING MORE THAN CRIMINALS IN ARMANI SUITS**; but unlike the Mafioso (who have, in relative terms, only a few "hit men" at their disposal to enforce their will), the CEOs of General Electric, Ford Motor Company, Haliburton, Exxon-Mobil, etc. have the entire U.S. military at their disposal to enforce their will. **AND SO WE NOW UNDERSTAND THE CRYPTIC REFERENCE TO "SHEBA, DEDAN AND THE MERCHANTS OF TARSHISH" IN EZEK. 38:13:**

"Sheba and Dedan, and the merchants of Tarshish, with all the young lions thereof, shall say unto thee (i.e., Gog), **ART THOU COME TO TAKE A SPOIL?** hast thou gathered thy company to

take a prey? to carry away silver and gold, to take away cattle and goods, to take a great spoil?" (Ezek. 38:13)

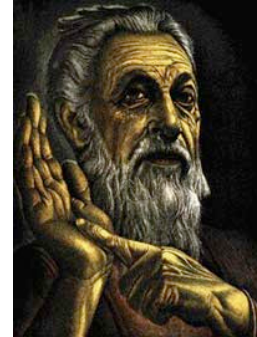
It is a protest that will act as a catalyst to America's presence in the Middle East and - again - it reveals whose ox is really being goaded by the forces of Islamic Radicalism (i.e., the CEOs of America's multinational oil companies), and who really is behind what's going on in the Middle East (i.e., these very same rapacious oil companies who - again - are more than willing to sacrifice America's sons and daughters for the sake of their "bottom lines").

THE PROPHECIES OF EZEKIEL AND DANIEL CONCERNING THE GOG/MAGOG WAR

The Prophet Ezekiel

We have now gleaned about as much as we can concerning the Gog/Magog War from the prophet Ezekiel. This much has been made clear:

- A group of Radical Islamic nations shall descend on Israel in the "latter days" to destroy Israel and "take a spoil."
- As foretold in Ezekiel 38:4, it will be a massive invasion. Persia (the land that is today occupied by modern Iran) and **TURKEY** will join in the attack. Ethiopia and Libya (ancient lands which today bear these same names) and others will evidently coordinate with the northern confederation in an attack from the south.
- There will be a protest from Sheba and Dedan and the "Merchants of Tarshish" - i.e., America's business elites - that will spur the United States into action against Gog.



Ezekiel

But, having said this, little else can be gleaned from Ezekiel concerning the Gog/Magog War except that Gog will be almost totally annihilated. But how will the war unfold? Are there other "players?" How exactly does the AntiChrist become involved? These and other questions are left unanswered by Ezekiel. Instead, Ezekiel passes over these questions, bypassing the rest of the Tribulation Period, and moves directly into a picture of a restored Israel during the Millennium.

The Prophet Daniel

We must take up the rest of the Gog/Magog story (where Ezekiel left off) in Daniel chapter eleven. [Please see *Daniel and the Latter Days* (Moody Press) by Robert Duncan Culver for an excellent treatment of these and other passages.]

Daniel 11:36-39 begins the prophecy with a description of the Antichrist and compares him with Antiochus Epiphanes [the Greek (by ethnicity) not Syrian ruler of the ancient Selussian Empire] who desecrated the Temple in Jerusalem in the Second Century B.C. (Daniel 11:21-35). Among other things, he (Antichrist) is described as a man who shall corrupt with flatteries (Daniel 11:32), and a man infatuated with military power and glory. Daniel goes on to say:



Daniel

"And at the end time [same as "in the latter years" - cf. Daniel 11:40 and Ezekiel 38:8] the king of the South [the leader of the southern confederation, i.e., **EGYPT**, Libya, etc.] will collide with him [i.e., the Antichrist - please see *Daniel and the Latter Days* by Robert Culver], and the king of the North [Gog] will storm against him [again, the Antichrist] with chariots, with horsemen, and with many ships; and he [Antichrist] will enter countries, overflow them, and pass through.

"He [i.e., the Antichrist] will also enter the Beautiful Land [i.e., Israel], and many countries will fall; but these will be rescued out of his hand: Edom, Moab and the foremost of the sons of Ammon [i.e., that portion of land east of the river Jordan which sweeps in a large arc (with the Dead Sea as the fulcrum) from about 30 miles northeast of the Dead Sea southward to about 50 miles due south, southeast of the same sea - a barren and desolate wilderness devoid of any significant vegetation. Mt. Nebo is located in this area where it is reputed that Jeremiah hid the "Arc of the Covenant" in order to prevent its capture by the Babylonians - and there are some scholars today (mainly Orthodox Jews) who believe that it is still there (Numbers 35)].



Antiochus Epiphanes

"Then he [i.e., Antichrist] will stretch out his hand against other countries, and the land of **EGYPT** will not escape.

"**HE [i.e., Antichrist] WILL GAIN CONTROL OVER THE HIDDEN TREASURES [i.e., THE OIL OF THE MIDDLE EAST] AND OVER ALL THE PRECIOUS THINGS ...**

"But rumors from the East and from the North will disturb him [i.e., Antichrist], and he [Antichrist] will go forth with great wrath to destroy and annihilate many.

"And he [Antichrist] will pitch the tents of his royal pavilion between the seas and the beautiful Holy Mountain ..." (Daniel 11:40-45a)



"HE [i.e., Antichrist] WILL GAIN CONTROL OVER THE HIDDEN TREASURES [i.e., THE OIL OF THE MIDDLE EAST] AND OVER ALL THE PRECIOUS THINGS ...

As described here, the Gog/Magog War will be initiated by a "push" from the king of the south (i.e., the leader of the southern confederation, probably the leader of **EGYPT**) against the Antichrist, whose forces are at least partially located in the "glorious land" [Israel] - probably as a result of a defense pact between Israel and Babylon, the nation which he leads. Shortly thereafter, the king of the north [Gog] - leading the combined forces of **TURKEY**, Iran, etc - will launch his attack, and between them, the king of the north and the king of the south will attempt to trap the combined forces of Israel and

Babylon in a giant pincer movement. The attack of the king of the north [Gog] has been referred to in Ezekiel 38 and 39. Now new detail is given. Ezekiel 38 and 39 had mentioned the fact that Ethiopia and Libya would join Gog in this attack; now a third nation is added – **EGYPT**. (Daniel 11:42)

Recapitulating and Combining the Prophecies of Ezekiel and Daniel

As a result of the information contained in the above verses and those in Ezekiel, we have now -

- An outline of how the war will unfold.
- An idea of where U.S. forces will be situated just prior to the beginning of the war, specifically in the environs of ancient Babylon and close to Israel.
- A final list of the **MAIN** "players" in the war: Israel, the United States, Turkey, Iran, and Egypt.
- The consequences of the war: The occupation of the land of Israel by American forces, and the annihilation of most of the people of the Middle East.

Matters Pertaining to Turkey and Egypt

This, at last, brings us to the matter of Turkey and Egypt; specifically their decline into the fires of Islamic Radicalism. The submergence of both countries in these fires will take place in an atmosphere of increasing turmoil and confusion in the Middle East as the forces of Islamic Radicalism (on the one hand) and America and her client-state, Israel (on the other hand) maneuver for advantage in the upcoming struggle for control of the vast oil riches of the area. In this struggle, both sides will be radicalized because - in the end - only the radicalized elements of each camp are prepared to endure the horrors of the clash that lie ahead; only they possess the *esprit de corps* (as it were) and the kind of intellectual (really, religious) rigor necessary for such a contest.

[We urge you to see our article, “[And So It Begins ...](#)” for a more up-to-date assessment of what’s going on in both Egypt and Turkey as well as elsewhere in the Middle East.]

Egypt

As the struggle continues, both sides will be progressively driven back to the ancient springs from which their cultures first drew breath; in the case of America, Christianity; and in the case of the Muslim people of the Middle East, Islam. There is no room on this battlefield for the "faint of heart," which in this case means the religious "moderates" on both sides. All this bodes ill for the "moderate" governments of Turkey and Egypt. Indeed, what's happening in both countries is that their "moderate" underpinnings are rotting away under the impress of Islamic Radicalism. In Egypt, the Muslim Brotherhood - a radical Islamic group that has been banned for years.



Turkey

In Turkey, the same rot is extant as in Egypt. All that's needed to push the "moderates" out in Turkey is the rejection of their bid for E.U. membership - a bid that looks increasingly shaky. For example,

Valéry Giscard d'Estaing of France recently asserted in an interview with *Le Monde* that Turkey has no business in the E.U. It's not a "Western" country at all. He continued:

"Turkey's capital is not in Europe, and 95 percent of its population is outside Europe. It has a different culture, a different approach, and a different way of life ... E.U. membership for Turkey would mean the end of Europe."

And Giscard d'Estaing is not alone in his sentiments. His comments have been echoed by West Germany's former chancellor, Helmut Schmidt, who publicly voiced fears that the admission of Turkey -

"... would open the door for similarly plausible full membership of other **MUSLIM** nations in Africa and the Middle East. That could result in the political union degenerating into nothing more than a free trade community [without a common culture]."



FROM LEFT TO RIGHT: Valéry Giscard d'Estaing, former premier of France and Helmut Schmidt, former chancellor of Germany; both believe that the admittance of Turkey, a Muslim nation, to the EU would destroy the unity of the European Union.

While the secular elites in Europe continue to press for Turkey's membership in the E.U., most of the differing populations of the E.U. member states are opposed to Turkey's membership for cultural and, yes, even religious reasons. The current population of Turkey is about 70 million; by contrast, Germany is the largest E.U. state with about 83 million residents, but it is shrinking by about 82,000 a year while Turkey's population is exploding. That means that in a few years, Turkey would be the largest state - both in terms of geography and sheer numbers - in the E.U. What that could mean is that Europe could be flooded with Muslim immigrants who would be accorded unrestricted immigration rights under the E.U. Charter. That's something that sends shivers down the spines of most Europeans.

Should Turkey's bid for membership in the E.U. continue to stall, however, Turkey could irrevocably turn away from "moderation" and embrace Islamic Radicalism. Indeed, the current government of Turkey is made up in part from previously banned Islamic parties.

The leader of this coalition, Recep Tayyip Erdogan, has warned that if things continue as they are, the Turks will look at the E.U. as "nothing more than a Christian Club" which is closed to Islamic participation.

AND THE FACT IS, THERE IS ALREADY A GROWING SENTIMENT IN TURKEY AGAINST BECOMING A "PARIAH" MEMBER OF THE E.U. WHEN IT COULD INSTEAD BECOME THE LEADING MEMBER IN A COALITION OF ISLAMIC STATES THAT WOULD STRETCH FROM MOROCCO TO THE PHILIPPINES



How Close Is the Collapse of the Egyptian and Turkish Governments?

The question, now, that fairly begs to be asked is, How close are we to the collapse of the present “moderate” governments of Turkey and Egypt? The short answer is, very close! Indeed, both Turkey and Egypt stand in just about the same situation as the government of Iran did just prior to the fall of the Shah.

When the collapse of the Shah finally came in 1978 - which led to the Middle East's first Islamic government - it looked at the time to have come out of nowhere. But the social rot that led to the collapse of the Shah's government had been eating away at Iran's foundations for years. While the façade remained, the substance was gone; as a result, when the collapse came, it came suddenly. **THIS IS PRECISELY WHAT IS GOING TO HAPPEN VERY SOON NOW IN BOTH EGYPT AND TURKEY - AND NOTHING WILL BE ABLE TO STAVE OFF THIS COLLAPSE.**

IMPORTANT NOTE

The collapse of the “moderate” government of Hosni Mubarak has already occurred – we URGE you to see our articles with regard to this matter, “Confronting the Inevitable Collapse of America’s Client-States in the Middle East” and “The Egyptian Revolution and the Growth of Radical Islam.”

Moreover, this kind of rot is extant in almost all the “moderate” governments of the Middle East and North Africa - from Morocco and Algeria in the west, through Saudi Arabia, Kuwait, Qatar, Bahrain, Yemen, Lebanon, and Syria in the center - and even eastward through Pakistan, the states of Central Asia, and on into Malaysia. The fact is, all of these secular governments are rotten to their very foundations, **AND THIS ROT HAS A LOT TO DO WITH THE FACT THAT THEY ARE ALL AMERICAN CLIENT-STATES** with very little popular support at the grass-roots level.

Ultimately, the “moderate” governments of each of these states owe their existence to the support of the U.S. military; and all of them are in league with the Americans in the rape of their respective countries by America's huge "multi-national" corporations - corporations such as Exxon-Mobil, Haliburton, Shell (which, despite its British and Dutch façade, is really an American-owned corporation), Conoco-Phillips, Dow, Union Carbide, etc.

But Egypt and Turkey are crucial in the fact that they - together with Iran - possess among themselves more than 80 percent of the population of the Middle East. That makes what happens to them crucial to what happens to the Middle East as a whole.

NOTE

While nothing is DIRECTLY said about such countries as Pakistan, Afghanistan, Syria, Lebanon, Saudi Arabia, Morocco, Algeria, Tunisia, the nations of Central Asia, etc., great peril nonetheless attaches itself to the populations of these nations. And why is that? - because (1) their proximity to the "killing fields" of the Gog/Magog War places them in great jeopardy, and (2) each of them also possesses populations that are dangerously near to delivering themselves over to the power of Islamic Radicalism. That would then make them DIRECT targets of Babylon's (i.e., America's) fury as well. Pakistan stands in particular peril because it possesses nuclear weapons which would make it a special target should it succumb to Islamic Radicalism.

RESTATING THE FACTS ON THE GROUND

When Egypt and Turkey go, all of the Middle East will go with them! - **AND, AGAIN, IT'S JUST A MATTER OF TIME NOW**. When that finally happens, **ALL THE "PLAYERS" THAT ARE DIRECTLY MENTIONED IN THE PROPHETIC SCRIPTURES WILL HAVE GATHERED THEMSELVES TO WAR**:

- **TURKEY**: Turkey is still a U.S. client-state, but is very close to collapsing into the frenzy of Islamic Radicalism. It should be noted here that when we speak of Turkey in the ancient scripts, we are speaking of Magog, Mesheck, Tubal, and Gomer. It should also be noted in this connection that none of these ancient lands extended northward into what is known today as Russia. **RUSSIA IS NOT REFERENCED BY EITHER THE PROPHET EZEKIEL OF DANIEL**; the names "Mesheck" and "Tubal" are **NOT** references to "Moscow" and "Tobolsk" as some have naively suggested. That's conjecture; the facts are these: Mesheck and Tubal are mentioned in ancient Assyrian inscriptions as being located in what is now known as the Transcaucasian Region - the extreme northern horizon of the Hebrews (Ezek. xxxviii. 15; xxxix. 2). This area encompasses what is now known as Azerbaijan, Dagestan, and Turkey. In addition, **"ROSH" IS NOT A PSEUDONYM FOR "RUSSIA"** as some have alleged; that, again, is conjecture; the facts are these: Rosh is an ancient designation for the tribes north of the Taurus mountains (i.e., in the Caucasus area) ..." [Please see the *Biblical and Theological Dictionary* and the *New Schaff-Herzog Encyclopedia of Religious Knowledge*.]
- **IRAN**: Already a designated Islamic Republic; in the process of building a nuclear bomb.
- **ETHIOPIA** (including the Sudan): Already designated Islamic Republics.
- **LIBYA**: An enemy of the United States; though not yet a declared Islamic Republic, it is already a *de facto* one. [**We urge you to inform yourself regarding Libya's current situation: "Libya: Lies, Lies, and More Lies" and "Libya: US-NATO Military Intervention."**]
- **EGYPT**: Still a U.S. client-state, but - like Turkey - very close to collapsing into the frenzy of Islamic Radicalism. [**As we have already indicated, Egypt's co-called "moderate" government has already succumbed. Again, please see our articles, "Confronting the Inevitable Collapse of America's Client-States in the Middle East" and "The Egyptian Revolution and the Growth of Radical Islam."**]
- **ISRAEL**: A U.S. client state and America's **CAT'S PAW** in the Middle East.
- **THE UNITED STATES**: Already ensconced in the land of ancient Babylon (i.e., Iraq), and is in the process of building fourteen **SUPER-BASES** out in the Iraqi desert away from Iraq's population centers and the prying eyes of the world press. In addition - and more ominously for Israel - the U.S. is also building a **SUPER-BASE** in Israel itself that is so huge that it is reputed to be half the size of the city of Tel Aviv.

PART 6: ISRAEL'S AGREEMENT WITH HELL

DWIGHT PENTECOST ON THE COMING DEFENSE PACT

There is only one other event before us that we have yet to examine in connection with the Gog/Magog War and the beginning of the Tribulation: The signing of a **FORMAL** defense pact between the United States and Israel. The Scripture calls this agreement between Israel and Prophetic Babylon as **"YOUR [i.e., ISRAEL'S] COVENANT WITH DEATH"** and **"YOUR AGREEMENT WITH HELL:"**

"Wherefore, hear the word of the Lord, ye ... men that rule this people which is in Jerusalem.

"Because ye have said, We have made a **COVENANT WITH DEATH, AND WITH HELL** [Prophetic Babylon] are we at agreement; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, it shall not come unto us ...

"[But] ... your **COVENANT WITH DEATH** shall be disannulled, and your **AGREEMENT WITH HELL** shall not stand; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, then ye shall be trodden down by it." (Isaiah 28:14-15, 18)



Israel's "Covenant with Death" and its "Agreement with Hell."

Why does the Bible use such strong language with regard to this covenant? - because it is an abomination to God for His people to trust in anything but the hand of God! It is a fearful thing for the people of God [be that people Israel or the church] to trust in gentile world power. God calls it "harlotry!" Concerning this pact, J. Dwight Pentecost writes:

"According to Daniel 9:26-27 ... [Babylon (i.e., the United States)] will make a covenant with Israel for a seven year period. This covenant evidently ... guarantees Israel's integrity [i.e., is a defense pact] ... [and] also is a Satanic imitation of the fulfillment of the Abrahamic covenant which ... [guaranteed] Israel title deed to the land. This action is pictured by John [in the Apocalypse] (Rev. 16:2) as a rider going forth to conquer [as the first horseman in the Apocalypse] ... This condition exists for three and one-half years, after which the covenant is broken by the ... [Antichrist]."

SIR ROBERT ANDERSON ON THE COMING DEFENSE PACT

Sir Robert Anderson elaborates on the prophetic circumstances surrounding this treaty and its connection to the Tribulation Period:

"... the Seventieth Week [i.e., the seven year period of the Tribulation Period] will be a definite period of time, of which the beginning, the middle, and the end are definitely marked [by certain well defined events]. [Just as the beginning of the first sixty-nine weeks were signified] ... not by the return of the Jews from Babylon, nor yet by the rebuilding of their Temple, but by the **SIGNING OF THE PERSIAN DECREE [TREATY]** which restored ... [them], so also the beginning of the Seventieth Week will date not from their restoration to Judea [May 14, 1948], nor yet from the future rebuilding of their shrine, but from the **SIGNING OF THE [DEFENSE] TREATY BY THE COMING PRINCE [ANTICHRIST]**."

NOTE

It is important to note here that Anderson pins the actual commencement of the Tribulation Period to the signing of this defense pact. IT SHOULD BE FURTHER NOTED THAT HE WHO SIGNS THIS TREATY ON BEHALF OF BABYLON (i.e., THE UNITED STATES) IS THE ANTICHRIST. THAT WILL BE THE FIRST "SURE SIGN" AS TO HIS IDENTITY.

This brings us to a particularly enigmatic portion of Scripture; specifically Ezekiel 38:11:

"And thou [i.e., Gog] shalt say, I will go up to the land of **UNWALLED VILLAGES** [i.e., Israel]; I will go to them that are at rest, that dwell safely, all of them dwelling without walls, and having neither bars nor gates ..." (Ezekiel 38:11)

What strange, enigmatic words these are that God speaks to Gog, Israel's ancient, spectral enemy; strange especially insofar as their references to Israel as "a land of **UNWALLED** villages," and a people who "dwell **WITHOUT WALLS**."

"Unwalled villages?" People "dwelling without walls?" - it sounds like something out of the *Song of Roland* or *Canterbury Tales*. Something medieval and gothic! - especially in this day and age. No one builds defensive walls around towns and cities anymore. That went out with the advent of modern artillery more than five centuries ago - **EXCEPT IN ONE PLACE: ISRAEL, WHERE CONSTRUCTION OF A "DEFENSIVE WALL" IS PROCEEDING WITH ALL POSSIBLE DISPATCH! - GIVING THE VERSES IN EZEKIEL 38:8-12 A NEW AND VERY OMINOUS MEANING. SUDDENLY, THE WORDS OF THE PROPHET EZEKIEL DON'T SOUND QUITE AS "ANTIQUÉ" AS THEY HAD SOUNDED PREVIOUSLY.**

Yes! There is a **WALL** in the land of Israel today. A "defensive" **WALL**. It is made up of concrete slabs up to 30 feet high in some places, razor wire, electrical fencing, ditches, trenches, roads, sensors, and surveillance devices; it is Israel's attempt to create a "defensible border" between itself and the Palestinians; between Israelis and the *Intifada*. The **WALL** creates a frontier between the Jewish nation and the Palestinians that has been "adjusted" to take into account Israel's defense requirements; a **WALL** that that is universally condemned by the so-called "world community."

The problem, however, for those who oppose the **WALL** is that it works - at least insofar as Israel is concerned: The very real fact of the matter is, where the **WALL** has been completed, incursions by Palestinians into Israel proper bent on murder and slaughter have been reduced dramatically. **INDEED, IT PROBABLY WOULDN'T BE TOO MUCH TO SAY THAT THE WALL REPRESENTS THE MOST "WORKABLE" AND "PRACTICAL" SOLUTION ISRAEL HAS BEEN ABLE TO CONCOCT TO DATE AGAINST ATTACK BY ITS ARAB AND PALESTINIAN ENEMIES.** In light of this, one would have to ask, Why would Israel give the **WALL** up? It would be "nuts" for Israel to do so. And yet, very obviously, at the time of Gog's attack on Israel, the **WALL** is gone. That's what Ezek. 38:11-12 makes clear:

"... I (i.e., Gog) will go up to the land of **UNWALLED** villages; I will go to them that are at rest, that dwell safely, all of them dwelling **WITHOUT** walls, and having neither bars nor gates ...

"To take a spoil, and to take a prey ..." (Ezek. 38:11-12)

So, again, the question that springs to mind is, Why would Israel sacrifice the security that the **WALL** had given them? - unless, of course, Israel had received something in **EXCHANGE**; something it considered more valuable: a **DEFENSE PACT** with the most powerful nation on earth - the United States!

Yes! - that's what has very evidently occurred, and it is **EXACTLY** this "Defense Pact" that the prophet Isaiah condemns as a "**COVENANT WITH DEATH**" (Isaiah 28:18) and as an "**AGREEMENT WITH HELL**" (Isaiah 28:18) [Please see our article, "[The Wall: The Israeli/Palestinian Accords and Israel's Agreement with Death and Hell.](#)"]



ISRAEL: thinking that it is dwelling safely under the wings of the American military as a result of its new treaty with the United States – a treaty that the Bible condemns as Israel's "**COVENANT WITH DEATH**" and its "**AGREEMENT WITH HELL.**"

PART 7: THE CHRISTIAN RADICALIZATION OF THE UNITED STATES

A RACE BACK TO THE DARK AGES

We have spoken of the radicalization of the Islamic nations of the Middle East and Central Asia, but the United States is also going through a similar process of radicalization: A **CHRISTIAN** radicalization. Those who get caught up in it will inevitably find themselves allied with the Antichrist and the power of hell!

That radicalization process is already far advanced and is apparent to anyone who has "eyes to see" and "ears to hear" (Mark 8:18). The fact is, **CHRISTIANITY IN THE UNITED STATES IS IN A RACE BACK TO THE DARK AGES, THE DAYS OF POPE GREGORY VII AND THE CRUSADES**, and this is made apparent not in the secret memoranda of the leaders of today's American Church, but in their public pronouncements. Again, we turn to the words of C. Peter Wagner, a professor at Fuller Theological Seminary and the father of the "Church Growth Movement" which has taken hold everywhere in American Christendom today; Wagner, who once considered President George Bush "**GOD'S MAN ON EARTH**," says:

NOTE

While the "moderate" presidency of Barak Obama has by now succeeded the presidency of George Bush, these quotes by Wagner continue to ring loudly in the ears of Christians everywhere – Christians who believe that someday soon they will be given another chance at imposing a "Religious Right" president on the country.

"In God's providence, things have now changed in Washington. The election of 2000 [which brought George Bush to power] was a vital spiritual victory for our nation ... Today we have leaders who desire a **DIVINE CONNECTION BETWEEN HEAVEN AND EARTH**."

Wagner elaborates on what he calls this "*divine connection between heaven and earth*:"

"We must keep in mind that there are two important and interconnecting worlds, the visible world of the natural world and the invisible world of the spiritual world. **God has established governments to set policies and execute strategies in the visible world. He has established the church to do likewise in the invisible world.**"

BLOOD, GORE AND MANGLED BODIES

The thoughts expressed here by Wagner are truly amazing - and are portentous of fearful things to come: of blood and gore and mangled bodies; of ruin and heartache; of orphans and widows; of tears and great sadness!



C. Peter Wagner is pulling the West back to the Dark Ages and the Medieval Church - a world filled with witches and demons and "things that go bump in the night;" a world where the church and the state - i.e., those twin powers of *Regnum* and *Sacerdotium* that governed the lives of Medieval Man - were co-equals in the affairs of mankind.



Odin's son Thor, by M. E. Winge

Wagner is pulling the West back to the Dark Ages and the Medieval Church - a world filled with witches and demons and "things that go bump in the night;" a world where the church and the state - i.e., those twin powers of *Regnum* and *Sacerdotium* that governed the lives of Medieval Man - were co-equals in the affairs of mankind. This doctrine was known to the Medieval Church as the "Doctrine of the Two Swords" (i.e., the "temporal sword" and the "spiritual sword"): To the Caesars of the state must be given some things, to the church of God must be given others. *Si Roma locuta sit, causa finita sit*. [Please see our articles, "[Apostasy: Christianity in the Service of a Religio-Political-Corporate Terrorist State](#)" and "[Political Christianity](#)."]]

Hildebrand (i.e., Gregory VII, pope from 1073 - 1085) wrote:

"... the spiritual [i.e., churchly] and temporal [i.e., civil] powers are entrusted to two different orders, each drawing its authority from God, each supreme in its own sphere, and independent, within its own sphere, of the other ... the king is subject to the bishop in spiritual matters, the bishop is to the king in temporal matters." [Please see our article, "[Regnum and Sacerdotium](#)."]]

This is precisely what Wagner and others of his ilk believe.

Wagner believes that for there to be victory in the "visible world" (i.e., victory for the "American New World Order System" which he fervently believes is God's "Redeemer Nation" ordained by Him to conquer the world for "Christ and the church - please see our article, "[Inside the American New World Order System](#)") there must be victory in the "invisible world" (i.e., the church). That both spheres (worlds) must coordinate their respective efforts in order to bring God's Kingdom to earth. Wagner writes,



"It is our responsibility, as church leaders, to use the authority that God has delegated to us and to conquer the invisible forces of darkness ... **THIS IS WHAT OPENS THE WAY FOR OUR GOVERNMENT LEADERS TO MAKE GODLY DECISIONS IN THE NATURAL REALM.**"

Wagner continues:

"We have enemies in both the visible world and the invisible world, and, ultimately, our enemies in the invisible world, under Satan as their Commander-in-Chief, influence our natural enemies such as the hijackers who commandeered the commercial jets which inflicted unthinkable destruction on our nation."

A HOLY WAR (CRUSADE) AGAINST ISLAM

And make no mistake about it, Wagner is plainly making a connection between Islam and the events of 9-11. Wagner is plainly setting up an equation here, as it were: Islam = Satan; and Christianity = God.

Wagner goes on:

"... If our government leaders ... are to implement God's purpose here on earth, the church must be equally ready to move into a wartime stance and go on the offensive ... It is time to go to battle in the invisible world ..."



Wagner says that it is the duty of church leaders everywhere to prepare Christians for battle in the "invisible realm" in support of what the US is trying to accomplish in the "visible realm;" to that end, church leaders must thwart and defeat any "**CLINTONESQUE** (Wagner's word), **PACIFISTIC, ANTI-WAR** mood" from taking hold of the church; the unity of the church is paramount if pacifism is to be defeated, and anti-war sentiment successfully driven from the church. Accordingly, the saints must be brought **UNDER THE DISCIPLINE OF THEIR PASTORS** and elders, who in turn must **SUBMIT** themselves to the **RULE** (i.e., the government) of the "Apostles and Prophets." Wagner says,

"God has prepared us for this moment: Intercessors began to be recognized in the 1970s, prophets in the 1980s, and apostles in the 1990s. **THE GOVERNMENT OF THE CHURCH IS IN PLACE** and we must be obedient ... [The apostles are now prepared to rule over the saints and prepare them for war] ... the church leaders most responsible for **MOVING BELIEVERS INTO WAR ARE THE APOSTLES** ..."



According to C. Peter Wagner, Christians must make themselves ready for war – and not just “spiritual warfare,” but “physical warfare” as well.

Wagner sees all this - i.e., the "recovery" of the ministry of "intercessors," "prophets," and "apostles" - as "divine preparation" for the coming war - a war that Barbara Wentroble prophesied about, saying -

"... Eat and drink and gain new strength. Rise up and **GET READY FOR WAR.**"

Wagner says that "pacifism" in the church opens the door to "a spirit of fear." The "government of the church" must drive out that spirit by imposing **OBEEDIENCE** on the saints - again, the kind of obedience that will culminate in church **UNITY**. This will then enable the church to take its place with America in what he calls "this great prophetic moment." [Please see our article, "[Today's Church: Making Zombies out of Christians: The Prophets and Apostles Movement.](#)"]

Wagner goes on to say,

"I believe that we are on the threshold of entering into a season in which the power of God in prophecy, healing, miracles, strategic-level spiritual warfare ... will be widely manifested."

Pope Gregory VII couldn't have said it better.

CAN ANYONE REASONABLY DOUBT?

Can anyone who is reasonably conversant with the Prophetic Scriptures doubt that this kind of thinking is the fulfillment of Revelation 17? - a picture of things in the "end of days" that portrays a religious system - a "Woman" - sitting on a "Beast" full of names of blasphemy (cursings, profanities, impieties and irreverence) towards God? And can anyone really doubt the twin entities that the Scripture has in view here? - the United States and the American Church?

Pentecost's description of these twin entities should erase any doubt on this matter. He writes:

"Turning then to the seventeenth chapter of the Book of Revelation, we see the whole stage filled with two personalities only: a "Beast" and a "Woman" ... these two ... picture ... the future prophetic earth ... there can be no argument or discussion as to this speaking of both the **CIVIL** [political, economic, and military] and **ECCLESIASTICAL** [religious] conditions that will rule and characterize that part of the earth that is within the limits or boundaries of Prophecy. The whole of it will be filled with what shall answer to this 'Beast' and this 'Woman'. The two [the 'Beast' (which answers to the Civil Power) and the 'Woman' (which answers to the Religious Power)] are thus indissolubly co-related, and tell us to what end all [this is] trending; and that is that there will eventually be a one World-Empire and a one World-Church, and these will cover the whole of what is now called **CHRISTENDOM**; the one Empire supporting the one Church, [as] the 'Beast' in the picture supports the 'Woman', and the 'Woman' is supported by the 'Beast' ... "



Church and state united together to take back the earth for Christ.

Come on now! - isn't that a precise picture of what's going on in the United States? Of course it is! Isn't this exactly the kind of America that Wagner and his ilk are pressing towards? Of course it is? And isn't this the kind of union between church and state that the right-wing of the Republican Party is encouraging as a result of their pandering to the Religious Right? Of course it is! Finally, isn't this dual system of church and

state the exact kind of system that plunged the world into the holy wars that pitted Islam against the Christianity 1,000 years ago? Of course it is!

When we speak, therefore, of a race back to the Dark Ages we're not just blowing smoke! **AND THIS NEW SYSTEM OF THINGS IS EMANATING STRAIGHT OUT OF AMERICA**, and is spreading out and filling the world.

PART 8: A FINAL RECAPITULATION

"Not everyone who says unto me Lord, Lord shall enter the Kingdom of Heaven." (Matt. 7:21)

THE TIME OF JUDGMENT HAS ARRIVED

We have said that the Tribulation is a "time of testing" (Rev. 3:10) - a "trial" (so to speak) that will **SEPARATE** those who claim to be Christians and are not (the goats) from those who really are (the sheep). To a very large extent, this **SEPARATION** process will be based on how one relates to the American New World Order System and - *ipso facto* - his treatment of the poor and dispossessed of the world. (Matt. 25:44-46). The course of the Tribulation will be follows:

- The Tribulation Period will begin in war and will end in war; specifically -
- The Gog/Magog War will begin the Tribulation Period.
- Armageddon will end the Tribulation Period.
- The Trial (or "Process") will last for seven years and will be divided into two parts:

The "Beginning of Sorrows" (the first three and a half years).

The "Great Tribulation" (the second three and a half years).

- The dividing point for these two eras will be an event known as the "Abomination of Desolation" which will, in effect, rip the mask of Christianity off the face of the American New World Order System.

THE GOG/MAGOG WAR (THE BEGINNING OF THE TRIBULATION PERIOD)

As we have already indicated, the **Gog/Magog War** will begin shortly after the consummation of a defense pact between Israel and the United States guaranteeing Israel's security in connection with an Israeli/Palestinian Peace Accord predicated on an Israeli withdrawal back to the so-called "Green Line"



Otto Dix - "Shock Troops Advance under Gas from The War", 1924 - Etching, aquatint, and drypoint from a portfolio of fifty. Plate: 19.5 x 28.8 cm, sheet: 34.8 x 47.3 cm. Publisher: Karl Nierendorf, Berlin. Printer: Otto Feising, Berlin. Edition: 75. Gift of Abby Aldrich Rockefeller. © 2011 Artists Rights Society (ARS), NY / VG Bild-Kunst, Bonn.

The horror and shock of war: this is what C. Peter Wagner and his neo-conservative allies are pushing the world into.

(Israel's 1967 Border) and the reduction of Israel's security wall. The hope here is that such an agreement will diffuse the frenzy of Islamic Radicalism in the Near East. The accord will fail; but the defense pact will remain intact.

Hostilities will commence as a result of a "push" from Radical Islamic forces to the south of Israel: Three Islamic nations are specifically mentioned as participants:

- Egypt.
- Ethiopia (including the Sudan).
- Libya.

Soon after the "push" from the south, Radical Islamic forces from the north will join the forces coming up from the south. Two Islamic nations are specifically mentioned as participants:

- Turkey.
- Iran.

These attacks will aim at:

- The destruction of Israel.
- The expulsion from the Middle East of the United States whose forces are located in the environs of ancient Babylon (i.e., Iraq).
- The forces of Radical Islam will be destroyed, and five-sixths of the population of the Middle East will be annihilated.

THE AFTERMATH OF THE GOG/MAGOG WAR

The U.S. will seize the oil fields [i.e., the "hidden treasures" (Dan. 11:43)] of the Middle East and take steps to place Israel under what will amount to be a permanent occupation, fulfilling the words of Scripture to Israel:

"The overflowing scourge (the military forces of the United States) shall pass through, then ye (Israel) shall be trodden down by it." (Isaiah 28:18)

Using its victory in the Gog/Magog War, the U.S. will then launch a ruthless and bloody struggle to erase all the opponents of the American New World Order System worldwide.

This bloody campaign will continue all through the first half of the Tribulation Period (i.e., The "Beginning of Sorrows") during which time the convoluted relationship between Israel and the church (on the one side) and the United States (on the other hand) will be unraveled - ending in the Abomination of Desolation at which time the AntiChrist will reveal himself as the enemy of both.



"The overflowing scourge (the military forces of the United States) shall pass through, then ye (Israel) shall be trodden down by it." (Isaiah 28:18)

XVI

AFTERMATH

It is now that the process begins insofar as the **MANIFESTATION** of the **TRUE** "sons of God" are concerned in both the church and Israel - a process that will separate the wheat from the chaff, the real from the unreal, those who have pretended to be the "Sons of God" and those who really are. And because of this great **SEPARATION** of the **"REAL"** from the "unreal," just and seeking men everywhere will be drawn to the "Kingdom of God" producing even in such a time, the "Great Harvest of the Lamb."

The Bible explains:

"For the earnest expectation of the ... [creation] waiteth for the **MANIFESTATION** of the sons of God." (Romans 8:19)

The Amplified Bible puts it this way:

"For [even the whole] creation ... waits expectantly and longs earnestly for God's sons [the Church] to be made known - waits for the **REVEALING**, the **DISCLOSURE** of their sonship." (Romans 8:19, Zondervan, the *Amplified Bible*)

In this Paul is saying that the whole universe is waiting for something to happen insofar as the "Kingdom of God" is concerned. It is waiting for the "sons of God" to be **"REVEALED," "DISCLOSED," "MANIFESTED"** - and the disclosure of the so-called 144,000 of Revelation chapter 7 and the 144,000 of Revelation chapter 14. [**We URGE you once again to review the material on the 144,000 in Part 7 of Chapter VIII and all of chapter X.**]

The testimony will be produced in the church by those who give themselves over to the promulgation and dissemination of the **"GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM,"** and in Israel by those who renounce the alliance between Israel and Babylon and insist that Israel's refuge lies in the coming Messiah. (Please see Zech. 12:8-14, 13:1, 6)

PART 1: THE VALLEY OF DECISION

"PUT YE IN THE SICKLE, for the harvest is ripe: come, get you down; for the press is full, the fats overflow; for their wickedness *is* great.

"Multitudes, multitudes in the valley of decision: for the day of the LORD *is* near in the valley of decision.

"The sun and the moon shall be darkened, and the stars shall withdraw their shining. (Joel 3:13-15)

"MULTITUDES, MULLTITUDES IN THE VALLEY OF DECISION, FOR THE DAY OF THE LORD IS NEAR." The world is about ready to be reaped [Joel 3:13-15 (above)] - and you're Christianity is about to be tested: and after that, the **JUDGMENT**.

In this test, it's not what you claim to be that will count for anything, but what you really are: What you **PROVE** yourself to be. Again, the Bible says:

"NOT EVERY ONE THAT SAITH UNTO ME, LORD, LORD, SHALL ENTER INTO THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven." (Matt. 7:21)

AT THE TIME OF THE END

The Bible says that in the immediate aftermath of the Gog / Magog War, the AntiChrist shall -

"... come ... **LIKE A WHIRLWIND** ... and shall **OVERFLOW** and **PASS OVER**."

"He will also enter the Beautiful Land [i.e., Israel] ..." (Daniel 11:40-41)



The AntiChrist shall "... come ... **LIKE A WHIRLWIND** ... and shall **OVERFLOW** and **PASS OVER**. He will also enter the Beautiful Land [i.e., Israel] ..." (Daniel 11:40-41)

The Bible continues:

"... and many countries will fall; [i.e., many nations in the Middle East shall fall prey to him]

"Then he [i.e., Antichrist] will stretch out his hand against other countries, and the land of Egypt [which was formerly AntiChrist's ally] will not escape.

"And he [i.e., Antichrist] will **GAIN CONTROL OVER THE HIDDEN TREASURES** ... [no doubt, the oil reserves of the region]

"But rumors from the East and from the North will disturb him [i.e., Antichrist], and he [Antichrist] will go forth **WITH GREAT WRATH** to **DESTROY** and **ANNIHILATE** many. [i.e., shall go

north in the direction of Europe, and east in the direction of Pakistan, Indonesia, etc.] (Dan. 11:41-44)

What's happened here? The Gog/Magog war is done, and AntiChrist, claiming that the victory is his, has entered the Holy Land, and from there he has "**OVERFLOWED**" (Dan. 11:40) into the Middle East in general with an **ENORMOUSLY POWERFUL** army.

And why has he come (the defense pact notwithstanding)? - to "**GAIN CONTROL OVER THE HIDDEN TREASURES**" of the area: the **OIL**. But as he seizes the oil, a protest against what he is doing is raised from a group of nations to the "north" and "east" of the Middle East (we are left to speculate on the names of those countries), and he sends forth his army in great wrath to "**DESTROY**" and "**ANNIHILATE**" those who oppose him. Then the Bible says that -



He [Antichrist] will go forth **WITH GREAT WRATH** to **DESTROY** and **ANNIHILATE** many

"... he [Antichrist] will pitch the tents of his royal pavilion between the seas and the beautiful Holy Mountain ..." (Daniel 11:45)

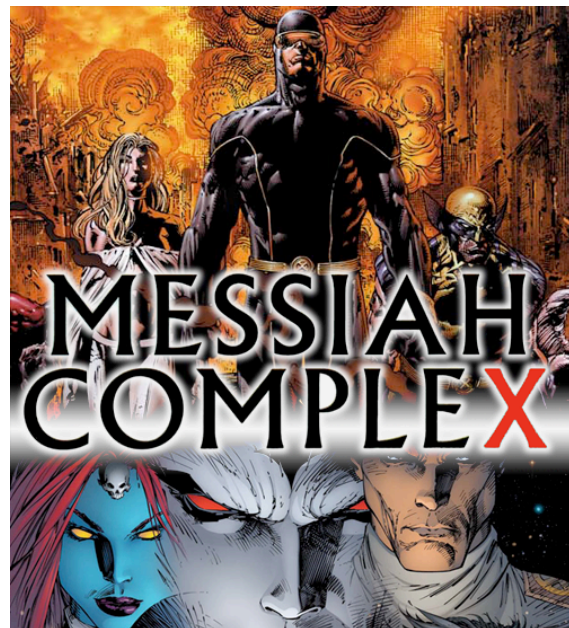
PART 2: THE GOG / MAGOG WAR PRODUCES A MESSIAH-COMPLEX IN THE LEADER OF BABYLON

The whole dark and sinister tenor of these verses indicates that something astonishing has happened to the AntiChrist. The victory that he supposes to be his as a result of the Gog/Magog War has very obviously produced within him an extraordinary "**MESSIAH-COMPLEX**," so that now he seems to be saying with Lucifer, "Son of the Morning:"

"... I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north:

"I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High." (Is. 14:13-41)

And the proof that he has been seized by a "**MESSIAH-COMPLEX**" is evidenced by the fact that the Bible says that after he has destroyed his enemies "to the north" and "to the east," he returns to the Holy Land to "... *pitch the tents of his royal pavilion between the seas and the beautiful Holy Mountain* ..." (Daniel 11:45) In other words, so taken is AntiChrist by his new "**MESSIAH-COMPLEX**" that he "establishes" himself in Jerusalem - the "City of God." Whatever doubts that he had had that he was "**ON A MISSION FROM GOD**" have now all been erased; and in this connection, it should be noted that Isaiah 28:18 seems to indicate that AntiChrist's "presence" in Israel has been transformed into a kind of military **OCCUPATION** - or how else should one understand that Israel is



The victory that he (Antichrist) supposes to be his as a result of the Gog/Magog War has very obviously produced within him an extraordinary "**MESSIAH-COMPLEX**," so that now he seems to be saying with Lucifer, "Son of the Morning:" "... I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High." (Is. 14:13-41)

now **"TRODDEN DOWN"** by the **"OVERFLOWING SCOURGE"** (i.e., the AntiChrist).

The question is, from where did this "messiah-complex" originate? AntiChrist is, after all, merely a man; he is not God; he is not divine. Indeed, speaking of him, the Bible says,

"Son of man, say unto the prince of Tyrus [i.e., AntiChrist - please see *The Coming Prince* by Robert Duncan Culver], Thus saith the Lord GOD; Because thine heart is lifted up, and thou hast said, I am a God, I sit in the seat of God, in the midst of the seas; **YET THOU ART A MAN**, and not God, though thou set thine heart as the heart of God ..." (Ezek. 28:2)

AntiChrist's "messiah-complex" originated from somewhere, just as Hitler's did. Hitler received his ideas from the German people - people such as Alfred Rosenberg, Houston Stewart Chamberlain (who was actually an Englishman, but who became German), Friedrich Wilhelm Nietzsche, etc. Where did AntiChrist get his? That's the question! These ideas - the kind that lead to a "messiah-complex" - don't appear out of thin air.

THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN A TYRANT AND A MESSIAH

The one great difference between a tyrant and a messiah-figure (which AntiChrist plainly is) is that a tyrant forces himself on a population; he imposes himself on it, often by force of arms like a Pinochet or a Samosa. But a messiah-figure - someone like a Hitler, for instance - receives his power by acclimation. Rather than imposing himself on people, he gives the appearance of emanating from them - and this is precisely what the Scriptures say about AntiChrist:

"And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy." (Rev. 13:1) **[In Scripture, the "sea" is a representation of the people; in other words, the "beast" (AntiChrist) originates from the people by acclimation.]**

A messiah-figure is in a very real sense a living **MANIFESTATION** of the people out from which he comes; he is their creation, their "mirror image" - and so much so that it is often the case that the people "recognize" a "messiah" long before he "recognizes" himself.

The well-known English historian Ian Kershaw writes concerning the possessor of this kind of "charisma" or "messianism" (specifically, as it pertained to Hitler):

"If I have found one concept more than any other which has helped me to find a way to bind together the otherwise contradictory approaches [to Hitler] through biography and the writing of social history, it is Max Weber's notion of 'charismatic leadership' - a notion which looks to explanations of this extraordinary form of political domination primarily in the perception of 'charisma', that is, in the society rather than, in the first instance, in the personality of the object of their adulation."

What Kershaw is saying here is that the holder of "charismatic power" derives it not so much from the force of his own personality, but from a society that is predisposed toward seeing him as such; specifically,



"And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy." (Rev. 13:1) [In Scripture, the "sea" is a representation of the people; in other words, the "beast" (AntiChrist) originates from the people by acclimation.]

A messiah-figure is in a very real sense a living MANIFESTATION of the people out from which he comes; he is their creation, their "mirror image" - and so much so that it is often the case that the people "recognize" a "messiah" long before he "recognizes" himself.

IT IS DERIVED FROM THE READINESS OF OTHERS TO SEE HIM AS A MESSIANIC FIGURE.

PART 3: SEEKING THE SOURCE OF ANTICHRIST'S POWER

Max Weber conceptualized messianic leadership, which he contrasted with "traditional" and "legal" leadership (i.e., leadership resting on impersonal, "rational," bureaucratic rules), as an extraordinary form of rule, tending to arise in unusual or crisis conditions, and directed not at the solution of everyday problems of government, but at overcoming "supradimensional" emergencies. Messianic authority rests on people perceiving in their messiah-figure supernatural and/or superhuman power.

According to Weber, then, Messianism is a quality determined by the subjective perceptions of the followers. Weber writes:

"What is alone important is how the individual is actually regarded by those subject to charismatic (i.e., messianic) authority, by his 'followers' or 'disciples'."

The followers of the leader are won over and their backing derived from personal loyalty, not abstract "rules" or positions; and it is sustained by great deeds, resounding successes, and notable achievements which provide the repeated "proof" of the leader's "calling." The bearer of charisma (i.e., messianic leadership) seizes the task for which he is destined and demands that others obey and follow him **BY VIRTUE OF HIS PERCEIVED MISSION OR "CALLING."** If those to whom he feels sent do not recognize him, his claim collapses; if they recognize it, he is their master as long as he "proves" himself.

Who, then, are AntiChrist's followers in the first instance? From what social milieu does he emanate that renders to him the "recognition" messianic leadership demands? **WHO ARE THOSE PEOPLE TODAY WHO ARE PRONE TO SEE HIM AS A MESSIAH?** - and remember here, this great latter-day messiah possesses much more than mere social charisma, but **RELIGIOUS** charisma, and a particular kind of religious charisma; a kind that attaches great importance to the Holy Land, and most particularly, to Jerusalem. So very obviously, we are not talking about a Hindu-like "New Age" charisma; that kind of leader would be more disposed "*to pitch the tents of his royal pavilion*" (Daniel 11:45) in the Himalayas, or in the Hindu-Cush, or maybe even in the Andes or some other such "High Place," but not in Jerusalem.

THE AMERICAN EVANGELICALS

The very real fact of the matter is, **THERE IS ONLY ONE GROUP IN ALL THE EARTH THAT IS TODAY PRONE TO SEE MESSIAHS** - at least the religious kind of messiah described in Daniel and



Who, then, are AntiChrist's followers in the first instance? From what social milieu does he emanate that renders to him the "recognition" messianic leadership demands? WHO ARE THOSE PEOPLE TODAY WHO ARE PRONE TO SEE HIM AS A MESSIAH? The very real fact of the matter is, THERE IS ONLY ONE GROUP IN ALL THE EARTH THAT IS TODAY PRONE TO SEE MESSIAHS - at least the religious kind of messiah described in Daniel and the Revelation: and that is THE AMERICAN EVANGELICAL COMMUNITY, THE VERY GROUP OF PEOPLE WHO TODAY FORM THE CORE ELEMENT OF AMERICA'S RELIGIOUS RIGHT.

the Revelation: and that is **THE AMERICAN EVANGELICAL COMMUNITY, THE VERY GROUP OF PEOPLE WHO TODAY FORM THE CORE ELEMENT OF AMERICA'S RELIGIOUS RIGHT.**

While Europe is a spent force religiously speaking, American Christianity is alive and well, and it possesses actual political power. There is **NOTHING** in Europe that even comes close to the vibrant nature of American evangelicalism. There are no churches anywhere there that can match the huge size of D. James Kennedy's church in Florida, or James Robison's church in Texas. Such churches simply don't exist in Europe.

Yes, Europe has its cathedrals, but they are nothing more than empty hulks of a bygone era that serve more as tourist attractions to visiting Americans than houses of worship to Europeans. Leaving aside the fact that Europe is a pygmy militarily speaking, and nothing more than an American client-state economically speaking, Europe simply doesn't possess the kind of population that sees messiahs any longer. They are a "spent people" on a "spent continent" that no longer are capable of "climbing high mountains," or "dreaming great dreams."

But Americans? - **THEY'RE DIFFERENT!** They still believe in "**MANIFEST DESTINY!**" - and they still believe that some great destiny awaits them. And no where else does this dream hold sway more than in the hearts of American evangelicals. To Americans, America is God's great **REDEEMER NATION**. What German today would ever say that about Germany? Or what Englishman would say that about England? Or what Frenchman would say that about France? - and most especially, what European would ever say that about that impersonal, bureaucratic, detached entity called the E.U.? Such people don't exist.

MANIFEST DESTINY IS ALIVE AND WELL

But in America, **MANIFEST DESTINY** is alive and well, and it is throbbing in the breasts of countless numbers of American evangelicals whose hearts beat proudly whenever they see their planes bomb another village in Afghanistan, or another aspirin factory in the Sudan; or whenever they see one of their massive carrier battle groups return home from duty to San Diego or Newport News, having bombed the hell out of some third world country. [**And I say this not as one who has never served in the military; I am a combat veteran of the Vietnam war having served in two long, drawn-out combat campaigns and having won a bronze star.**]



MANIFEST DESTINY: The belief by Christians that the United States is God's great "Redeemer Nation" destined by God to conquer the world for "Christ and the church."

PART 4: THE DOMINIONIST MODEL



GOD'S REDEEMER NATION

American Christians long ago forgot what Jesus said about this world:

"... My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight ... but ... my kingdom [is] not from hence." (John 18:36)

They have instead unabashedly embraced the old Calvinist [Puritan] concept of America as the "**REDEEMER NATION**" that God has chosen to carry "Christian Civilization" to the world.

In recent years, this older Calvinism has been merged with the newer concept of "dominionism" which has served only to enhance and strengthen the concept of America as the "**REDEEMER NATION**" on the American evangelical's imagination. Al Dager, a recognized authority on "dominionism," explains the new dominionist mindset,

"Some two decades before Pentecostalism found its way into the [mainstream] denominations [i.e., the Episcopalians, the Catholic Church, etc.] as the 'Charismatic Renewal', it experienced a new surge of experience-oriented theology within its own ranks. It was from this neo-Pentecostal experience - what came to be called the 'Latter Rain Movement' - that Charismatic Dominionism sprang. The more prominent leaders of that movement blended Pentecostal fervor with teachings that **THE CHURCH WAS ON THE BRINK OF A WORLDWIDE REVIVAL. THAT REVIVAL WOULD RESULT IN A VICTORIOUS CHURCH WITHOUT SPOT OR WRINKLE ... [WHICH] WOULD INHERIT THE EARTH AND RULE OVER THE NATIONS WITH A ROD OF IRON.**"

The mixture of the two -- i.e., the older Calvinism that pictured America as God's **REDEEMER NATION** and the newer dominionism that postulates the belief that the church is on the brink of a great **REVIVAL** that will result in the church inheriting the earth and ruling over the nations with a rod of iron -- has produced in evangelicals the belief that God is going to bring a vast revival to America, and through America, the world. It has conjured up a picture in American evangelicals of America as a kind of new **CRUSADER STATE** destined by God to spread the Christian message throughout the world - **AT THE POINT OF A SWORD**, if necessary.

SPREADING CHRISTIANITY AT THE POINT OF A SWORD

Preaching the "Gospel of peace" (Rom 10:15 & Eph 6:15) at the point of a sword? It's **OXYMORONIC!** It's **INSANE!** Nonetheless, this is what the late R.J. Rushdoony plainly taught when he wrote,

"In winning a nation [or the world] to the gospel, **THE SWORD AS WELL AS THE PEN MUST BE USED.**"

It's also what Sam Fife believed when he said,

"... Jesus is setting up His kingdom here on earth ... **WE ARE THE RULERS OF THIS PLANET - IT'S TIME WE TAKE OVER.**"

And insofar as America's pivotal role in the conquest of the world for "Christ and the church," Kenneth Copeland says:

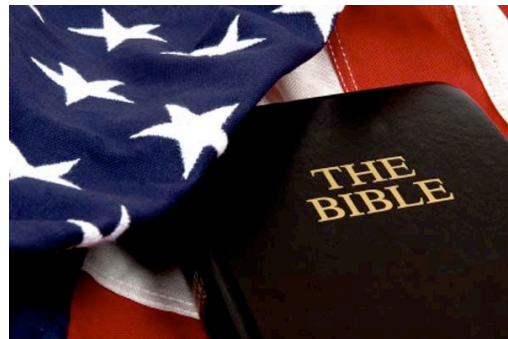
"**THIS COUNTRY BELONGS TO GOD** ... He's the One who brought the United States of America into existence. He has a **SPECIAL PURPOSE** for it [as God's **REDEEMER NATION**] ... He raised it up, and it's not going to be taken away from Him."

To evangelicals like Kenneth Copeland, Sam Fife and R.J. Rushdoony, there is no such a thing as the separation of church and state. The state exists merely to serve the needs of the church. For example, the late W.A. Criswell, the Senior Pastor of Dallas's giant First Baptist Church, said:

"**THERE IS NO SUCH A THING AS THE SEPARATION OF CHURCH AND STATE.** It is merely a figment of the imagination of infidels."

To American evangelicals, the holy trinity consists of:

- Conservative Christian preachers,
- Conservative politicians.
- The military establishment.



It has very little to do with the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit. To evangelicals, when liberals attack the flag, preach non-violence, cut the defense budget, and try to impose religious "diversity" on the political and social structures of the nation, what they are really doing is attacking God. Catholic Gary Potts says:

"Church and state, far from being separated, are a simultaneous and identical occasion in the United States ... The flag is the symbol of this religious fusion and the Pledge is the state prayer."

The fact is, in America God is wrapped up in the flag, and the mandatory worship of this piece of cloth, with all the ceremony attendant to this obligation, is the real liturgy of American evangelicalism.

This is no joke! This is no exaggeration! This is for real! For example, John Eckhardt, the pastor and "overseer" of Crusaders Ministries in Chicago and a luminary in today's "Apostles and Prophets Movement," characterizes the church in the "end of days" as a church of **WARFARE**. To Eckhardt, that's what "Apostolic Ministry" is all about. [Please see our article on "Apostolic Ministry" entitled "[Today's Church: Making Zombies out of Christians - the Prophets and Apostles Movement](#)."] Eckhardt writes:

"Apostolic ministry is a ministry of **WARFARE**. It entails commanding, mobilizing, rallying and gathering the **ARMY** of God to challenge and pull down the strongholds of the enemy. The Apostolic Church invades new territories and breaks through."

A "WHO'S WHO" OF AMERICAN "DOMINIONISTS"

And the list of those who now embrace this kind of very menacing Christianity reads like a "Who's Who" of American pastors and leaders - people who fervently believe in America as the **REDEEMER NATION** destined by God to conquer the world for "Christ and the church" - and includes such Christian

"luminaries" as Charles Stanley, D. James Kennedy, Tim LaHaye, the late John Wimber, Juan Carlos Ortiz, C. Peter Wagner, Beverley LaHaye, Ern Baxter, Kenneth Copeland, Kenneth Hagin, Oral Roberts, Richard Roberts, Pat Robertson, Jerry Falwell, Chuck Colson, Jack Hayford, David Yonggi Cho (yes, even Cho who isn't an American, but a Korean), Robert Stearns, Mike Bickle, Reuven Doron, Che Ahn, Frank Hammond, Cindy Jacobs, Bill Hamon, John Eckhardt, Bobbie Byerly, Dutch Sheets, Jim Goll, John Paul Jackson, James Ryle, Frank Damazio, Ed Silvano, Carlos Annacondia, Claudio Freidzon, Roger Mitchell, Ted Haggart, Paul Cain, Chuck Pierce, Rick Joyner, Kingsley Fletcher, Jim Laffoon, Barbara Wentroble, *ad infinitum*.

THE ESCHATOLOGICAL MODEL OF DOMINIONISM

Once again, the eschatological model that all these men in one way or another subscribe to is as follows:

- The world is plunged into a time of political and spiritual crisis, one which threatens the world with chaos and the church with destruction. **[Dominionists believe we have been in this phase of the "end of days" for a long time now as evidenced by the decline of America's older, euro-centered, Christian civilization, the removal of prayer from the schools, and the concomitant emergence of secular-humanism, militant feminism, homo-sexuality, pornography, rampant liberalism, etc., etc.]**
- The Lord brings revival to the church. **[Dominionists believe that that's what is beginning to happen now with the "new charismatic movement," the growing ecumenism between and among the various branches of Christianity, the "Signs and Wonders" movement, and most especially with what C. Peter Wagner calls the "New Apostolic Reformation" (please see our article on this phenomenon: "Today's Church: Making Zombies out of Christians - The New Prophets and Apostles Movement").]**
- This revival results in the end of the church's divisions and the rule of the "apostles and prophets."
- The "Gospel of the Kingdom" is preached in America first; America is "revived" as the **RE-DEEMER NATION**, which leads ultimately to the conversion and eventual conquest by the **RE-DEEMER NATION** (i.e., America) of the world.
- This results finally in the **CONVERSION OF ISRAEL**, and the judgment of those who refuse to convert.
- The Lord returns.



THE CHURCH: Taking control of the earth using violence

Now it's important to note that the dominionist model as depicted here is not an eschatological model that is well organized or very well thought-out - and most certainly it is not based on any kind of systematic treatment of the Word. Indeed, one will search in vain for any theological coherence in it at all. Within the world created by this system, one will find very few people arguing over its details. There are no details, only broad generalizations and a good deal of talk about a coming "Great Revival," "taking back territory from the enemy," "demonic principalities and powers," the "Coming of Christ in oneself" (i.e., the "Grail Quest" and the "search for inner purity"), and that kind of thing. [Please see our articles, "[The Grail Quest: The Search for Moral Perfection](#)" and "[Phallus Worship and the New Charismatics](#)."]

"Taking back territory" from the "enemy" - whether in oneself or in the world - that's what the dominionist mindset is all about - and when one "takes enough territory back," Christ will come again.

DOMINIONISM IS AT VARIANCE WITH THE SCRIPTURES

Of course, none of these things (i.e., the "Great Revival," "taking back territory," etc.) have any connection with the Scriptures. Indeed, they are at **TOTAL** variance with them - and that's because the Scriptures point unswervingly to an apostatized church at the "end of days" that has fallen into "deception" (Matt. 24:21-25). Paul says,

"Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away [i.e., an apostasy] first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition;
"Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God." (2 Thess. 2:3-4)

What's Paul saying here? Well, it's plain enough! - he is saying that **BEFORE** the "man of sin" (i.e., the Anti-Christ) is revealed there will be a **FALLING AWAY** of Christians from the faith. That is what the word "apostasy" means - to "fall away." Unbelievers can't "fall away" from the faith - they were never there to begin with. To believe so is tantamount to saying that someone who is on the first floor of a building can "fall away" from the building's tenth story even though he has never been there. It's impossible! It's an absurdity!

This may not be what Christians today want to hear - but this is certainly what the Scriptures say. Indeed, the Lord Himself says that when He returns to wind up this present evil age, the overall state of the planet will be very similar to the time of Noah just prior to the flood (Lk. 17:26-27), and the time of Sodom just before the cataclysm which destroyed that city. (Lk. 17:28-30) The picture here, in both illustrations, is of a wholly sinful, unconcerned world, carrying on its business without a care to know spiritual truth (cf. Gen. 6:5, 11-12 and Gen. 18:20-21).

The fact is, the basic premise behind Christian dominionism - that the church can conquer the world using the military might of the United States - is so **TOTALLY** and **COMPLETELY** absurd that only apostates of the worst kind could possibly accept such a supposition - which is **EXACTLY** what people like C. Peter Wagner, Charles Stanley, D. James Kennedy, Tim LaHaye, the late John Wimber, Juan Carlos Ortiz, C. Peter Wagner, Beverley LaHaye, Ern Baxter, Kenneth Copeland, etc. are - i.e., **APOSTATES**.



"Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away [i.e., an apostasy] first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition;
"Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God." (2 Thess. 2:3-4)

What's Paul saying here? Well, it's plain enough! - he is saying that **BEFORE** the "man of sin" (i.e., the AntiChrist) is revealed there will be a **FALLING AWAY** of Christians from the faith. That is what the word "apostasy" means - to "fall away." Unbelievers can't "fall away" from the faith - they were never there to begin with. To believe so is tantamount to saying that someone who is on the first floor of a building can "fall away" from the building's tenth story even though he has never been there. It's impossible! It's an absurdity!

Concerning the picture of the church just prior to His coming again, the Lord is constrained to ask rhetorically,

"... when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?" (Luke 18:8)

PART 5: FICTION MEETS REALITY - THE CHURCH

So now - after the Gog/Magog War - fiction begins to meet reality; deception meets fact; the cracked-pot and vain imaginings of C. Peter Wagner, John Eckhardt and their ilk meet the reality of Biblical truth: and that is, that the people of the world are **NOT** waiting around breathlessly for their (i.e., the American evangelical's) selfish, mean-spirited brand of Christianity; and that the rest of the world, if not American evangelicals, recognize the American Empire for what it really is - that it is **NOT** the "New Israel of God," but a -

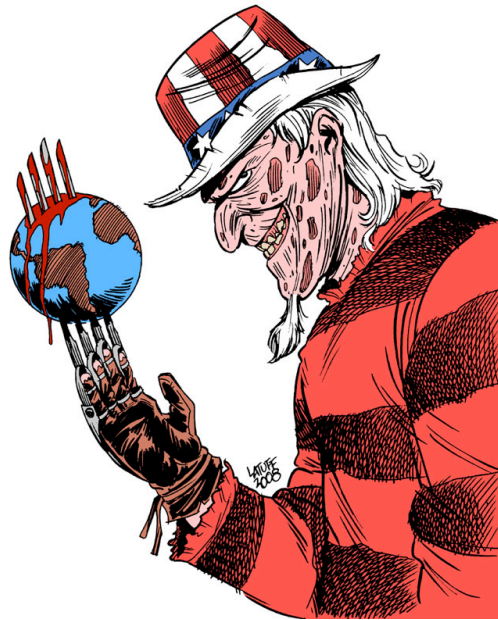
"... **BEAST**, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly ... [with] great iron teeth ... that ... devours and brake in pieces, and stamps the ... [people of the earth] with its feet ..." (Dan. 7:7)

Come on now, is it really that hard to see? Is it that difficult to understand why people outside the United States despise America, a country that has - as we have shown on numerous other occasions - attempted to overthrow more than 40 democratically elected governments since the end of World War II; and that has tried to crush more than 30 populist-nationalist movements struggling to assert their own legitimate political and human rights over and against intolerably corrupt, brutal dictatorships (most of which had been installed by the American government) during the same period of time?

Is it really that difficult to understand the feelings of detestation and hostility that people would have towards a nation that has subjected most of the world to "client-state" status in the service of American multinational corporations like the United Fruit Company (now Dole) in Central America; Exxon / Mobil Corporation in the Middle East; Nike Corporation in Malaysia; Rockefeller corporate interests in Brazil and Argentina, etc., and that has - as a result - condemned the people of these nations to lives of grinding poverty, unrelenting agony and hopeless despair?

AMERICAN EVANGELICALS MAY BE BLIND TO ALL THIS, BUT THE REST OF THE WORLD ISN'T! - AND THEY'RE NOT WAITING AROUND WITH OPEN ARMS FOR A CHANCE TO BECOME ANOTHER SLAVE STATE IN AMERICA'S "NEW WORLD ORDER SYSTEM."

No! - most of these peoples and nations will fight against being made to grovel at America's feet. They want no part of it. But in the religio-political system that is now beginning to evolve around America's



Is it really that difficult to understand the feelings of detestation and hostility that people would have towards a nation that has subjected most of the world to "client-state" status in the service of American multinational corporations like the United Fruit Company (now Dole) in Central America; Exxon / Mobil Corporation in the Middle East; Nike Corporation in Malaysia; Rockefeller corporate interests in Brazil and Argentina, etc., and that has - as a result - condemned the people of these nations to lives of grinding poverty, unrelenting agony and hopeless despair?

"New World Order System," rebels against this system will be made to appear as **REBELS AGAINST GOD**.

In the "New World Order," opposing America is tantamount to opposing God. Come on, isn't that how most American evangelicals will take it? Isn't that what someone like John Hagee will say? And Pat Robertson? And D. James Kennedy? And James Robison? And Tim LaHaye? - who like the nincompoop he really is thinks that the AntiChrist will come out of Romania! These are the blind leading the blind! - and all because they stubbornly refuse to see the truth about the United States that the rest of the world - believers and unbelievers alike - so plainly sees.

And one should not underestimate the ferocity that will be unleashed on those who rebel against the American New World Order System. Take the ominous words of John Eckhardt, for instance:

"God has a plan and purpose He will fulfill ... **NOTHING WILL STAND IN HIS WAY...** God calls the ravenous bird of prey [which Eckhardt says is the "Apostolic Church"] to execute His purposes ... The ravenous bird is the Hebrew word for *ayit*, meaning a hawk. It also means to swoop down upon."

A RAVENOUS BIRD OF PREY? - that's what the church of America's New World Order System is? Eeee gads! God help those who oppose this church! Eckhardt continues:

"... The hawk symbolizes sharpness, keen vision and quickness. It represents discernment and insight into the plans and purposes of God. The hawk is a swift bird that **SUDDENLY SEIZES HIS PREY**. It is a ravenous bird. Ravenous means extremely hungry, voracious or greedy for gratification."

And this is what Eckhardt calls the church? - a **VORACIOUS, GREEDY BIRD OF PREY!** A bird of prey that will seize and devour its enemies. What kind of Bible is Eckhardt reading out of?

Then there's the words of Randall Terry, the founder of Operation Rescue:

"I want you to just let a wave of **INTOLERANCE** wash over you. I want you to let a wave of **HATRED** wash over you. Yes, **HATE IS GOOD** ... Our goal is a Christian nation. We have a biblical duty, we are called by God to conquer this country. We don't want equal time. We don't want pluralism."

HATE IS GOOD? Is that what Terry is saying? How does one square that with the words of Christ when He said:

"Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for



COMING PURGE OF THE CHURCH

Speaking of those who oppose the teachings of people such as C. Peter Wagner

Randall Terry, the founder of Operation Rescue has said: "I want you to just let a wave of **INTOLERANCE** wash over you. I want you to let a wave of **HATRED** wash over you. Yes, **HATE IS GOOD** ... Our goal is a Christian nation. We have a biblical duty, we are called by God to conquer this country. We don't want equal time. We don't want pluralism."



them which despitefully use you, and persecute you." (Matthew 5:44) ?

WHAT THEN IS THE STANDARD BY WHICH ONE WILL BE JUDGED?

Now, one must understand something here! - the standard upon which one will be judged here is not all that high. One is being asked simply to differentiate between the **MURDEROUS** kind of Christianity that the church of Charles Stanley, D. James Kennedy, Tim LaHaye, the late John Wimber, Juan Carlos Ortiz, C. Peter Wagner, Beverley LaHaye, Ern Baxter, Kenneth Copeland, Kenneth Hagin, Oral Roberts, Richard Roberts, Pat Robertson, Jerry Falwell, Chuck Colson, Jack Hayford, etc. proclaim and the simple Gospel of the "**PRINCE OF PEACE**."

Where is the difficulty in that?

IF YOU CHOOSE GOD YOU WILL BE LABELED A WITCH

Of course, there will be a price to be paid for those who choose the Jesus of the Gospels. Indeed, one runs the very great risk of being labeled a **WITCH**! For instance, John Eckhardt claims that those who oppose the direction of the church today (i.e., the "church in dominion") are controlled by a spirit of **WITCHCRAFT**. He goes on to say,

"One of the signs of **WITCHCRAFT** operating and infiltrating a church is the inability of the people to **OBEY** the truth. [Of course, this is "truth" as defined by Eckhardt, Wagner, Doren, Ryles, Joyner, etc.] Disobedience and rebellion are always present wherever there is **WITCHCRAFT** [*ipso facto*, anyone who opposes their teachings - i.e., who is "disobedient" and "rebellious" insofar as the "truth" they are preaching is a **WITCH**]."

"... The apostolic anointing [ruling] keeps us free from ... false teaching [and false teachers] ... **THIS IS ONE OF THE REASONS WE NEED AN APOSTOLIC ANOINTING WITHIN THE CHURCH**. This anointing deals with **WITCHCRAFT**... The apostolic anointing [ruling] prevents the enemy from stopping the flow of the Spirit."

And how is it that the **RULE** of the "Apostles and Prophets" is going to prevent "false teachers" (meaning, once again, those who oppose the "New Apostolic Reformation") from "ruining" the church. Eckhardt gives a way:

"I like the way Paul dealt with **WITCHCRAFT**. He did not play around with it. He judged it with the power of God, **CALLING DOWN BLINDNESS** upon Elymas the sorcerer. **THIS TYPE OF AUTHORITY AND JUDGMENT IS RETURNING TO THE CHURCH WITH THE RESTORATION OF APOSTOLIC MINISTRY** ... With the restoration of the apostolic ministry, we will see the same manifestations return to the Church that we read about in the book of Acts:



John Eckhardt, one of today's so-called "Apostles and Prophets," claims that those who oppose the direction of the church today (i.e., the "church in dominion") are controlled by a spirit of **WITCHCRAFT**. He goes on to say,

"One of the signs of **WITCHCRAFT** operating and infiltrating a church is the inability of the people to **OBEY** the truth [Of course, this is "truth" as defined by Eckhardt, Wagner, Doren, Ryles, Joyner, etc.] Disobedience and rebellion are always present wherever there is **WITCHCRAFT** [*ipso facto*, anyone who opposes their teachings - i.e., who is "disobedient" and "rebellious" insofar as the "truth" they are preaching is a **WITCH**]."

PEOPLE FALLING DOWN DEAD, sorcerers smitten with blindness, **LEADERS BEING EATEN UP BY WORMS**. This is not a pleasant picture, but the Lord will allow no man or woman to hinder ... [His moving] in these last days."

Leaders being eaten up by worms? People falling down dead? - and I suppose that if the "Spirit" doesn't do it, the "Apostles and Prophets" will. **THIS, OF COURSE, IS EXACTLY WHAT WILL HAPPEN!** Jesus said:

"They shall lay their hands on you, and persecute *you*, delivering *you* up to the ... [churches], and into prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for my name's sake." (Luke 21:12)

These are the martyrs about whom the Apostle John wrote in the *Apocalypse*:

"And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and *I saw* the souls of them that were **BEHEADED** for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received *his* mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands ..." (Revelation 20:4)

It is here! It is precisely here that the church will be reaped; the good seed separated from the bad seed - **AND IN ALL OF THIS, IT'S NOT WHAT ONE DECLARES HIMSELF TO BE, BUT WHAT ONE DEMONSTRATES HIMSELF TO BE.**

DEALING WITH ALL OPPOSITION

Moreover, as this kind of thinking takes hold - the kind that attributes opposition to the Apostate Church and America's "New World Order System" as **WITCHCRAFT** - it will spread out to encompass everyone. Everyone who opposes the "New World Order System" will be lumped together as "enemies of true religion and the state" - including those "residual lefties" around the world who continue to oppose America's "Free Enterprise System" - the rebels who fight the "American System" in Columbia, in Ecuador, in Peru, in Venezuela, in Guatemala, etc.



Everyone who opposes the "New World Order System" will be lumped together as "enemies of true religion and the state" - including those "residual lefties" around the world who continue to oppose America's "Free Enterprise System" - the rebels who fight the "American System" in Columbia, in Ecuador, in Peru, in Venezuela, in Guatemala, etc.

Certainly these people will have to be dealt with. After all, in opposing America, these nations and peoples are opposing God. And in opposing Dole, Nike, Exxon-Mobil, Swift and Company, Cargill, Archer Daniels Midland, Monsanto, General Electric, Barrens Mining, Occidental Oil, Citicorp, Bank of America, Standard Oil, Texaco, etc. they are opposing God's servants in the world today, "little angels" whose sole

purpose is, as Bechtel's corporate statement declares, "*working with ... local communities throughout the world to help improve their standard of living and their quality of life*" - never mind the fact that what they are really up to is gouging the poor of the world for all they can get, **AND HANG THOSE WHO GET IN THE WAY.**

And so - in the name of "right religion" and "free enterprise" apostate Christianity and America will go forth "conquering and to conquer" - so that, in the end, "... every knee shall bow, and every tongue shall confess" that the church, America and the "Free Enterprise System should be worshipped and adored. Hence the words in the Apocalypse -

"And I saw, and behold a white horse: and he that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given unto him: **AND HE WENT FORTH CONQUERING, AND TO CONQUER.**" (Rev. 6:2)

PART 6: FICTION MEETS REALITY - ISRAEL

AND WHAT ABOUT ISRAEL?

And there is something more! - what will the **APOSTATE** church of America's New World Order System do to tiny Israel when she refuses to **CONVERT** after the Gog/Magog War? Remember, that's what step 5 in the "dominionists" time table calls for:

- (1) The world is plunged into a time of political and spiritual crisis, one which threatens the world with chaos and the church with destruction.
- (2) The Lord brings revival to the church.
- (3) This revival results in the end of the church's divisions and the rule of the "apostles and prophets."
- (4) The "Gospel of the Kingdom" is preached in America first; America is "revived" as the "Redeemer Nation," which leads ultimately to the conversion and eventual conquest by the "Redeemer Nation" (i.e., America) of the world.
- (5) **THIS RESULTS IN THE CONVERSION OF ISRAEL.**
- (6) The Lord returns.



The Lord brings revival to the church and this results in the conversion of Israel – this is the erroneous teaching of today's church leaders.

According to the "dominionist" model, Israel has to **CONVERT** for the Lord to come back. That's what people like Derick Prince, Reuven Doren and countless other "dominionists" like them posit.

The question is, what happens if Israel refuses to convert? And they won't convert, at least not on the timetable that the dominionist model calls for!

Remember, the Scriptures teach that **NATIONAL** salvation for Israel will not come to the Jewish people until - "**THEY SHALL LOOK UPON HIM WHOM THEY HAVE PIERCED**" (Zech 12:10), and that won't happen until Christ's Second Coming - approximately seven years after the Gog/Magog War.

Until then, the Jews **AS A NATION** will remain in unbelief. **THIS DOESN'T MEAN, OF COURSE, THAT MANY JEWS AS INDIVIDUALS WON'T BE SAVED** (as they have been doing for centuries) **DURING THE TRIBULATION PERIOD** - i.e., that seven year period of time following the Gog/Magog War. Many, no doubt, will! But the conversion of Israel **AS A NATION** will have to wait for the end of the Tribulation period - when Christ returns! At which time, the Bible says:

"And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the **SPIRIT OF GRACE** [i.e., **UNMERITED FAVOR**] and of supplications: and **THEY SHALL LOOK UPON ME WHOM THEY HAVE PIERCED** [very obviously the Lord], and they shall mourn for him [i.e., Jesus], as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness [i.e., great sorrow] for him [i.e., Christ, whom they rejected], as one that is in bitterness [i.e., great sorrow] for his firstborn.

"In that day there shall be a fountain opened to the house of David and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem for sin and for uncleanness.

"And one shall say unto him, **WHAT ARE THESE WOUNDS IN THINE HANDS?** Then he shall answer, **THOSE WITH WHICH I WAS WOUNDED IN THE HOUSE OF MY FRIENDS.**"
(Please see Zech. 12:8-14, 13:1, 6)

DOING VIOLENCE TO THE DOMINIONISTS' TIME-LINE

But, again, this will only happen at the moment of Christ's Second Coming - and if that's the case, it does violence to the dominionists' time line. In this connection, it is important to bear in mind that most dominionists don't really believe in a rapture. They are **PRECISELY** what their name implies: "dominionists" - people who believe that the church must take **DOMINION** on the earth **BEFORE** (I say again, **BEFORE**) Christ returns - which, of course implies that the church must not only unite and subdue the earth **BEFORE** the Lord returns, but also **THAT ISRAEL MUST BE CONVERTED.**



Reuven Doron explains:

"The very nation [Israel] that once gave birth [to the church] now is in need to be birthed by another [so that Israel - acting together in consort with the church - can usher in the Return of Christ]. Who will provide it? [i.e., Israel's rebirth] ... This premise of spiritual revival still hinges upon the rising and completion of the ministry of the prophetic 'Son of Man' company [i.e., the united, glorified church under the leadership of the 'prophets and Apostles'] ... Today the Lord is calling forth a Son of Man Company to corporately prophecy and speak to Israel's lifeless, hopeless white bones until the vision is completed ... **THE CHURCH IS BIRTHING ISRAEL.**"

THE CHURCH IS BIRTHING ISRAEL

Reuven Doron explains:

"The very nation [Israel] that once gave birth [to the church] now is in need to be birthed by another [so that Israel - acting together in consort with the church - can usher in the Return of Christ]. Who will provide it? [i.e., Israel's rebirth] ... This premise of spiritual revival still hinges upon the rising and completion of the ministry of the prophetic 'Son of Man' company [i.e., the united, glorified church under the leadership of the 'prophets and Apostles'] ... Today the Lord is calling forth a Son of Man Company to corporately prophecy and speak to Israel's lifeless, hopeless white bones until the vision is completed ... **THE CHURCH IS BIRTHING ISRAEL.**"

What Doren is saying here is that as the church is "perfected" by the ministry of the "Apostles and Prophets," it will take its place over Israel's lifeless body, and prophesy unto it, and it will be "rebirthed" (i.e., Israel will convert to Christianity). Presumably this will occur shortly after the Gog/Magog War when Christians (so-called) throughout the world will gather in the Holy Land to celebrate "Christ's" (really, AntiChrist's) supposed victory over Islam.

Expanding on what Doron says, Rick Joyner continues,

"The Jews have historically represented the greatest test for the gospel ... In a sense, Jews are the **'ACID TEST'** of our message. **UNTIL THE CHURCH COMES TO THE SPIRITUAL STATURE [MATURITY] WHERE SHE PROVOKES THE JEW TO JEALOUSY, WE HAVE NOT YET ATTAINED TO WHAT WE HAVE BEEN CALLED.**"

This statement - *"until the church comes to the spiritual stature (maturity) where she provokes the Jew to jealousy, we have not yet attained to what we have been called"* - says a lot about the mindset of dominionists like C. Peter Wagner, John Eckhardt, Derrick Prince, Dutch Sheets, Jim Goll, John Paul Jackson, James Ryle, Frank Damazio, Ed Silvano, Carlos Annacondia, etc. What it says is that the **CONVERSION OF THE JEWS** is the church's **"PROOF POSITIVE"** (presumably to Christ) that she has made herself ready, **AND THE LORD CAN NOW RETURN** - kind of like passing a driver's examination to prove to the state that one has at last obtained the skills and knowledge to drive a car.

Think about that: **THE CONVERSION OF THE JEWS - NOT NECESSARILY THE CHURCH TAKING CONTROL OF THE EARTH - IS THE "ACID TEST" THAT THE CHURCH HAS BEEN "PERFECTED."** That's pretty heavy! - and it indicates the importance that the dominionists attach to the Jews' conversion. Joyner continues:

"The Jews were 'hardened' **TO MAKE THEM THE HARDEST TO REACH.** In this way, they have become the barometer of humanity, reflecting the overall condition of the state of man. When the gospel is preached that grafts the 'natural branches' back into the tree, the church and Israel will then be able to reach the whole world. This is why Paul said that the gospel should be preached 'to the Jew first'. This was not just out of favoritism, but because the Jew represents the greatest challenge of the gospel, and one which we must have ... Even so, our relationship to the Jews is not meant to be a stumbling block, but a stepping stone ... The final joining together of both 'into one new man' ... resulting in the healing of all spiritual and cultural wounds. **WHEN THE CHURCH AND ISRAEL HAVE BEEN GRAFTED TOGETHER ... THE TIME OF "THE RESTORATION OF ALL THINGS"** [i.e., **THE LORD'S SECOND COMING**] **MAY BEGIN.**"

THE WORST THING TO BE IS A JILTED LOVER

In other words, "the time of the restoration of all things" can't begin until Israel is saved. But once again I must remind you that the prophet Zechariah says that won't occur until Christ returns, not before. (Zech. 12:10 - 13:1) Nevertheless, Christian dominionists are expecting the Jews to convert! - and to this end, they fervently believe the church has made herself ready.

What will happen when these hopes are dashed, as they most certainly will be. (cf. Zech. 12:10 - 13:1) **WOW!** - **THE WRATH THAT WILL FALL ON ISRAEL AS A RESULT WILL BE HORRIBLE! THERE IS, AFTER ALL, NOTHING SO HATEFUL AND MEAN-SPIRITED AS A JILTED LOVER.**



What will happen when these hopes are dashed, as they most certainly will be. (cf. Zech. 12:10 - 13:1) WOW! - THE WRATH THAT WILL FALL ON ISRAEL AS A RESULT WILL BE HORRIBLE! THERE IS, AFTER ALL, NOTHING SO HATEFUL AND MEAN-SPIRITED AS A JILTED LOVER.

And more than that, what will Christian dominionists think when Israel refuses not only to convert, but rebuilds the temple, excludes any Christian participation in its rebuilding and in the subsequent revived Temple service, and then - as if to add insult to injury - **CLAIMS THAT SHE (i.e., ISRAEL) - AND NOT THE CHURCH - IS GOD'S REPRESENTATIVE ON EARTH?** What will happen then? Think of the wrath that this will provoke among Christian dominionists!

The gloves will come off, the smiles will disappear, and the knives will surely be unsheathed then. **THIS IS WHAT HAPPENED TO LUTHER** - and you can be sure that it will happen again!

A FESTERING SORE

The very real fact of the matter is, the continued existence of the Jewish people as a separate, distinct and **UNBELIEVING** entity **OUTSIDE** the church will have to be explained somehow - this isn't the way things are supposed to happen according to the "dominionist model." The presence of unconverted Jews in the Holy Land could not help but be a festering sore to the dominionist eschatology of Reuven Doren, C. Peter Wagner, Cindy Jacobs, D. James Kennedy and the like.



Maybe if the Jews could just remain quiet and crawl away into some obscure corner of the world and stay there, perhaps that would be enough. But their continued presence in the Holy Land - where the church of James Ryle, Barbara Wentroble, Jack Hayford, Texe Marrs, etc. is busy "setting up shop" - is too much, especially in light of their **REFUSAL** to recognize the church's primacy!! It will directly challenge the "dominionist" undergirding of the Apostate Church, and *ipso facto*, the authority of America's "New World Order System" which now - in the religious fervor and hype of the moment - has come to be undergirded by this theology. What to do?

WHAT TO DO?

The answer is simple enough! - picture those Jews in the Holy Land who refuse to convert as agents of the Devil (after all, the church has been doing that for centuries and centuries). There certainly exists a large enough body of literature in the countless **CONSPIRACY THEORIES** about the Jews that abound in Christian circles to accommodate such thinking. **THE DEVIL IS ANIMATING THE JEWS!** - that must be the answer! The Jewish people's reluctance to surrender their Old Testament promises to the church is of the devil. That's it! And their refusal to accord the AntiChrist (who is by now ensconced in the Holy Land passing himself off as their "savior") the deference and respect he thinks is due him for supposedly rescuing them from the "Islamic Horror," gives evidence to the fact of their hard-hearted and insensitive nature.

The very real fact of the matter is, the continued existence of the Jewish people as a separate and distinct and UNBELIEVING entity OUTSIDE the church will have to be explained somehow - this isn't the way things are supposed to happen according to the "dominionist model." The presence of unconverted Jews in the Holy Land could not help but be a festering sore to the dominionist eschatology of Reuven Doren, C. Peter Wagner, Cindy Jacobs, D. James Kennedy and the like.

Very obviously, it would appear that the conspiracy theories - such as the famous Simonini fabrication, Biarritz, The Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion, The International Jew, etc. - and conspiracy-theorists such as Nesta Webster, the Abbe Barruel, Herman Goedsche, Gougenot des Mousseaux, Sergey Alexandrovich Nilus, Henry Ford, etc. were right about the Jews all along - the Jews **MUST** be a tribe of witches. Certainly the "Prophets and Apostles" like John Eckhardt and James Ryles would have very little trouble in believing such a thing - after all, by Eckhardt's own testimony, those who refuse to recognize the authority of the church (so-called) are motivated by a spirit of **WITCHCRAFT**. That's what he says:

"... false teachers [meaning those who oppose "The New Apostolic Reformation"] carry a spirit of **WITCHCRAFT**."

"**WITCHCRAFT**?" Eee gads! - there's that label again! Eckhardt continues:

"Among the dark spirits we must contend with today is a spirit of **WITCHCRAFT**... they relate to the Church's opposition today ... **WITCHCRAFT** is a major spirit that will challenge and attempt to stop the progress of the Church ..."

BLOODLUST AGAINST THE JEWS

And so now, it begins all over again: a new **BLOODLUST** against the Jews aggressively pushed by the **APOSTATE CHURCH** - which, together with the AntiChrist, is **ALSO** now ensconced in the Holy Land - begins, and Christians (especially Jewish Christians) in Israel will be forced to take sides. Who are they going to side with? - the Apostate Church, or Israel? [Please see our side article on the "[The Messianic Jews: What Will They Do?](#)"]



And so now, it begins all over again: a new **BLOODLUST** against the Jews aggressively pushed by the **APOSTATE CHURCH** - which, together with the AntiChrist, is **ALSO** now ensconced in the Holy Land - begins, and Christians (especially Jewish Christians) in Israel will be forced to take sides. Who are they going to side with? - the Apostate Church, or Israel?

Very obviously, the Reuven Dorens and the James Ryles of this world will claim that those Christians who continue to stand with Israel and who refuse to stand with them have abandoned their Christianity! That they have abandoned Christ! What will they do then? - that's the question for them! This doesn't mean that Jewish Christians in Israel shouldn't preach the Gospel. They should! - both "in season and out of season!" But what it does mean, is that in their preaching of the "Good News" of Jesus Christ, **THEY MUST ALSO PROCLAIM BOTH BY THEIR WORDS AND THEIR MANNER OF LIVING THAT THEY (AND TRUE CHRISTIANS EVERYWHERE) HAVE NOTHING TO DO WITH THE FALSE CLAIMS OF THE APOSTATE CHURCH AND THE AMERICAN "NEW WORLD ORDER SYSTEM," AND THAT THEY OPPOSE THE OCCUPATION OF ISRAEL BY THIS "OVERFLOWING SCOURGE" (Is. 28:18) THAT HAS -**

"... pitched the tents of his royal pavilion between the seas and the beautiful Holy Mountain ..." (Daniel 11:45)

No doubt, in doing so, and in their resultant failure to support the **OCCUPATION** of Israel by the forces of AntiChrist (which, sadly, has resulted from Israel's ill-advised defense pact with the United States), they will, as we have previously indicated, very obviously appear to be challenging the **LEGITIMACY** of America's New World Order System, which is something much more than a mere "religious crime," but a "political crime" as well - for which they can pay with their lives. What will they do then?

CHAPTER XVII

THE GOOD NEWS OF THE COMING KINGDOM

"And this **GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM** shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come."

- Matt. 24:14

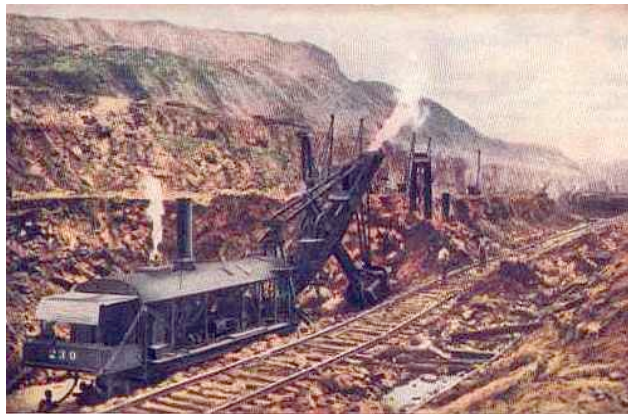
PART 1: TODAY'S CHURCH IS A "TURN-OFF" TO THE POOR OF THIS WORLD

INTRODUCTION

Imagine a colossal Machine that moves about the earth gobbling up everything in its path. The acquisition of wealth and "precious things" is its sole preoccupation. It is sustained by its own forward motion, guided mainly by its own carnal appetites and it is growing larger and accelerating as it goes. It uproots whole populations in its quest for riches, it destroys communities, it devastates the environment, and it rolls over and crushes all those who get in its way. It possesses no conscience and no guiding set of moral values. It is, in fact, totally and completely Amoral. No government is able to stop it; it recognizes no boundaries, no borders, no higher authority. It allows no limits to be placed on its appetite, and its presence in the world is, in the words of author William Greider, "transformational" in a very iniquitous way. Indeed, Greider sees the Machine pushing the world inexorably -

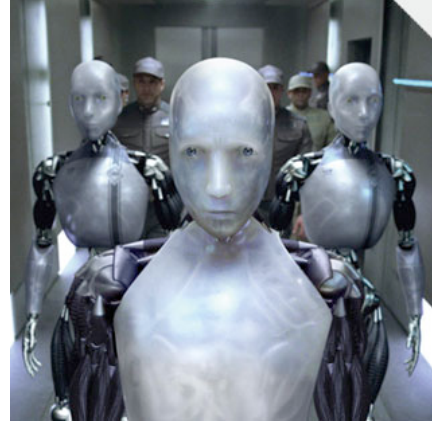
"... toward some sort of dark abyss."

The Machine is "manned" by an army of robot-like workers, each with his own job to perform, each possessing his own special niche; each answerable to a **HIERARCHY** that permits no deviation from "Standard Operating Procedures." All independent thought



Imagine a colossal Machine that moves about the earth gobbling up everything in its path. The acquisition of wealth and "precious things" is its sole preoccupation. It is sustained by its own forward motion, guided mainly by its own carnal appetites and it is growing larger and accelerating as it goes. It uproots whole populations in its quest for riches, it destroys communities, it devastates the environment, and it rolls over and crushes all those who get in its way.

is anathematized. **TOTAL OBEDIENCE** to the dictates of the **HIERARCHY** is demanded from all workers on the Machine. They must see themselves as having value only insofar as they have value to the Machine; and if and when they fail in their performance, or express any independent thought whatsoever, they are "cast out" of the Machine and onto the mounds of wreckage left behind in the Machine's merciless track, there to rot while someone else - someone from the "outside" eager to replace the worker on board the Machine, or someone from the "inside" anxious to work his way up the **HIERARCHY** - steps in to replace him.



The Machine is "manned" by an army of robot-like workers, each with his own job to perform, each possessing his own special niche; each answerable to a **HIERARCHY** that permits no deviation from "Standard Operating Procedures."

Those who are cast aside become **NON-PERSONS**; human wrecks; derelicts alone on a sea without horizons, destitute itinerants without hope in this world. They are avoided like the plague, and their groveling, obsequious presence becomes a proverb against all those who would even think of challenging the Machine's omniscience.

THIS MACHINE ACTUALLY EXISTS

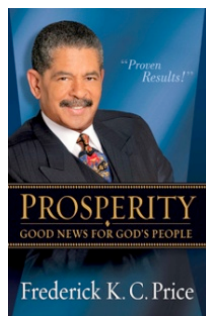
This Machine actually exists in the world today. It is called the **AMERICAN NEW WORLD ORDER SYSTEM** and the fact of its reality is the one essential truth of **EVERYONE'S** social, economic and religious existence - and unless one intends to withdraw from the world altogether, there is no place to hide from it.

It aims sooner or later to subsume and absorb into its mechanism the whole world and all of mankind, and to this end it has sent out into all the earth its "priests and prophets" as plenipotentiaries and emissaries to extol its virtues to the "masses" and to command the whole of mankind to bow down and serve it.

The question before every person in the world today is how does he or she relate to the machine? Do they submit to it, or do they resist?

THE MACHINE'S "PRIESTS AND PROPHETS"

The "priests and prophets" who act as the Machine's ambassadors and who scurry devoutly and piously about from nation to nation setting up temples of worship to the god of the Machine call themselves "Christians," but they are not!



Their god is **MAMMON**, and they are unceasing in their god's "praise and worship," though they are careful to conceal his true identity from the poor of the.

Their god is **MAMMON**, and they are unceasing in their god's "praise and worship," though they are careful to conceal his true identity from the poor of the earth – i.e., the hapless victims the Machine routinely savages and plunders - lest the poor rise up *en masse* against them: Hence their subterfuge. But what an empty subterfuge it is: Attempting to pass Mammon off in the guise of a Person who **EXPLICITLY** condemned Mammon and juxtaposed Himself against him:

"No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye **CANNOT** serve God and mammon." (Matt. 6:24)


These are those Christians (so-called) about whom Jesus said:

"Ye **HYPOCRITES**, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying,

"This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me.

"... in vain they do worship me ..." (Matt. 15:7-9)

SHUTTING UP THE KINGDOM OF GOD AGAINST MEN

The godliness (so-called) produced by the priests and prophets of this machine is a **FRAUD**; a **COUNTERFEIT**; it's capable of producing nothing more than an empty show with no reality attached to it. It's the kind of empty "magic" show that Bennie Hinn and Morris Cerullo take to places like Nigeria, Argentina, Brazil, etc.; the kind that promises wealth and success if the poor of these poverty-stricken countries adopt "Biblical Principles" insofar as the governance of their societies are concerned – the kind of "Biblical Principles" (so-called) established by the Machine and administered by the WTO, the IMF and the World Bank. [Please see our articles, "[The Marxist Paradigm](#)" and "[Capitalism and Christianity](#);" please also see our article, "[Inside the American New World Order System](#)."] 

This kind of Christianity produces Christians who measure their "Christianity" by the money they possess, who condemn as "failures" the poor for not having achieved their level of fiscal prosperity, and who feel no compassion when the poor "get what they deserve" by being stripped of their welfare checks and tossed out into the street; Christians who -

"... devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayers." (Matt. 23:14),

These are the sort of pathetic Christians who act as the Machine's plenipotentiaries and emissaries and who in their effort to please the god of the Machine -

They "... devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayers." (Matt. 23:14)

"... compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, they make him twofold more the child of hell than they are." (Matt. 23:15)

And in doing so, they -

"... shut up the kingdom of heaven against men ..." (Matt. 23:13)

THE POOR OF THE EARTH ARE OFFENDED BY THE CHURCH

They “*shut up the kingdom of heaven against men?*” **YES!** What else would you expect from such people, **OR** is it that difficult to see that when the church allies itself with the American New World Order System to ravage and pillage the earth, that the poor of the earth would be offended by it, and “turned-off” to Christ? After all, what would you think if you were one of the citizens of Falujah and had had your city “liberated” **IN THE NAME OF CHRIST** by the American army - death squad-style; to say nothing of seeing your neighborhood blown up by 2,000 pound bombs - once again, **IN THE NAME OF CHRIST?** Be honest! - what would you think? This kind of hypocrisy has an effect on the poor; it turns off the poor of the earth to the true message of the poor Carpenter of Nazareth. [Please see our article, “[Sowing the Seeds of the Gog / Magog War.](#)”]

PART 2: THE "GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM" TURNS THE POOR ONCE AGAIN TO CHRIST

GOD'S ANSWER TO THIS DECEPTION

The “**GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM**” is God's answer to the deception perpetrated on the poor of the earth by the priests and prophets of the Machine. It has been calculated to rip away the mask of piety that the religious **FRAUDS** who wickedly justify this system hide behind - for example, Christian leaders like D. James Kennedy, Charles Stanley and John Hagee - while at the same time revealing the evil, avaricious “money-grubbing” that's really at the heart of the American Empire and that animates **ALL** those associated with it.

Once these frauds - and the system they excuse - are exposed for what they actually are, then the poor can see Christianity for what it really is: God's way of salvation for them, and see Christ for whom He really was - a **POOR** carpenter who said of Himself:

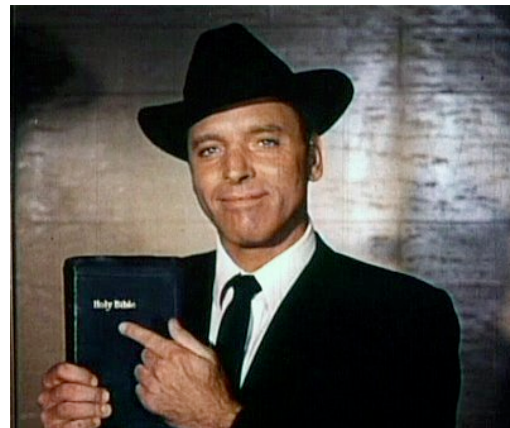
“... Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.”
(Luke 9:58) -

A Man who rather than placating the rich (as the leaders of today's church so shamefully do), said of them,

“... Verily I say unto you, That a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom of heaven.
“And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a (sewing) needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.” (Matt. 19:23-24) [Please see our article, “[The Rich Have Seized Control of the Church.](#)”]

THE FACT OF THE GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM

The **FACT** of the “**GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM**” - it's reality in Scripture - is **NOT** something that can be argued against. Without meaning to offend those who have never been confronted with the **REALITY**



Burt Lancaster as the religious fraud, Elmer Gantry: Once these frauds - and the system they excuse - are exposed for what they actually are, then the poor can see Christianity for what it really is: God's way of salvation for them, and see Christ for whom He really was - a **POOR carpenter who said of Himself, “... Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.” (Luke 9:58)**

of this Gospel as something distinct and separate from the Gospel of Salvation, all I can say to them is what Jesus said to Nicodemus:

"... Art thou a master (or a teacher) of Israel, and knowest not these things?" (John 3:10)

These are, unfortunately, the kind of people about whom Paul said have not advanced beyond the rudiments of the faith:

"For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again ... **THE FIRST PRINCIPLES OF THE ORACLES OF GOD**; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat." (Heb. 5:12)

GETTING BEYOND THE RUDIMENTS OF THE FAITH

Brothers and sisters, if we are to get anywhere with God, we must get beyond the rudiments of the faith (what Paul calls here "the first principles of the oracles of God"), especially if we are to play any kind of meaningful role in the "end of days." We must go further; we must get to the "strong meat" of the Word - and that's certainly true of all those who want to associate themselves with Antipas. The "**GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM**" is that "strong meat" about which Paul talked - and knowledge of it does not come by means of osmosis or by inhaling it out of thin air, but by **HARD** and **DILIGENT** study. The Bible says:

"Study to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing (interpreting) the word of truth." (2 Tim. 2:15)

So let us get down to this "strong meat," and to do that, let us use a reference guide that is universally accepted by "old-line evangelicals:" the Scofield Reference Bible. Concerning the differing gospels spoken of in the Bible, Scofield writes:

"The word 'gospel' means **GOOD NEWS**. As used in the New Testament, the word deals with different aspects of divine revelation."

THE GOOD NEWS OF THE KINGDOM

In other words, there are various aspects of the "divine revelation" that the Bible vouchsafes to man. The "good news" of salvation, of course, is paramount; but there are other aspects of the "divine revelation" that go beyond the matter of salvation and are also a part of the "good news" of the Word of God.

One is the "good news" of the kingdom [i.e., the "**GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM**" (Matt. 24:14)] which foretells the coming kingdom of Christ that will entail social justice and equity between and among all men; and still another is what the Bible calls the "**ETERNAL GOSPEL**" (Rev. 14:6) which forecasts the destruction of "Babylon the Great," the kingdom of Satan which antichrist will set up in the "end of days" in opposition to the coming Kingdom of Christ.

Finally, of course, there is what the Bible calls a "**DIFFERENT GOSPEL**" (2 Cor. 11:4; Gal. 1:6) which is **NOT** "good news" at all, but a perversion of the "good news" of the Bible. We are warned by Paul against it and all its "**SEDUCTIVE**" forms which are at war with God's "Plan and Purpose in the Ages."



THE GOOD NEWS OF SALVATION

Obviously, then, when the Bible speaks of "good news" it has more in mind than the "Gospel of Salvation." No doubt, the "Gospel of Salvation" is paramount, for without it, one cannot even think about what the Bible has in store for those who are called according to His purpose, especially as that purpose relates to the Kingdom of God. Concerning the **"GOOD NEWS OF SALVATION,"** Scofield writes:

"Absolutely essential to man's salvation is the **GOSPEL OF THE GRACE OF GOD [SALVATION]** (Rom. 2:16). This is the good news that Jesus Christ died on the cross for the sins of the world, that He was raised from the dead on account of our justification, and that by Him all who believe are justified from **ALL** things. It is described as the Gospel 'of God' (Rom 1:1) because it originates in His love; 'of Christ' (2 Cor. 10:14) because it flows from His sacrifice, and because He is the object of faith; 'of the grace of God' (Acts 20:24) because it saves those whom the law curses; 'of the glory of Christ' (2 Cor. 4:4; cp. I Tim. 1:11) because it concerns Him who is in the glory and who is bringing many sons to glory (Heb. 2:10); 'of your salvation' (Eph. 1:13) because it is 'the power of God for the salvation to everyone who believes' (Rom. 1:16); and 'of peace' (Eph. 6:15) because through Christ it makes peace between the believing sinner and God, and makes inward peace possible."

A KINGDOM GROUNDED IN SOCIAL JUSTICE

But once more, this is merely the "milk of the Word" - or, as Paul puts it, the "first principles of the oracles of God." We must push on beyond this to God's Plan and Purpose in the "Latter Days" as expressed in (1) The "good news" of the coming kingdom of Christ and (2) the "good news" relating to the destruction of Babylon the Great, i.e., the American New World Order System. [Please see our article on Babylon the Great, ["In Search of Babylon: What Do the Scriptures Say?"](#)]

This is what Scofield believes as well; he writes:

"Another aspect of the good news is the **'GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM'** (Matt. 4:23), i.e. the **GOOD NEWS THAT GOD PURPOSES TO SET UP ON EARTH THE KINGDOM OF CHRIST ...**"

Scofield continues:

"The good news of this kingdom was announced by the Old Testament prophets (Is. 9:6-7), by Christ in His first coming (Matt. 9:35) **AND WILL BE PROCLAIMED DURING THE ... TRIBULATION.**" [Note carefully for future reference when Scofield says this Gospel will be proclaimed: during the **TRIBULATION period.**]

The kingdom being proclaimed here will be a kingdom grounded in social justice for **ALL** mankind, a world of equity where men are not divided up between the "owners of capital" on the one hand and "labor" on the other hand, and where men and women are not divided up on the basis of their race or even their gender (Gal. 3:28); where the rich do not oppress the poor; where every man has equal access to God; where privileges cannot be bought by the wealthy; where there are no death squads, no poverty, no torture, no hunger, no disease, and no room for oppressors of any kind.



The kingdom being proclaimed here will be a kingdom grounded in social justice for **ALL** mankind, a world of equity where men are not divided up between the "owners of capital" on the one hand and "labor" on the other hand, and where men and women are not divided up on the basis of their race or even their gender (Gal. 3:28); where the rich do not oppress the poor; where every man has equal access to God; where privileges cannot be bought by the wealthy; where there are no death squads, no poverty, no torture, no hunger, no disease, and no room for oppressors of any kind.

no poverty, no torture, no hunger, no disease, and no room for oppressors of any kind. [Please see our article, "[Capitalism and Christianity](#)."]

Very obviously, such a kingdom would be **TOTALLY** at variance to the world we now live in and with the American New World Order System that now prevails on the earth - especially the kind of world we described in our recent article, "[The Horror of John Dimitri Negroponte and everything He Represents](#)." [Please see that article plus our article, "[Algeria: A Study of the Dreadful, Two-Tiered Economic System the U.S. Is Promoting Among Its Muslim Client-States](#)."]

A world based on social justice where the rich do not oppress the poor? A world where there are no John Dimitri Negropontes, no Liamine Zerouals and no Augusto Pinochets? This, of course, is something much more than the "good news" of salvation, because while the "good news" of salvation promises redemption to the **INDIVIDUAL**, it does not promise to "make over" the world *per se*, and this is evidenced by the fact that from Pentecost until now there has been **NO** social justice and **NO** equity between and among men; tyranny and oppression have continued to flourish; and sickness, poverty and hunger have continued to wreak their horrible work on mankind.

This is **NOT** to take anything away from the "good news" of salvation, but very plainly social justice and social equity have yet to be established on the earth, which the coming Kingdom of Christ is calculated to accomplish.

THE KINGDOM OF GOD IS "AT HAND"

The "**GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM**" announces the "good news" that the Kingdom of Christ is close "at hand." This, of course, is not the first time that the Kingdom has been announced to be close "at hand." It was announced the first time 2,000 years ago when the angels proclaimed it to the shepherds "in the field" at the time of Christ's birth in Luke 2:10-11):

"And she (i.e., Mary) brought forth her firstborn son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger; because there was no room for them in the inn.

"And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night.

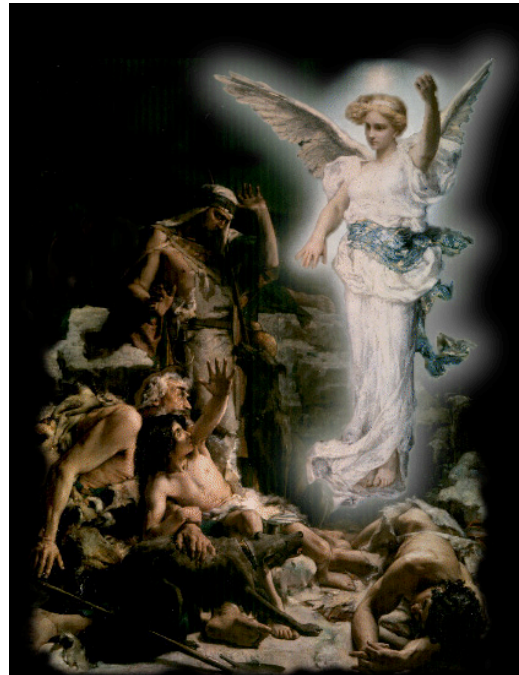
"And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, **WHICH SHALL BE TO ALL** people.

"For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord." (Luke 2:7-8, 10-11)

Shortly after - and in conjunction with what the angels declared to the shepherds - **the Kingdom was announced to be "at hand"** by John the Baptist, then by Christ Himself, and finally by the Twelve.

BUT THE KINGDOM WAS REJECTED BY THE JEWS in fulfillment of the Scripture, that -

"... they (i.e., Israel) without us (i.e., the church) should not be made perfect." (Heb. 11:40)



The "**GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM**" announces the "good news" that the Kingdom of Christ is close "at hand." This, of course, is not the first time that the Kingdom has been announced to be close "at hand." It was announced the first time 2,000 years ago when the angels proclaimed it to the shepherds "in the field" **BUT THE KINGDOM WAS REJECTED BY THE JEWS** in fulfillment of the Scripture, that "... they (i.e., Israel) without us (i.e., the church) should not be made perfect." (Heb. 11:40)

Now, after an interval of some 2,000 years, **the Kingdom is once again "at hand!"** The so-called "church age" is all but past, and the Jews - once dispersed over the whole earth because of the rejection of their king - have now been re-gathered again to their land. Everything is ready! - and God is raising up a people to proclaim that the Kingdom is again **"AT HAND."**

Concomitant with the proclamation of the **"GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM"** - and in conjunction with it - the "Eternal Gospel" will also be proclaimed. Specifically, Scofield says:

"The 'Eternal Gospel' (Rev. 14:6) is described as the announcement of divine judgment upon the wicked [specifically, Babylon the Great] ... It is good news for the suffering believers as it heralds their coming deliverance and reward (cp., v. 12). In view of this those who 'live on the earth' are exhorted to fear God and worship Him (v. 7)."

THE TRIBULATION SAINTS – THAT INCLUDES ALL OF US!

Now note carefully here: while Scofield says that the **"GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM"** is again "at hand" - he does not believe that the church will be commissioned to announce it. Why? - because, according to Scofield, the church will be gone as a result of the rapture. Instead, he says that this commission will be given over to a special caste of pseudo-Christians he calls "Tribulation Saints." They are evidently not part of the church (because the church is gone), nor are they part of Israel. They're just there - suspended somewhere between "hither and thither." This, of course, is the **NONSENSE** dispensed by Tim LaHaye's series of books on the Tribulation and the rapture.

But there is no need to do such injury to the integrity of our understanding of the church by leaving some who call on His name suspended outside its blessed borders when one dismisses the pre-tribulation rapture of the church for the foolishness it is. Once one discards this teaching, the problem is solved; the lunacy dissolves that Scofield and others created when they allowed their imaginations to conceive a "special class" of Christians who are not part of the church.

As with the Gospel of Salvation, we - the members of today's church - are the ones to whom these commissions have been entrusted, IF SO BE WE CAREFULLY GUARD OURSELVES AGAINST THE SEDUCTION OF THE "GREAT DECEPTION" AND APOSTASY ("FALLING AWAY") OF THE "END OF DAYS."

PART 3: KNOWLEDGE THAT DOES NOT PRODUCE ACTION IS WORTHLESS

WHAT ARE YOU GOING TO DO?

We have now come to the end of this book; you have been acquainted with the "course and character" of this age. The question is, What are you going to do with this knowledge? - after all, knowledge which does not produce action is useless.

Very obviously, Christians are facing a time of crisis, one which all evangelicals - *if they really are evangelicals* - have long expected, and one which shouldn't come as a surprise - **CHURCH APOSTASY**: the refusal of the church to see itself any longer as a "citizen" of a heavenly kingdom having nothing to do



**Call
for
Action!**

with this world [*"My kingdom is not of this world ... my kingdom ... (comes) not from hence."* (John 18:36)] to seeing itself, rather, as a "citizen" or "friend" of this present evil world and all that such a thing portends - from the church's involvement in the world's political affairs, to its rapprochement with the right-wing of the Roman Catholic Church [Please see our article, "[Liberation Theology, the Vatican and the CIA: Ghosts and Phantoms](#)"] to its involvement in death squad activity in the name of God in South and Central America - *"...Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God."* (James 4:4) But, again, why should we as evangelicals be surprised by all this? - isn't this what the Bible said would happen? - *"Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day (i.e., the day of the rapture and the resurrection) shall not come, except there come a falling away (i.e., apostasy) first ..."* (2 Thess. 2:3)

WHAT THEN SHOULD WE DO?

What then should we do with regard to this crisis? Menachem Begin, the former Prime Minister of Israel, faced a similar crisis in his life and in the life of the Jewish People in the early 1940s. The crisis he faced had to do with whether or not he should wait for the end of World War II and the plodding negotiations of Jewish "mainline moderates" like Dr. Chaim Weizmann and the World Zionist Organization to press the British Mandate Authority to facilitate Jewish immigration to Palestine (all this in addition to having to rely on the maddening timidity of the mainline Jewish defense organization - the *Haganah* - to secure their safety in Palestine), **OR** whether he should join up with the radicals, Vladimir Jabotinsky, and the *Irgun Zvai Leumi* - and hang the "niceties of diplomacy."



JABOTINSKY

BEGIN

Begin finally chose Jabotinsky and the *Irgun!* - and he never looked back. Years later, in remarking on the single-mindedness of the organization he finally joined - i.e., the *Irgun* - he said: *"In times like those, there is no greater force than people who (1) have the ability to see beyond the concerns of daily life, despite the sometimes very pressing nature of those concerns, (2) who possess the capacity for self-sacrifice, and (3) who are willing to get involved!"* Begin believed that the rest didn't matter! And so it is with us today, *the rest doesn't matter!* - one's natural talent, one's standing within the church, one's ability to speak, one's wealth, one's education, one's personality, the number of mistakes one has made in his or her life, one's age, one's sex, etc. - all of that is inconsequential in comparison.

He finally chose Jabotinsky and the *Irgun!* - and he never looked back. Years later, in remarking on the single-mindedness of the organization he finally joined - i.e., the *Irgun* - he said: *"In times like those, there*

is no greater force than people who (1) have the ability to see beyond the concerns of daily life, despite the sometimes very pressing nature of those concerns, (2) who possess the capacity for self-sacrifice, and (3) who are willing to get involved!" Begin believed that the rest didn't matter! And so it is with us today, *the rest doesn't matter!* - one's natural talent, one's standing within the church, one's ability to speak, one's wealth, one's education, one's personality, the number of mistakes one has made in his or her life, one's age, one's sex, etc. - all of that is inconsequential in comparison.

A CALL TO ACTION

The **ANTIPAS PAPERS** are first and foremost *a call to action* to this kind of people; a call to the kind of people who joined themselves to Vladimir Jabotinsky and the *Irgun*; to the kind of people who possess vision and the capacity for self-sacrifice. It's a call for them to get involved! And to do it **NOW!** - before it's too late. To wait is to make prophecy of no effect - after all, prophecy is meaningless to those who refuse to do anything about it.

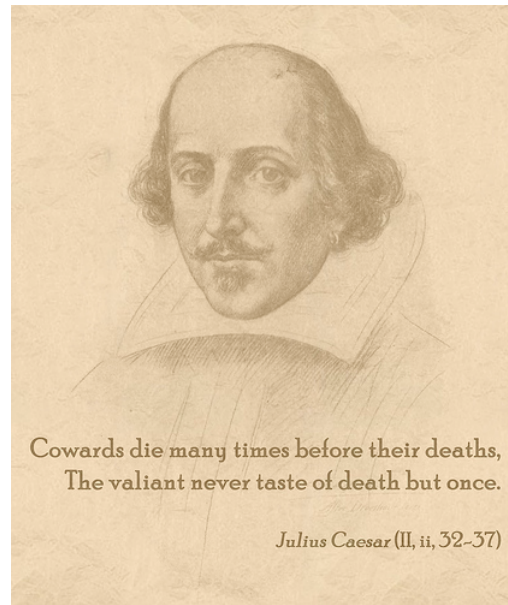
Prophecy is nothing more than a road sign telling us of the danger that's ahead and warning us to take corrective action **BEFORE** we get to the danger. If we do nothing until we finally get there, it will be too late. Thus, if the only reaction the **ANTIPAS PAPERS** can elicit from someone who has read the book is "Wow! - what a wonderful book" - then we have utterly failed in what we set out to do, and that person has missed the point of the book altogether. Knowledge which does not produce action is worthless!

It is to those persons who possess the willingness to get involved that we now turn and to whom we now direct the following remarks: first, there are many things that will hinder you from getting involved - and sadly, your greatest hindrance will probably be those dear Christian brothers and sisters who claim to see what you see, but who caution "moderation." Those who do, however, are usually people who have a stake in the *status quo* - in other words, there's a reason behind their so-called "moderation" - they probably have a lot more to lose than you do. The fact of the matter is, not many rich, not many successful, not many "high church officials" will abandon "moderation" - they have too much to lose. This is why Jesus said, "... *It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God*" (Matt. 19:24) and why Paul said, "*For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called ...*" (1 Cor. 1:26).

SPIRITUAL COWARDS

Mostly, those who caution "moderation" are people who - while they might see *objectively* what you're talking about and who might even find it stimulating to sit in the safety of their living rooms for hours on end discussing this or that "end-times scenario" - will go ballistic if you actually suggest doing something about it. That's when the "moderates" panic! That's when people get labeled a "Jim Jones," a "Branch Davidian," a reckless and irresponsible radical, an "Unloving Person."

But look beyond the labels and you might see something else at work here! - a selfish effort by the "moderates" to shame you into silence and inaction. Why? - because if such thinking were to really catch on, they will be shown to be what they really are - spiritual cowards who have too much at stake in this world and in the *status quo* of today's church to get involved - whether it be pastors who have their reputation and pay checks to guard, ministry leaders who depend on "compromised" sources of income, wives who have their "nests" to protect from



the "irresponsibility" of a husband who has hit the "nut circuit," Christian business people and professionals who have their "reputations" to protect, etc. - and in order to hide that fact, they are willing to stop at nothing to put the "radicals" to an open shame.

"Moderates" are the people who are given to writing time-consuming memoranda, holding "bigwig" conferences, "reasoning" with the opposition, discussing things endlessly - and not for the purpose of finding out the truth, but of "buying time" and "confusing the issue" - *"Did so and so really say such and such?" - I don't care whether a thousand witnesses heard him - let's find out what really happened.*" The object here, of course, is not to get to the bottom of what happened - after all, if a thousand witnesses won't suffice, nothing will. The real object is to get everything so tied up in red tape that by the time it's "sorted out," everyone will have "gone home."

TO THE "MODERATES," WE WOULD SIMPLY SAY THIS ...

To the "moderates," we would simply say this, What does one do with people who purposefully are leading the church into apostasy and into a rapprochement with right-wing Catholics? - reason with them? What's there to reason about? These people know what they're doing! - and you are not the first to question them on these matters. They've heard all the arguments before.

What value is there in meeting with such people? What does one say to a Paul Crouch, for example, when he says that those who are standing against the church's rapprochement with right-wing Catholics should be shot? Discuss with him the kind of gun that is best for such a purpose? Negotiate with him over the ammunition that should be used?

What utter nonsense!" - after all, what's at stake here is the church's soul! There is nothing to negotiate about! And if those you love in the church refuse to go along, and you think to stay for their sake, be assured, you'll accomplish nothing - you're "going" will accomplish more than your "staying" ever could by showing them by deeds rather than words how serious matters really are - Remember, what's at stake here is eternity! - your eternity!

PART 4: SPEAK OUT !

THIS GOSPEL SHALL BE PREACHED

Jesus said:

"This **GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM** shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come." (Matt. 24:14)

And He went on in the very same discourse to say:

"Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing.

"Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods." (Matt. 24:46-47)

"BLESSED IS THAT SERVANT WHOM HIS LORD WHEN HE COMETH SHALL FIND DOING SO!" - that's what Jesus said.



Have the courage to speak out like Wesley did three centuries ago.

Of course, the work will be dangerous! - there is no doubt about that. Jesus said:

"Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves.

"But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues;

"And ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles." (Matthew 10:16-18)

Pretty frightening - especially for the poor and inarticulate; but Jesus said:

"But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak.

"For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you." (Matthew 10:19-20)

YOUR PREACHING WILL ACCOMPLISH TWO THINGS

Jesus said:

"What I tell you in darkness, *that* speak ye in light: and what ye hear in the ear, *that* preach ye upon the housetops." (Matthew 10:27)

We are not called to be subtle about the "Gospel of the Kingdom." Your preaching will accomplish two things:

- **It will draw some to you** - those whose hearts God has prepared for such a day, and you will be surprised to find out who these people are.
- **It will drive others away from you**, and so much so that the Bible says, "*And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child: and the children shall rise up against their parents, and cause them to be put to death. And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake ...*" (Matthew 10:21-22)

Your job is to take the first group and become a shepherd to them. Begin meeting with them, and let your meetings be seen of all men. Jesus said:

"Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid.

"Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house.

"Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven." (Matthew 5:14-16)

Insofar as the second group is concerned, Jesus said:

"When they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another: for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come." (Matthew 10:23)

And He went on to say:



"When they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another: for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come." (Matthew 10:23)

"The disciple is not above *his* master, nor the servant above his lord.

"It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more *shall they call* them of his household?" (Matthew 10:16-25)

There's that charge of **WITCHCRAFT** again!

PART 5: WHEN THEY PERSECUTE YOU IN THIS CITY, FLEE YE UNTO ANOTHER

GOD'S DIRECTIVE IN REVELATION 18:4

It's here that we come to something that we in Antipas have been talking about for some time now - the matter of God's command in Revelation 18:4:

"And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, **COME OUT OF HER**, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues." (Rev. 18:4) [We **URGE** you to read our article, "**Come Out Of Her**;" please see our article, "**The Cost of Discipleship**."]

This is a topic that has undoubtedly frightened many who otherwise are very much drawn to the message of Antipas. Unfortunately, however, the command here is very plain and straight forward - and I must tell you that if one fails here, he will fail **EVERYWHERE**.

One should not think that he can fail on this point (i.e., Rev. 18:4) and still be found faithful in all the rest; one should not think that he can falter here and later be found faithful to resist the forces of hell under much more onerous conditions than those that presently exist.

Those dear saints of God who are still in Babylon must get out. And just exactly how should one begin this journey? You must begin in faith. Jesus said:

"**TAKE NO THOUGHT FOR YOUR LIFE**, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on.



Take no thought for your life!

And Jesus went on to say:

"Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment?

"Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they?

"Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature?

"And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin:

"And yet I say unto you, That even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these.

"Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oven, *shall he* not much more *clothe* you, O ye of little faith?

"Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed?

"(For after all these things do the Gentiles seek:) for **YOUR HEAVENLY FATHER KNOWETH THAT YE HAVE NEED OF ALL THESE THINGS.**" (Matthew 6:25-32)

And then Jesus said something very profound:

"BUT SEEK YE FIRST THE KINGDOM OF GOD ..." (Matthew 6:33)

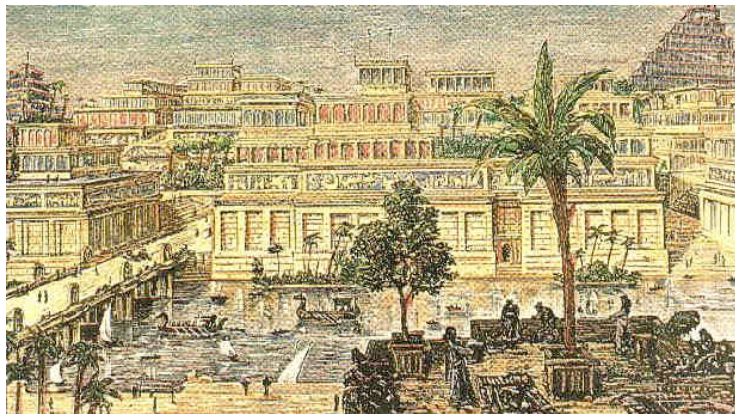
There it is again! - the "**KINGDOM OF GOD**." In other words, take care of the Kingdom - and the "Good News" or "Gospel of the Kingdom" and everything will follow from that; **BEGIN BY PREACHING THE GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM**. Do that, and many hands will help you along your way - some friendly, and some not so friendly. Necessity in the face of persecution will show you the way out and will press upon you solutions to your problems that you never before dared to consider. It's in face of this kind of necessity that Jesus said:

"When they persecute you in this city [for preaching the Gospel of the Kingdom], flee ye into another: for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of ... [the world] till the Son of man be come." (Matthew 10:23)

So, you see, the solution to all your worries about leaving Babylon is to simply preach the "Gospel of the Kingdom." If you do that (i.e., if you preach the Gospel of the Kingdom), the other (leaving Babylon) will follow as surely as the sun rises in the east and sets in the west, and you will find yourself quite effortlessly (so to speak) not only fulfilling God's command in Revelation 18:4, but also God's command in Jeremiah 51:6 and 9:

"Flee out of the midst of Babylon, and **DELIVER EVERY MAN HIS SOUL** [and, again, please note here, the Bible is not talking about one's physical-life, but one's soul-life]; be not cut off in her iniquity; for this *is* the time of the LORD'S vengeance; he will render unto her a recompence.

"We would have healed Babylon, but she is not healed: **FORSAKE HER, AND LET US GO EVERY ONE INTO HIS OWN COUNTRY**: for her judgment reacheth unto heaven, and is lifted up *even* to the skies." (Jeremiah 51:6 and 9)



Flee out of the midst of Babylon, and DELIVER EVERY MAN HIS SOUL - FORSAKE HER, AND LET US GO EVERY ONE INTO HIS OWN COUNTRY

NOTE:

Interestingly enough, this could only be said of the United States - a country populated almost wholly by immigrants from other lands, as one dear brother from India has so discerningly pointed out in his letters to us.

WE MUST BE HONEST

However, we must be honest regarding this matter. We dare not make the mistake of one dear saint of God who wrote me (via Sean) several years ago to say:

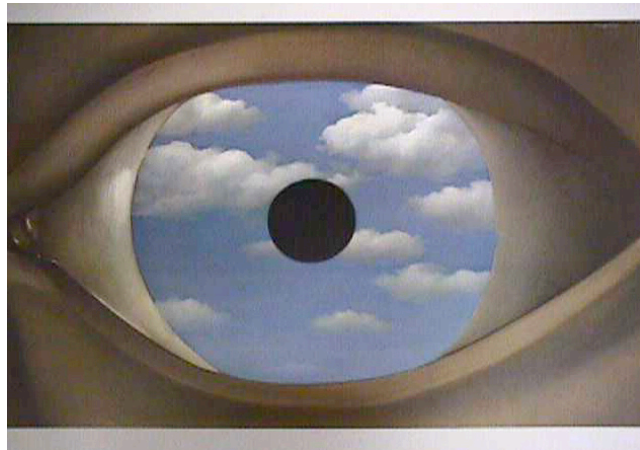
“Dear Sean,

“Please pass this on to Steve ... Some of us will never leave the U.S. for a variety of reasons, but do not dismiss us for that because our faith is strong and true. **WE MAY NOT BE DOING ALL WE CAN TO TESTIFY IN THE STREETS NOW, BUT I SENSE OUR TIME HAS NOT ARRIVED YET.** At this point, not many will listen and we will be branded as insane. The time will come, however, when many people will be hungry for what we have to say and they will listen, and the Lord will use us in a mighty way.

“There are Christians and others in the U.S. who will be saved by our efforts because we chose to stay and be physically with them during the Tribulation. The internet will probably be controlled at some point so it will be the people that you ... have touched with your faithfulness and truth that will carry on the ministry one-on-one with people all over the world.”

A TRANSPARENT “COP-OUT”

She says that she wants to stay behind to testify to unbelievers during the Tribulation. She writes that, “*There are Christians and others in the U.S. who will be saved by our efforts because we chose to stay and be physically with them during the Tribulation*” – although she admits that she is not expending much effort in this direction at present: “*We may not be doing all we can to testify in the streets now, but I sense our time has not arrived yet. At this point, not many will listen and we will be branded as insane. The time will come, however, when many people will be hungry for what we have to say and they will listen, and the Lord will use us in a mighty way.*”



What a transparent “cop out!” – her time has not yet come to testify “in the streets,” but someday, it will? Is that what she’s saying? What absolute hogwash! She gives the game away here, and in the process reveals herself to be the spiritual FRAUD she really is! Who’s she kidding? If she’s unwilling to go out into the streets now, what makes her think that she will be able to go out into the streets under much more difficult conditions then?

What a transparent “cop out!” – her time has not yet come to testify “in the streets,” but someday, it will? Is that what she’s saying? What absolute hogwash! She gives the game away here, and in the process reveals herself to be the spiritual **FRAUD** she really is! Who’s she kidding? If she’s unwilling to go out into the streets now, what makes her think that she will be able to go out into the streets under much more difficult conditions then?

AND SO I TELL YOU NOW ...

AND SO I TELL YOU NOW - ALL THOSE WHO ARE STILL IN BABYLON AND ALL THOSE IN OTHER LANDS, THE COMMAND IS TO TESTIFY AGAINST THAT BEAST AND THE WOMAN WHO SITS ON THE BEAST, AND SAY TO THEM,

"THE KINGDOM YOU ARE SETTING UP IN CHRIST'S NAME HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH CHRIST, AND EVERYTHING TO DO WITH ANTICHRIST."

This is the **"GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM."** If you persist in this direction, **EVERYTHING** will turn out well for you. The Bible says:

"Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine." (2 Timothy 4:2)

If you persevere in God's Word, you will draw people to yourself. You will! Be sure of that. The Lord has said:

"My word ... shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper *in the thing* whereto I sent it." (Isaiah 55:11)

And as you do so, you will cause a great commotion around yourself - especially as those who begin to gather themselves around you add to the preaching of the "Gospel of the Kingdom" - **AND ALL THIS BRINGS US BACK TO THE MATTER OF THE CHURCH.**

Remember, it is the **CHURCH THAT PRODUCES CHRIST'S TESTIMONY IN THE EARTH, AND THAT TESTIMONY IS OUR ONENESS IN THE MIDST OF TRIBULATION.** Jesus prayed:

"That they all may be ONE ... **THAT THE WORLD MAY BELIEVE THAT THOU HAST SENT ME.**" (John 17:21)

And so I pray now for you, just as Paul prayed so many years ago -

"That in the dispensation of the fulness of times **HE MIGHT GATHER TOGETHER IN ONE** all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; *even* in him.

"That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto YOU the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him:

"The eyes of YOUR understanding being enlightened; that YE may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his **INHERITANCE IN THE SAINTS,**

"And what *is* the exceeding greatness of his power to US-WARD who believe, according to the working of his mighty power,

"Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set *him* at his own right hand in the heavenly *places,*

"Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come:

"AND HATH PUT ALL THINGS UNDER HIS FEET, AND GAVE HIM TO BE THE HEAD OVER ALL THINGS TO THE CHURCH,

"Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all." (Ephesians 3:10, 17-23)

God bless you all,

S.R. Shearer
Antipas Ministries.